PROCEEDINGS
OF THE
AMERICAN SOCIETY FOR PSYCHICAL RESEARCH

PROCEEDINGS

of the

AMERICAN SOCIETY *for* PSYCHICAL RESEARCH

VOLS. XX-XXI
(for the years 1926-1927)

THE MARGERY MEDIUMSHIP

A complete record from January 1st, 1925

Edited by

J. Malcolm Bird
Research Officer of the Society

(Vol. 1)

THE AMERICAN SOCIETY FOR PSYCHICAL RESEARCH
15 Lexington Avenue
New York
1928

Court,
Walker
4-2-79
early.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

CHAPTER		PAGE
I:	Introductory Remarks	1
II:	Mr. Dingwall's Study of the Case	7
III:	Walter's "Talking Head"	16
IV:	Informal Tests of the Walter Voice	24
V:	The Teleplasmic Hand	31
VI:	The Telekinetic Aspect: to July 1st, 1925	47
VII:	Donations from Walter	64
VIII:	Séances Outside the Lime Street Premises: 1925	69
IX:	The Code-Hoagland Episode	85
X:	The Bell-Boxes of Early 1925	114
XI:	The Curious History of the "Hole Bell-Box"	123
XII:	The Serious Side of the Harvard Case	132
XIII:	The A.S.P.R. Project: Séances of July, 1925	143
XIV:	A.S.P.R. Séances: Second Series	171
XV:	A Reversion to Teleplasmics	188
XVI:	The Climax of the A.S.P.R. Sittings	214
XVII:	The Telekinesis of Later 1925	242
XVIII:	One Sitter, and His Verdict	249
XIX:	Another Sitter: The Same Verdict	256
XX:	Dr. Richardson's Voice-Control Machine	258
XXI:	An Unconverted Skeptic	277
XXII:	Identifications of Personal Objects	287
XXIII:	Identifications of Playing Cards	292
XXIV:	Teleplasmics in the Informal Sittings	305
XXV:	The Glass Cabinet and Wired Control	312
XXVI:	A New Procedure of "One-Man Sittings"	324
XXVII:	The Bell-Boxes: to November, 1925	336
XXVIII:	The Wooden Letters: A New Instrument for Cognitions	342
XXIX:	The Standardized Séance, in Two Parts	348
XXX:	A Distinguished Sitter and His Reaction	362
XXXI:	Another Committee	365
XXXII:	The Psychical Activation of the Luminous Paint	390
XXXIII:	Margery and Other Psychics	395
XXXIV:	Four Séances of Outstanding Character	397
XXXV:	The Further History of the Bell-Box	412
XXXVI:	The Rehabilitation of the Scales	417
XXXVII:	The Further History of the Standardized Séance	428
XXXVIII:	Identification Phenomena in the Glass Cabinet	434
XXXIX:	Walter's Cognitions During the Summer and Fall of 1926	437
XL:	Vagrant Sittings in the Old Cabinet	444
XLI:	Paraffin Gloves under the Co-Mediumship of Dr. Hardwicke	447
XLII:	Further Teleplasmic Phenomena with the Aid of Dr. Hardwicke	465
XLIII:	A Distinguished Sitter from Abroad	479

PREFACE

In the past, and up to 1925, it has been the fixed policy of the American Society for Psychical Research to issue every year a volume of Proceedings, distinct from its monthly Journal. The Proceedings volume has been intended as a repository for material too extensive or too recondite for use in the Journal; the basis for this being mainly the fact that the distinction between membership classes revolved about payment of an additional fee, so that the Journal had a larger and a more nearly " popular " audience. But in practice this has not always worked out well. There have been times when a single connected body of material justifying publication in Proceedings form has not been available; and when, therefore, the obligation to supply such a volume to the members who have paid for it has made it necessary either to group in one volume numerous short and unrelated items, or to publish at length something that might better have been issued in summary or even relegated to the documentary files of the Society.

Accordingly, during 1927 a decision was reached to discontinue the regular publication of Proceedings, and to enlarge the Journal to take care of some of the material thus made available for Journal use. Under this new policy, whenever the Society has a case which by virtue of its length or its recondite character, or on any other basis, seems suitable for Proceedings and unsuitable for the Journal, a volume of Proceedings will be published and will go to all members paying more than the minimum membership fee. But there will be no obligation to publish such a volume at regular intervals; and during the time between the appearance of two of these volumes, those members who elect to pay more than the minimum fee will do so with the idea of supporting the Society's work by just so much more, rather than with any intent of receiving a definite additional piece of merchandise from the Society.

At the time when the decision to inaugurate this changed policy was effected, the Society was in arrears to its ten-dollar members to the extent of one Proceedings volume; and with the termination of the year 1927 it became a second year in arrears. This of course is an obligation upon the Society. In point of fact the lapse has been due, not to lack of suitable material, but to the inability of the Society's

staff to find time for working into shape the material available. Throughout this period it has been the intent to use, for the next Proceedings, the growing mass of data arising out of the famous Margery case. The details of this plan have been modified from time to time; and what we now finally present is a two-volume compilation, which serves as the missing Proceedings for 1926 and 1927 while at the same time bringing publication of this interesting and important case substantially down to date. The first of these two volumes, carrying these introductory remarks, will reach the Society's members during October, 1928; the second one will follow without too much delay.

To what is said in Chapter I regarding the scope of this work nothing need be added beyond the statement that the intent to stop abruptly with the last séance of 1926 has been abandoned. The 1927–8 period of the mediumship has been much better covered by contemporaneous publication than were the preceding two years; so that using citation of existing literature as freely as this volume does, a given period of time may be covered with less expenditure of space than has been necessary herein. The second volume will carry the case to such point in 1927 or 1928 as seems to afford the most logical stopping place; and with it, the complete history of the case up to that point will be available for the first time.

The uncertainty as to just what the second volume will contain and just what its order of presentation will be, makes it impossible to complete certain cross-references out of the first volume into the second. These references are made by open number; a typical entry being: "See open reference No. 17 in Vol. 2." The first printed page following the title-page of the second volume will comprise a list of these references, in numerical order, giving for each the page-number of the volume to which the reference is intended to direct the reader. Since these references could not be looked up in any event until the second volume is available, the only inconvenience will be the necessity of thus having to look in two places for one reference.

The editor is conscious of the necessity for explaining away the treatment accorded many of the séances where photographs were taken. Such photographs are in practically every instance made by Messrs. Conant and Gerke, individually or in collaboration; and are developed by them, usually in a small dark-room which they have fitted up in what was once a closet, in 10 Lime Street. Always the appropriate precautions are taken to preserve the integrity of the picture; but always, in the end, the negative passes into Dr. Crandon's custody, it

and all rights of reproduction become his property, and the serious business of maintaining a permanent file of these pictures is in his hands.

Now prior to the incidence of the thumb-print sequence to which we do not come at all in the current volume, Dr. Crandon was never able to see the importance of preserving the tie-up between all photographs and their dates of making and the conditions under which they were exposed and the records showing all this. So there exist in his hands many plates and prints carrying no memoranda of date, and regarding which neither he nor anybody else can testify further than to say: "I remember being present when this picture was taken." Some of these undated pictures I give, when their intrinsic importance seems to warrant showing them despite this hiatus in their history. All pictures which can be positively assigned to a given date and positively given a place in the detailed record of that date I give, save when their interest is so slight as to lead me to begrudge them space. But in numerous instances I give the record carrying the statement that pictures were made, and without further apology than the present one let the pictures themselves go by default.

Usually when one camera is exposed in the Lime Street séance-room, three are exposed; and since one of these is stereoscopic, we may have as many as four different views of the same scene, from four different angles. Whether to publish more than one of these must of course be decided independently in each instance, on the basis of the content of the several views. The extremely beautiful stereoscopic effects which are displayed to anyone who goes to Lime Street to inspect the photographs and other exhibits there on file are, of course, quite impossible of reproduction in connection with a book; this will always remain one of the major advantages of a visit to the Crandon residence.

J. M. B.

CHAPTER I

Introductory Remarks

By the Editor

In a volume previously published through the ordinary commercial channels,[1] I have given the history of the Margery mediumship from its inception in May, 1923, down to the end of 1924. For this purpose there were placed at my disposal all the records in Dr. Crandon's possession; in addition to which, I had myself enjoyed greater contact with the case than any other observer who was not initially acquainted with the Psychic and her husband. The result has been a book which, written from the journalistic viewpoint by one having no idea that his interest in psychical research would ever become other than a journalistic one, when judged from severe scientific standards has certain obvious shortcomings. In spite of these, it is the most faithful account possible, at first hand and at second hand with citation of authority, of the first nineteen months of the mediumship. It continues to be recognized alike by friend and by foe of the medium as the sole primary source for at least that part of the history of the case prior to its consideration by the Scientific American Committee.

With my strictures upon that Committee and its work, it was not to be expected that Messrs. Houdini, Prince and McDougall would be in accord. I told the story of the Committee's handling of the case, as I saw it; and I set down the status of the case with the several Committee members, as it existed when my book went to press. Its further treatment by the Committee, and certain changes in the attitudes of the individual Committeemen, will be made clear by a reference to the several articles by means of which the Scientific American attempted to beat a decent and orderly retreat from the mess into which it had got itself.[2] A fuller statement of McDougall's viewpoint, with certain criticisms and discussions arising out of that statement, may be found in the Journal of my Society.[3] These documents,

[1] "Margery" the Medium; Small, Maynard & Co., 1925; hereinafter cited as *M. M.*

[2] *Sc. Am.*, Nov., 1924, p. 304; Jan., 1925, p. 29; Feb., 1925, p. 140; Apr., 1925, p. 229.

[3] *Journal*, A.S.P.R., Apr., 1925, p. 190; June, 1925, p. 297; July, 1925, p. 361.

and only these, need be consulted by one who wishes to gain an adequate idea of the Margery history to the end of 1924, and of the status of the case at that date.

As everybody knows, the mediumship did not yield to the adverse viewpoints of the Scientific American Committee majority. The mediumship has gone on and on; controversy about it has gone on and on; publication of primary reports of observations, and of secondary discussion and criticism, alike by the pros and the cons, has gone on in constantly increasing volume. Since my previous book on the mediumship, however, there has been made no orderly attempt to bring its history down to date in a single, unified discussion; and the only attempt at a bibliography has been in connection with a most biassed adverse critique.[4] The present text is aimed at making good the deficiency.

Just above, I speak of the history of the case; just below, of the character of the mediumship and of other questions of evidential context. This makes it necessary for me to emphasize that the present volume has a two-fold purpose and a double viewpoint. Wherever the records are unusually precise or the conditions unusually adverse to the hypothesis of fraud in general or to that of some particular fraud, or wherever it seems possible to deal in any critical sense with evidential values, this is done. But very often, nothing of the sort is possible. In such event, the dominant consideration must be the fact that, genuine or fraudulent, the Margery mediumship is a case of the very first importance—one which even by some of those who regard it as probably invalid, has been pronounced the most important case of physical mediumship in history. This makes it very vital that there be duly set down the best possible record of the phenomena, purely as a matter of history. Where no evidential comment is possible—and this is the case in perhaps more than half of the narrative—it is precisely this historical document that I present. The reader should be under no difficulty in discriminating between the two viewpoints; and having once pointed out to him the necessity of so discriminating, I shall not trouble myself further about doing it for him.

Particularly where, as is often the case, the only documentary record available is the one prepared by the medium's husband, the necessities for corroboration are large; and regardless of whence the record comes these necessities exist. In some degree we meet them as

[4] See open reference No. 1, Vol. 2 of the present text.

we go along. In larger degree we meet them in one of the concluding chapters, in which routine information about all the sittings is tabulated, with complete cross-references to the text. The publication of the present text in two volumes necessitates that this chapter of routine data be postponed into the second volume. As compensation for this disadvantage, the time elapsing between the appearance of the two volumes will enable us to give, in the second one, statements from sitters who will have read the accounts of their sittings in the first volume and in proofs of the second, and who will indicate the degree to which they endorse or dissent from these records.

It is not the intent to duplicate in these pages anything that has already seen the light in any reasonably accessible publication. All such published matter is part of the history of the case, and will have its due place in the present text; but it will be given that place ordinarily by mere citation, and seldom by more than the sketchiest summary. Whatever of new matter is necessary to complete the history of the mediumship over the term herein covered will be presented. In considerable part, such new material will consist of séance records, the immediate responsibility for which will always be indicated. In so far as it is necessary to go beyond the séance records the text will be mainly of my own preparation, with chapters or portions thereof contributed by others who may happen to be in better contact with certain of the facts than I am. My share in the ultimate result will be that of editor and major contributor.

In this connection, a little consideration must be given to my own position with reference to the case. I am the first of a large number of people who, initially entire strangers to the Crandons, have through one or another circumstance been projected into their séance room for long and serious contact with the mediumship. My experiences in the séance room were such that at an early date in my exposure to the mediumship it became evident to me that some part at least of the phenomena were produced without fraud of any sort. So large a proportion of them occur under conditions of incomplete control or inadequate observation that I have never felt justified in setting up any claim of 100 per cent genuineness; such claim would clearly involve a carrying of testimony beyond the limits of one's evidence. I would emphasize, however, that neither in my own experience nor in that of any other critic do I find any serious evidence that Margery has ever employed fraud. In so far as this implies my rejection of adverse

published criticism based upon incidents falling within the period covered by the present volume, my reasons for such rejection will duly appear.

In my previous book, I took the attitude not only that the phenomena were demonstrated to my own satisfaction, but that they ought also to be demonstrated to that of the reader. I now believe this attitude to have been a mistake. For the first time in my journalistic career, I met, in Margery's séance room, occurrences which it is not easy for the average reader to credit. Writing as a journalist, accustomed to telling my readers from a position of authority what was and what was not, I underestimated the difficulty which a non-witness has in crediting the phenomena of the séance-room. Certainly I did not myself credit them until I had seen them; why should anybody else do so?

Perhaps it is but another way of saying this same thing to confess that, writing as a journalist, I did not properly distinguish between the feeling of personal satisfaction that may come to a witness of curious occurrences, and the hypercritical exclusion of all alternatives which the scientist demands before he will accept new phenomena that transcend his knowledge of how nature works. If the phenomena are not valid, they must be fraudulent; and we must then set up working hypotheses as to how they have been produced. Many of these working hypotheses quite plainly border on absurdity. One who has seen the manifestations and got accustomed to them does not sufficiently realize that they, too, border on absurdity; and that the non-witness is therefore in a position where of two absurdities he must choose the most nearly sensible. If the adverse critic will fairly state and honestly envision the hypotheses which must subsist as the price of his skepticism, and if he will then honestly state that these appear to him less silly, less objectionable, than the hypothesis of genuine occurrence, I have today all respect for his attitude.

One thing must be abundantly clear from the outset, however. Among the hypotheses which must be admitted as the price of rejecting Margery's phenomena is that of active and sustained confederacy by myself. The same remark will ultimately apply to numerous other sitters, but at this moment I am interested in it only as it involves me. My attitude, implied but none the less clearly present in my mind when I wrote my previous book, was that I knew myself to be innocent of this charge and would not quietly submit to it. This, too, is an idea from

which I have completely recovered. I have come to realize that to a very considerable proportion of persons, dishonesty from any source whatever, no matter how high, is easier to believe than are the phenomena of the physical séance. This is a perfectly valid state of mind, an aspect of human psychology from which we cannot escape. In common with all other investigators of psychic phenomena, I expect that a certain proportion of critics, when driven out of every other refuge, will conclude that, inasmuch as these phenomena *cannot happen*, and inasmuch as I have robbed them of every other alibi, the answer must obviously be that I myself have aided in their production or have reported them falsely. If any reader is of this type of mind, and if I succeed in reducing him to the plea that I am the confederate or the fraudulent reporter, I regard myself as having done my full duty by him, and as having carried him as far along the road of ultimate education in the facts as it is possible to carry him.

So on all these grounds, I modify somewhat, in this book, the tone which I took in my previous one. I shall still present the phenomena as valid; I shall still center my discussion about the exclusion of this, that or the other oblique explanation. But I shall write in recognition that rigorous scientific demonstration of something that you are unwilling to believe is not possible, and that use of this term or any equivalent thereof in connection with anything outside the theorems of mathematics and logic involves a fallacy.

The bald truth is, as every judge and lawyer knows, that questions of fact are invariably settled by preponderance of evidence, and by personal judgment as to the weight to be attached to this evidence. In considering these questions we can never hope to get away from the personal equation. Certain conflicting factors appear; no logical standard exists for determining which should have the most weight; one of them impresses you as the weightier and I find another one so; our judgments, thus divergent, we find cannot be reconciled. This is a fundamental part of all discussions on questions of fact, and in such discussion it is an illusion to think of absolute demonstration. Starting from the same point, two observers or critics reach divergent conclusions; and there is nothing that can be done about it. Impossible in the field of logic or mathematics, this is only what we must expect in dealing with matters of fact. The fallacy of talking about a factual demonstration as though it were a logical syllogism is one which I purpose studiously to avoid throughout the present volume. I am con-

fident that the Margery mediumship is valid; in writing its history I must write from that viewpoint; but I hope to avoid urging that viewpoint upon the reader against his better judgment. At no stage, I hope, shall I do more in the way of summary presentation of conclusions than to say that certain hypotheses seem dictated or certain others excluded, in given episodes; and that certain elaborate compounding of extreme improbabilities must be accepted as the price of rejecting the mediumship.

It is perhaps not out of order, then, to insist that this moderation of my attitude toward the skeptic does not correspond to any moderation in my own constancy of conviction. One other point of opinion on which I must likewise say a word is bound up in the question: "What is Walter?" If you ask me this, I shall very frankly reply that I do not know, and do not very seriously care. Throughout my acquaintance with him, from the very first, there has been present in my mind the spirit interpretation; and equally there has been present the interpretation in terms of subconscious masquerade which we have all and always realized to be the alternative to spirits, and which M. Sudre is nowadays formulating with such precision and vigor. If Walter is not a spirit, he is a prosopopesis. And in this particular instance, on account of the extreme degree of normal knowledge by the medium of the living Walter Stinson, it does not seem to me profitable to attempt the discrimination. Supposing that Walter is Walter, I should despair of ever proving it.[5] To me, Walter is the personality that runs the Lime Street séances; just that, and nothing more. I concentrate my attention on what he does and ignore the problem of what he is.

As a measure of economy and statistical unity, certain routine facts about the sittings and the sitters are brought together, as stated above, in one of the final chapters. Until Volume 2 of this text is in his hands the reader will be unable to turn forward to this chapter in search of facts missing from the earlier ones. He will feel this deprivation most in connection with his desire to know who were present at certain sittings, and who certain sitters are. I greatly regret that I have found no alternative to this rather unfortunate arrangement of my material.

---

[5] Since this text was written, the developments chronicled by Dr. Richardson in the A.S.P.R. *Journal* for May, June, etc., 1928, have given us an indirect attack upon the problem of Walter's personal identity which suggests that this despair may have been a bit premature.—J. M. B.

CHAPTER II

Mr. Dingwall's Study of the Case

By the Editor

My previous history of the mediumship chronicles[1] its exposure, at a séance in London in December, 1923, to the critical eye of Mr. Eric J. Dingwall, (then) Research Officer of the (British) Society for Psychical Research. And in subsequent passages[2] there is more than a hint that, in early 1925, Dingwall came to Boston as a more or less official emissary of his Society, to hold a series of séances with Margery and attempt a rigorous demonstration of validity or of fraud. In this he failed; partly because of the general principles which, as I have explained,[3] make any such attempt illusory, and partly because of special factors which he himself introduced. His own greatly delayed account of his sittings and his states of mind,[4] and my analysis of his work and of the reasons for the failure of his primary mission,[5] should be read *in toto* into the present history of the mediumship. For Dingwall's examination of the case took up all of Margery's séance-room activity from January 1st to February 11th, 1925; and this study constitutes not alone the first chapter in the 1926 history of the case, but equally one of the most important chapters in its entire course.

Dingwall's stay in Boston resulted, first of all, in a complete change in the character of the phenomena. For reasons to which he attached great weight but which I regard as fallacious, Dingwall desired to get away from the accustomed phenomena of the mediumship. In this he succeeded brilliantly. Under a persistent suggestion from Dingwall, Walter turned to the production of a visible and tangible teleplasm, issuing from the genitals with the Psychic in trance throughout the séance. This, it will be appreciated, was a complete overthrow of Margery's accustomed routine; and it has constituted a step of the greatest permanent import. Walter did not abandon and has not abandoned the older telekinetic manifestations. Similarly, with Ding-

[1] *M. M.*, p. 137.
[2] *M. M.*, pp. 438, 483.
[3] Above, pp. 5–6.
[4] *Proceedings*, S.P.R., Part 98, Vol. XXXVI; June, 1926.
[5] *Journal*, A.S.P.R., August, 1926, p. 480.

wall's departure he did not abandon and has not abandoned the newer, teleplasmic side. Since that time we get both aspects. Sometimes the choice is made by the sitters; more often, by Walter. Occasionally we get a mixed séance in which both the old and the new manifestations occur; more usually, a given phase monopolizes a single séance or a series of séances. My review of Dingwall's report, just cited, sufficiently emphasizes the details of this revolution, and its significance.

Another thread remains to be disengaged from the séances of these six weeks, and here displayed. Obviously, a difficult problem confronted Dingwall in his choice of sitters. Crandon, on his own insistence, had to be included. McDougall was a member of the Council of the S.P.R., and the only American member. By virtue of this fact, in spite of the ambiguous position in which the Scientific American enterprise had left him and in spite of his evident bias against the mediumship,[6] Dingwall named him as his colleague and Crandon accepted him. By McDougall's nomination, there was added to the group Dr. Elwood Worcester, pastor of Emmanuel Church, one of Boston's select Episcopalian congregations. There were held thirteen "official" séances, at all of which these four were present save once when Crandon allowed himself to be excluded; and at some of which Dr. or Mrs. Richardson or both attended. In addition there were nineteen "private" sittings of less restricted personnel and less severe conditions.

At first, Dingwall was most enthusiastic; after several experiences with the new teleplasmic phenomena, he wrote to Schrenck Notzing in emphatic and unqualified endorsement of the teleplasm and the conditions of control.[6a] Later he receded from this viewpoint; he reached a point beyond which he could not progress, for the simple reason that the success or even the application of every test which he regarded as a crucial one was prevented. His subsequent description of what happened was that he started with the working hypothesis of validity, found the facts leaning at first toward this, and retained it as long as they did so; but that he ultimately reached a stage at which evidence indicating the hypothesis of fraud began to be obtained. He now found himself obliged to cover his indiscretion in writing to

[6] *Sci. Am.*, Apr., 1925, p. 229. The statement there printed had been released to the daily press on Feb. 11th, and for weeks before that date McDougall had been known by all parties concerned to hold the attitude therein expressed. See also, *M. M.*, pp. 439–440, and Chapter LII.

[6a] *Journal, A.S.P.R.*, April, 1925, pp. 226–7.

Schrenck by charging the latter with indiscretion in having published this letter. Ultimately he reached the judgment that while neither hypothesis could be regarded as established, the evidence comported a little better with that of fraud than with that of validity. But the preponderance of evidence was so slight that, despite much pressure for a definitely adverse verdict, Dingwall would not make any explicit statement in behalf of the oblique hypothesis. As Mr. Feilding so cleverly puts it on a later page [7] of the volume in which Dingwall's report appears, their Research Officer found that "circumstances led him to box the compass of most opinions and to end with none."

So much for the face value of Dingwall's report. But long before it appeared, he had got himself into the most bitter controversy with McDougall. This I need not summarize here, save with the statement that by McDougall's own admission, pressure was brought to bear upon Dingwall calculated to make his judgment conform with McDougall's; and that Dingwall ultimately discovered McDougall, rather than himself, to be the principal in the investigation. The history of all this is to be found in a discussion participated in by Dingwall, McDougall and myself, and extending over a period of several months.[8] It would require no further attention here were it not for one factor of a permanence and an importance which could not be properly anticipated at the time when the discussion was current, and which is therefore not sufficiently clarified therein.

Dingwall himself betrays the fact [9] that a distinctly adverse observation which McDougall claimed to have made was withheld from him (Dingwall) for seven days, and brought to his attention then only at the insistence of Worcester. Crandon had already [10] complained of this *ex post facto* quality in McDougall's reporting, and I had observed it though commenting upon it less definitely. Briefly, it appeared to be McDougall's regular practice to leave a sitting with no word or deed indicating any absence of complete satisfaction; and then to turn up, days or weeks or months thereafter, with the allegation that during that sitting he had made this, that or the other specific damaging observation. But while his published comment upon the mediumship rather teemed with this sort of thing, opportunity to criticize it as his

---

[7] Page 159.

[8] *Journal, A.S.P.R.*, Apr., 1925, p. 190; June, 1925, pp. 297, 309; July, 1925, p. 361; Aug., 1925, p. 455.

[9] *Journal, A.S.P.R.*, Aug., 1925, p. 456.

[10] *Journal, A.S.P.R.*, July, 1925, pp. 363–4.

general procedure rather than as a mere iterated accident did not come until October, 1926. In that month, despite Crandon's specific demonstration (Note 10, above) of the evil and the inadmissibility of the procedure, we find McDougall not merely returning to it but formally setting it up as proper séance procedure and defending it as such. The lengthy critique of the mediumship in which this occurs [11] must be cited here as part of the permanent literature of the case. And this episode is made a part of the present chapter because McDougall himself has so made it.

For McDougall in many ways dominated the Dingwall study of the case and he dictated so far as he was able the form which Dingwall's final verdict took. Had he had his way, this verdict would have been a categorical negative: for his own judgment is such. The material upon which this judgment is based flows out of the Dingwall sittings, rather than out of his prior contact with the case—even where he cites this contact, he does so with little confidence and merely to make it appear [12] that a continuous history of valid doubt runs back of January, 1925. And with this material and this verdict he has, since February, 1925, been engaged in an earnest and studious effort to damn the mediumship in the eyes of the metapsychical world. In view of the disproportionate weight which his opinion carries alike in the public and in the scientific mind, it is necessary to emphasize, in this summary of Dingwall's work, that neither on a basis of fact nor on one of methodological principle does McDougall's attitude justify itself.

In the *Psyche* article, McDougall gives the following evidence that the leopard had not altered his spots since his last previous reproof by Crandon:

> I was entirely baffled by the first and second of these movements. Fortunately during the third movement I detected what was to me convincing evidence that the medium's head had escaped from the control and that the disk was lifted by her mouth. I was under no moral obligation to report this observation in the presence of the medium. I did not do so, and signed the notes of the sitting which contained no mention of this critical observation. Without it the notes seem to report a supernormal phenomenon; with it they amount to nothing in the way of evidence. I could cite many instances of this sort.

---

11 *Psyche*, Oct., 1926, p. 15.
12 *Journal, A.S.P.R.*, April, 1925, p. 217.

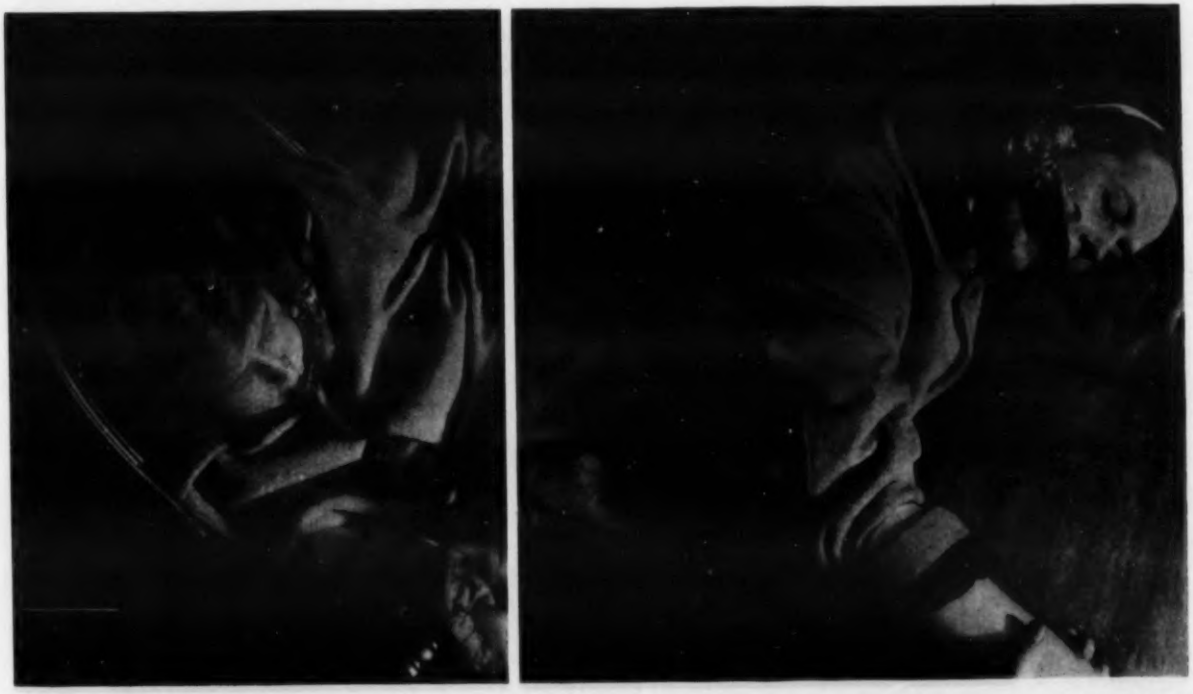


PLATE 1. TWO VIEWS, SHOWING THE PSYCHIC COLLAPSED INTO HER CHAIR OR UPON THE TABLE, WITH CRUDE, FORMLESS TELEPLASM APPARENTLY ISSUING FROM EITHER EAR. ONE OF THE EARLIER STAGES OF THE TELEPLASMIC FORMS SHOWN TO MR. DINGWALL.

UNIV. OF MICH.



PLATE 2. TELEPLASMIC MASSES, APPARENTLY FROM NOSE (ABOVE) AND RIGHT EAR (BELOW), UNDER OBSERVATION OF THE DINGWALL-MCDOUGALL GROUP.

UNIV. OF MICH.

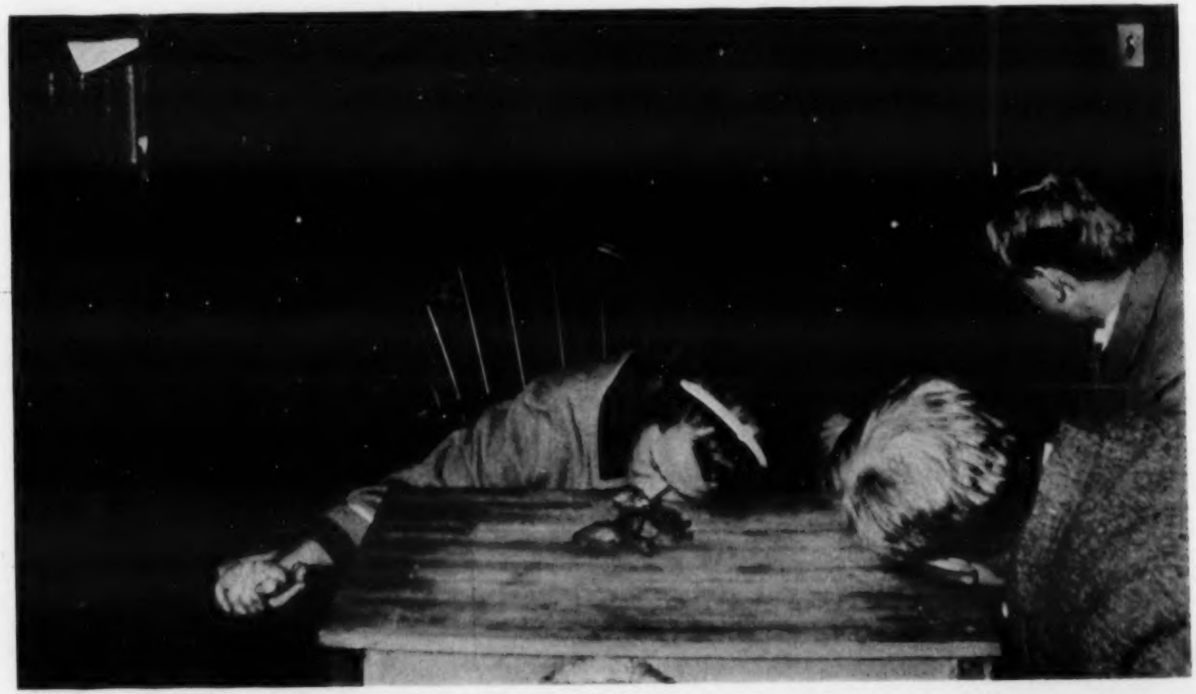


PLATE 3. A MASS OF CRUDE FINGER-LIKE TELEPLASM, APPARENTLY FROM THE MOUTH. THE OBSERVERS ARE MR. DINGWALL (ABOVE) AND DR. MCDOUGALL (HEAD ON TABLE).

UNIV. OF MICH.

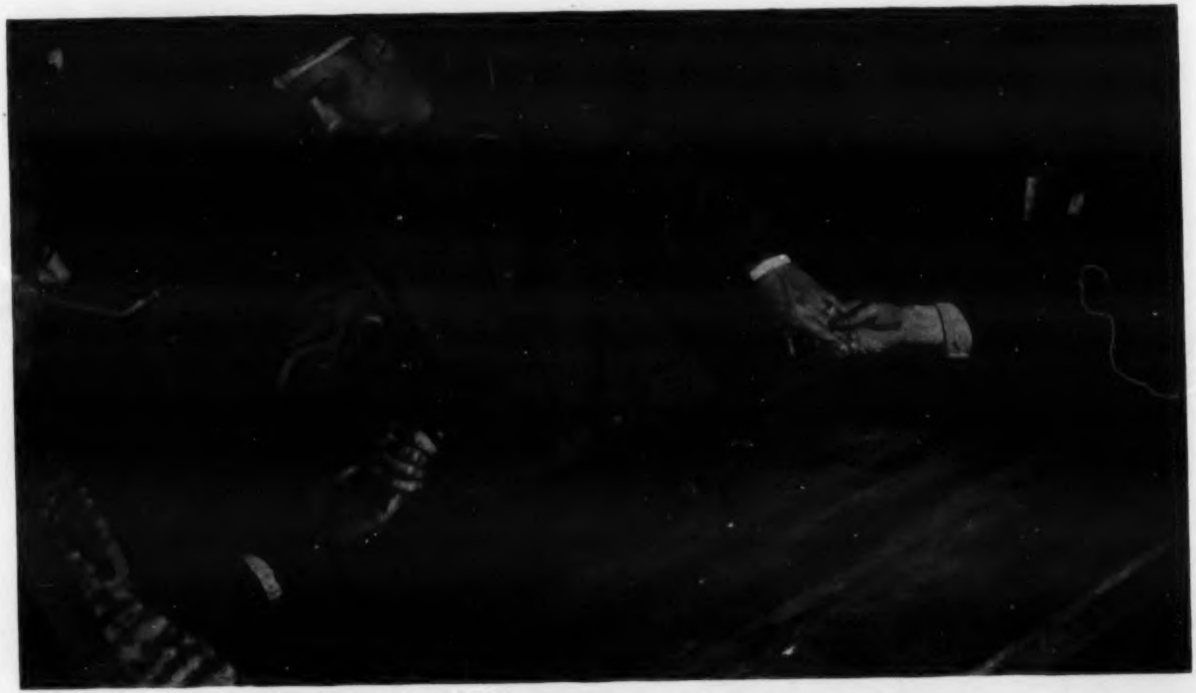


PLATE 4. CRUDELY FORMED TELEPLASMIC HAND, COVERED WITH LEATHERY SKIN, AND ISSUING FROM THE PSYCHIC'S BODY.

UNIV. OF MICH.



PLATE 5. CRUDE TELEPLASMIC HAND, ORIGINATING FROM THE GENITALS, HANGING OVER MR. DINGWALL'S HAND FOR OBSERVATION IN WHITE FLASHLIGHT IN THE MIDST OF A RED-LIGHT INTERVAL.

UNIV. OF WIS.



PLATE 6. ANOTHER VIEW, FROM ANOTHER ANGLE, OF THE HAND SHOWN IN PLATE 5. THE PRESENT VIEW SHOWS THE PSYCHIC'S RIGHT HAND AND LEFT HAND CORRECTLY; THE OTHER HAS BEEN REVERSED PHOTOGRAPHICALLY AT SOME STAGE OF ITS HISTORY. THE TWO OF COURSE ARE TAKEN FROM OPPOSITE SIDES OF THE ROOM.

UNIV. OF WICH.



PLATE 7. TWO VIEWS, ONE SHOWING THE RELATIVELY WELL-FORMED HAND ON THE TABLE, THE OTHER SHOWING IT IN MR. DINGWALL'S HAND UNDER HIS SCRUTINY. IN BOTH CASES OF BODILY ORIGIN AND WITH CRUDE LEATHERY SKIN.

UNIV. OF MICH.



PLATE 8. TWO VIEWS OF A DISTINCTLY BETTER-THAN-USUALLY-FORMED HAND. THE SECOND INDICATES ITS ORIGIN; AND SHOWS THE "UMBILICAL CORD" AS APPARENTLY HAVING SUFFERED A DOUBLE FRACTURE, TO REUNITE LATERALLY AS A BROKEN THIGH-BONE WILL.

UNIV. OF MICH.

If any reader clung, in the face of this last sentence, to the delusion that the subsequent tampering with the record was not McDougall's regular procedure, the good Professor would settle the matter by the passages in the succeeding text in which he explicitly confesses this to be the case, and explicitly defends the procedure in question. The idea behind this defense is that the *ex post facto* procedure is necessary. In its absence the investigator is under an insuperable burden, in that the fraudulent medium is kept posted about the progress being made in observation of his fraud. He is therefore always one jump ahead of the observer, and demonstration of his fraud is rendered impossible.

Now it is a matter for definition and discussion whether this is a valid viewpoint. There is at least a large possibility that the difficulty indicated by McDougall is one of the fundamental problems of the séance room, which must be met and conquered rather than artfully dodged. Even in the general case, and in the absence of any specific agreement covering the matter, the objections to the *ex post facto* method which Crandon [13] and I [14] have had occasion to set down in the Margery literature and which are so well known to other investigators of other cases, are very forceful and compel attention. But in the present instance, the matter did not even rest as one of general principle, nor was there any absence of specific agreement with reference to this important methodological factor.

The agreement covering the Dingwall series of sittings was not signed by McDougall. It was, however, signed by Dingwall as ostensible principal, and it specifically applied to the investigator and all his agents. McDougall having entered the case as such agent, by his own volition, will hardly advance the claim that this agreement did not cover his conduct. Among other things, it provides:

> These notes shall, within the investigator's best memory, include every fact with relation to the phenomena and the accompanying circumstances which he regards as in any way important.

Now I need not go into the history of the Houdini "exposure" to illustrate the sort of thing this was designed to prevent; nor need I repeat the discussion cited in footnotes 13 and 14 covering the theory and practice of the matter. To most readers the impropriety of the *ex post*

[13] *Journal, A.S.P.R.*, July, 1925, p. 361.
[14] *Journal, A.S.P.R.*, Dec., 1925, p. 717; also *M. M.*, Chapters XLVIII, XLIX.

facto exposure will be so obvious, on so many different grounds, that discussion will be superfluous. To most investigators it has been equally obvious. If it is not obvious, if the investigator's feelings parallel those of McDougall which I have paraphrased from the *Psyche* article, he will refrain from signing any such protocol as the one from which I have just quoted, or from working on a case investigation of which is governed by such protocol. Unless the investigator be McDougall; in which event he will calmly accept the protocol and as calmly proceed to ignore it.

At least one vigorous protest has been published, by a Margery sitter,[15] against the code of morals and the procedure here involved. An equally vigorous protest from Dr. R. J. Tillyard [16] has gone unpublished; and from it I abstract the following remarks:

> If I understand Professor McDougall's claim aright, it is this: In a séance, a man may sign beforehand a statement that he will faithfully mention at the end of the séance, anything which appears to him convincing evidence of fraud; and that failing such mention, if he signs the minutes as correct, then these are to be taken as accurate record of the proceedings. But having signed such a statement, and left the world to believe for a period of weeks or months, as suits his purpose, that they are accurate, he may subsequently make the startling disclosure that he was convincedly aware of fraud all the time, but did not disclose it. . . . I venture to state that neither in law nor as between men of honor can such a position be maintained. . . . In simplest words, such things are not done. . . . Or can it be that I am so far removed from the world's standards, so lost in the mists of mid-Victorianism, as to have misinterpreted the moral implications of his article? I think not. I have tried to picture the effect of similar procedure in a case involving the good name of a fellow man in (a) my Public School (1900); (b) my University (Cambridge, 1903); (c) the Royal Society (1926), to which we both belong, having signed a declaration that we would endeavor always to uphold the honor and good name of that Society! In all three cases the reaction is the same. . . . I, therefore, have no alternative but to protest in public, and in the strongest possible terms, against the implied endorsement by Professor McDougall . . . of a moral code

---

[15] *Brit. Journal Psy. Res.*, May–June, 1927, p. 214.

[16] See Chapter XLIII for a statement of his scientific position and contact with the mediumship. His statement here quoted from will now have appeared in *Psychic Science* for July, 1928.—J. M. B.

repulsive to all the instincts of an Engish gentleman, and utterly indefensible in law as well. I can only conclude with a quotation from Professor McDougall himself, from the same page of his astounding article: "In such a matter the general public necessarily forms its opinion at second hand; and its opinion . . . must in the main depend upon . . . the relative competence, good faith, and *absence of vitiating bias* on the part of the opposed parties." [The italics are Tillyard's.]

I would not presume to attempt a betterment of Tillyard's remarks, from his point of view. There is another angle of the matter, however, which impresses my cold-blooded and mathematical mind as equally serious. At ungentlemanly conduct by an investigator I should be mildly grieved; but if he succeeded in proving that way something which he could not otherwise prove, I should probably condone any lapse that a sane man would be at all likely to commit. McDougall, however, lapses seriously from the moral code; and by his lapse he succeeds in proving exactly nothing except his own personal animus. Without his superadded evidence, revealed for the first time months after the record was closed, he himself admits that this record is one of supernormality. With it, as he insists, the record would in truth be valueless. But there is no way in which this condition of "with it" may be achieved. The alleged new evidence is not part of the record and McDougall cannot by any means soever make it so.

This would be sufficiently the case, even though the extraneous allegations were in any way supported by citation of contemporary documents. And McDougall's position is made just so much the worse when we find that they are not so supported, and that failure so to support them is again constitutional with him. As long ago as April, 1925,[17] I accused him of having no records to fall back upon in support of the extremely treacherous memory which he has shown himself to possess. He made a careful reply [18] to the article in which I did this, but the particular reproach which I now cite he allowed to go entirely by default.

With all this specific and general background of fact, no detailed citation of the principles of evidence and of scientific procedure is needed to make it wholly clear that the truth or falsity of McDougall's new allegations is a matter of complete indifference. The only fact

[17] *Journal, A.S.P.R.*, p. 221.
[18] *Journal, A.S.P.R.*, June, 1925, p. 227.

about them that in the least matters is that they are out of the picture. True or false, they may be given no attention and may be regarded as proving nothing save McDougall's scientific ineptitude. They arise, as the procedure giving them birth arises, entirely out of that viewpoint of distorted prejudice toward the Margery mediumship, which he displays on every occasion. Nowhere does he make this clearer than in the opening sentence of the *Psyche* article [the italics are my own]:

> *It might have been hoped* that the adverse verdict of the *Scientific American* Committee, followed as it was by Mr. Hoagland's article in the *Atlantic Monthly* for November, 1925, would have satisfied all but a few resolute believers that the claims made on behalf of this medium have no solid foundation.

We may grant that, if the judges who have passed a negative verdict are sufficiently numerous and of sufficiently obvious authority, it might be *expected* that their judgment would become an approximately final one. But why should one *hope* that this would be the case, and deplore sadly the fact that this hope is not realized? Unless one possess an unquenchable animus, I am sure the use of this word would never occur. Demonstration of the animus is all that needs to be added from without to the demonstration which McDougall has himself given of bad procedure. And this whole critique of the improper methods used by him, methods without which he would be left entirely lacking in excuse for attacking the validity of the mediumship, is given here at such length because there has been no opportunity elsewhere to bring the *Psyche* article into parallelism with McDougall's previous conduct; and because of McDougall's unique position as self-appointed censor of the Margery mediumship. From all quarters, one hears of his industrious propaganda in behalf of the proposition that nothing good can come out of Lime Street. In the past, moreover, and from time to time as we go along with the present narrative, we come to an attack upon the mediumship, an alleged exposure, etc., etc. With the single exception of Houdini, for whom I think I have sufficiently accounted,[19] no single one of these detractors has been free from the influence of McDougall and his associates in Harvard and the Boston Society for Psychical Research. With the one disreputable exception named, all anti-Margery propaganda bears these imprints. This is a factor of the case to which due consideration must be given; for if what appear

[19] *M. M.*, Chapters XLVIII, XLIX.

to be independent attacks upon Margery's validity turn out to radiate from a single source, their weight is of course greatly lessened. And if their common source turn out to be contaminated with inadmissible procedure, their weight may well be reduced to zero.[20] For the evidence that this is in fact the case, that this contamination actually exists (so far as this evidence can be set forth in a scientific compilation and without undue descent into personalities), the reader is directed to Chapters IX–XII, XXI, XXXI, XLIII, and (in the second volume) LXIV–LXVII of the present text; as well as to certain other points which cannot be cited at this stage of the present undertaking other than by an appeal to open reference No. 3 in the second volume. Even in cases where the spirit of the parenthetic remark just above prevents the Editor from too explicitly indicating the linkage between the unfavorably disposed sitters of one or another of these references, and the source of contamination of viewpoint under discussion at this moment, the reader who has followed the course of the case through the avenues of private scandal will recognize the connection.

[20] A fuller discussion of the propriety of McDougall's procedures would mean, among other things, giving space to a contribution in his defence; and it is not possible to do this here without unduly delaying the make-up of the early chapters. Inasmuch as a point of much importance in psychical research is involved, the case will be reopened for further discussion in an appendix; the reader may locate this through open reference No. 2 in the second volume of the present text.—J. M. B.

CHAPTER III

Walter's "Talking Head"

By the Editor, and from the Séance Records

Following the last Dingwall séance on February 11th, two separate four-day intervals were allowed to lapse without a sitting, in order that the Psychic might recover from the strain of the preceding six weeks; and the first six sittings held during this period were entirely given over to conversation with Walter and to a renewal of the old telekinetic habits, without trance.

During the earlier part of Dingwall's study, the teleplasm had been always of one particular sort; and Walter made no claims as to what anatomical structure it was supposed to simulate or what function it was supposed to fill. Apparently, it was just teleplasm. At about the time when Dingwall began to be dissatisfied with the course of events, the character of the teleplasm began to show a change. Thereafter it was always of the new sort; and it was presented by Walter as an attempt at materialization of his talking apparatus. McDougall regarded this as a "red herring" drawn across the trail, to camouflage the failure of the original program to get past the sticking point.

To the small, lumpy, breathing, luminous masses of teleplasm that now appeared Walter gave the name "my talking head"; and the sitters shortly fell in with this terminology. Starting on February 24th, they began a series of séances designed to pick up where Dingwall had left off, and to continue the development of this talking head. On this evening, much of Walter's conversation revolved about the alleged thoughts and acts of McDougall and Worcester, and the resignation of Prince from the American Society for Psychical Research. With the omission of such irrelevant matter, the record follows:

> Walter said that tonight he was going to work to reproduce and finally finish what he began for Dingwall, namely, the production of the speaking head on the table that should be visible to all. He said it had been coming on finely for Dingwall [paraphrase: until the attitudes of McDougall and Worcester so disgusted him, Walter, that he lost interest]. We were instructed to sit for this

purpose on Feb. 26, 27 and 28. The psychic was to have no supper and as few clothes as possible; and Walter believed he could then pretty well finish the head on the table, providing it with teeth and all necessary features. We could put a thermometer in the mouth. In view of the state of mind of the average observer Walter proposes to produce hereafter, so far as possible, only such phenomena as carry their own validity with them.

He then went on to formulate what we had already deduced, namely, that there are many forms and consistencies of teleplasm. The first is invisible to our eyes and entirely unable to bear any light. The second is capable of being recorded on the photographic plate but is not visible to our eyes; it is however able to endure red light. The third is of sufficient solidity to be visible and palpable in red light and even in white flashlight. Then there are other types of which we shall know later.

Walter now went on to produce a vague sphere of luminosity four to six inches in diameter, which danced up and down on the table and gave out the hissing, inspiration sound which has been heard before. This was not synchronous with Margery's breathing, though it sounded nasal. The sound clearly overlapped words spoken by her. Walter said it was his nose, "learning to breathe." He told us to leave the red light on for half an hour, and to meet promptly at eight o'clock on the 26th. The sitting ended at 10:10.

There was of course no sitting on the 25th, but Crandon felt it advisable, in view of what might come to pass during the following three days, to record that for the preceding four (?) days, since the plan for the independent speaking head had been on, Margery "has been having constant paroxysms of sneezing, with headache, mostly frontal. She apparently has no coryza or frontal sinus infection [*i.e.*, no cold], and there are no nasal polypi. Also her voice sounds unusual, as though the nasopharynx were somewhat obstructed." These symptoms persisted, and on March 8th, after Margery returned from a visit to New York, Walter stopped the teleplasmic program for the time on their account. Similar symptoms are noted in the record (by Crandon) for the next séance, of February 26th:

> The Psychic's head suffered from symptoms of sneezing, frontal ache, and occlusion of Eustachian tubes; all without temperature. Walter, asked whether these symptoms and the phenomena interfered with her thinking, replied: "No, over there you use only an eighth of your brain anyway; over here you use it all."

The physical phenomena of the evening were obvious progressive steps in the production of the promised speaking head. Psychic lights, bigger than have before been seen by us, appeared over Margery's chest and then on the table and in the space above it. These were sometimes as large as two feet by six inches. We concluded that the light came from some real object, since it would suddenly occlude, from the vision of one or another sitter, the light from Margery's luminous headband.[1]

The luminous hand was seen on the table, and later a long upright light almost suggesting a phantom. Walter said: "That is my shining skin outlining my form, but tonight it has no bones. That is what a phantom is. Tomorrow bring a thermometer to put in my mouth. This head I am making will be a real head, bones and all features. The stuff I am using tonight is like macaroni. It is not transparent."

In continuation of the same program, the séance of February 27th led to the following record:

A luminous area the size of a fist appeared over Margery's chest, and within five minutes shunted over to the table. Then light trance supervened.[2] Then the mass of luminosity exhibited the greatest physical activity: getting slowly bigger, bouncing up from the table, occasionally spreading out like a large handkerchief, but most of the time appearing like a vortex which would evolute and then involute [*sic*], with a final complicated rolling and unfolding which suggested the kneading of dough. At times black streaks would appear on it; at others, it seemed that features could be made out on it. Twice a globe of light four inches in diameter came out from the region of Margery's heart or left axilla, and rapidly joined the big globe on the table; this accretion would be followed by increased convolutions. At three periods the mass on the table breathed a nasal inspiration, twelve to eighteen times, not synchronous with Margery's breathing, and twice overlapping her voice murmurs in trance. This breathing and overlapping was heard by all present. Walter said the force was fairly low tonight but everything was going well for the big night tomorrow. This was to be the biggest thing he had ever done for us.

---

1 The Crandon records are habitually silent, save accidentally as here, about routine controls.—J. M. B.

2 I infer, and Crandon verifies from memory, that there was no trance on the 24th and 26th.—J. M. B.

On the 27th, De Wyckoff had been present in the house, but had been invited upstairs to the séance only after Walter had expressly urged his presence and had indicated that he would not in any way interfere with the advantages which it was hoped to realize through the use of a constant group of sitters for these teleplasmic experiments. On the 28th, De Wyckoff and I were present after the same procedure of specific invitation by Walter. The record by Crandon:

> Walter came through promptly but did not do much talking. Almost at once a brilliant ball of light four inches in diameter with black streaks through it as though it were convoluting, appeared from Margery's chest and made its way to the table top, and from there made repeated bouncing excursions up and down, but never twice in the same path. It was then apparent that Walter was working on this sphere of light to differentiate out of it certain structures. He kept up some talk throughout the exhibition; and finally, about 9:15, we were able to see, on the side of the ball of light remote from Margery, a definite skull with jaws open. The diameter of this skull was not over 2½ inches; the orbit, nose-holes and mouth were clearly visible to each of us except Bird. In turn it was directed on each of us so that each could study it; and all saw it, those outside the circle [De Wyckoff and Bird] less well than those inside. When one complained that he could not see the skull clearly, there came from Margery's chest a kind of canopy, frame, or background, brilliantly lighted, precisely like those seen around Hope's psychic extras. This attached itself to the skull and illuminated it so all could see it.

I should have had to be present more than once under approximately similar conditions before I could comment, with confidence, upon the very much lower level taken by my observations than by those of the others present on this evening. The ball of light on the table was unmistakably visible to me but to me it was extremely faint and of vague outline most of the time. My impression at the time was that this could very well be because I was considerably further from the object than anybody else, and because it was perhaps fainter, or wholly dark, on the side toward me. Adler and Conant, sitting in the circle on the same side, in general terms, with me, could largely overcome this (hypothetical) one-sidedness of the luminous object by leaning forward above it; this I could not do because of the obstruction by their chairs and shoulders. When he made a particular effort,

presumably by turning the object, Walter was able to give me better visibility, but I did not at any stage see anything which I could honestly describe as more than vague dark striations in the faintly luminous mass. It is noteworthy that De Wyckoff's observations for some time were similar to mine; but that Walter was able ultimately to make him see substantially what the others saw. Some readers will doubtless lay this up to suggestion; but De Wyckoff's station was considerably less remote than mine, and in a considerably different direction. With reference to the "canopy" effect of the record, my position would seem to be less unique; one would suppose that I should have been able to see what any other sitter saw objectively. It seemed to me that the brilliance and illuminating power attributed to this part of the psychic apparatus were greatly exaggerated, perhaps in accord with a general tendency of Walter's more immediate friends to attach superlatives to his work. It is difficult, in any event, to understand how further illumination of this precise character would make more visible a faintly self-luminous object with darker mottlings. I wondered at the time whether this supplementary cloud effect did not rather represent a momentary visibility of some connecting structure that was present all the time, bridging the gap between the psychic and the teleplasmic mass on the table.

This séance had a termination which is, I think, wholly unique in psychical literature—superficially, at least, it was cut short by an earthquake! The record is adequate so far as concerns the facts, though a bit foggy about their exact sequence.

> At 9:20 Margery came suddenly out of the light trance in which she had been all the evening, and Walter [very abruptly] said: "Good night, I've got to go now, quick." The light was turned on at 9:23, and at about that moment an earthquake shock was felt which lasted about two minutes.

There was disagreement among the sitters as to when the shock was first felt. The consensus of judgment was that no actual tremor was observed before Walter's "good night"; but that the first vibration of the house came almost immediately thereafter. The Weather Bureau places the shock from 9:22 to 9:24. The quake was a mild one, and we were not sure whether it was really that, or an explosion, or perhaps only very heavy traffic on Beacon or Charles St.; until we found it impossible to get a telephone connection with any

of the local observatories or weather bureaus, and were informed by the obliging central operator that the earthquake was the reason for the continually busy wires. The *prima facie* suggestion would obviously be that Walter, whether cryptesthetically or hyperesthetically I would not venture to guess, sensed what was coming and feared the effects upon the entranced medium or the psychic structures, or both. If one could but produce meteorological phenomena to order one might obtain an interesting series of parallelisms between them and the behavior of the Psychic and her controls. In the present instance, the question might be raised whether Walter is not in the habit of leaving quickly and unceremoniously, as though called away by important considerations of some sort; and accordingly, whether his present conduct was in any significant way different from his habitual behavior. As a matter of fact, however, while he very often stops the action of the séance rather suddenly and unexpectedly to start the business of saying "good night," it is not usual for him actually to go so quickly; he very often hangs on, engaged in conversation, for as much as ten minutes after one gains the first impression of his impending departure. The sudden announcement that he must go followed by his instant going is altogether out of his habit. Further, a number of us went through the motions of sitting on the following night, March 1st; but after half an hour we adjourned without any indication of Walter's presence.[3] On the 2nd, however, he continued the program with utmost vigor:

> The physical phenomena then began. The little three-inch skull appeared on the table, brilliantly illuminated from behind. We could hear the bones of it hit the table, then Walter would turn it over and pound its lighted canopy on the table and that sound was soft. Walter said that this skull was a kind of foundation, that he was going to clothe it with flesh and features and then blow it up to man's size; and he added satirically: "I shall fill it with lung and then blow it up." From the lighted mass on the table there kept springing up a three-foot column of light almost in shape like a human phantom, having three brighter but poorly defined zones at top, middle and bottom. This column not only lifted high above the table, but moved laterally with lightning-like speed. It would entirely disappear, reappear, then gradually disappear.

Following this séance there ensued a visit to New York; and when Walter was again present in Lime Street, on March 8th, he laid over

[3] See open reference No. 4, in Vol. 2.

the teleplasmic program, as indicated above, on the ground of the Psychic's physical condition. When he again began to show teleplasmic effects, they were representations of a hand rather than of a head, and their consideration may be deferred until another chapter. In the interval between the "talking head" manifestations and those taking the form of hands, there ensued several séances at which there was nothing except ordinary telekinesis and conversation with Walter. The first suggestion of an attack from a new quarter upon the problems of teleplasmic materialization is found in the record for March 12th. The record gives no information about control. Practically the only action which it records is this:

> Walter ordered the two luminous doughnuts off the table, whereupon he produced from Margery's body a very brightly illuminated mass like luminous cheesecloth, which came out into a ball on the table, rolled around, exhibited convolutions, and lifted up into the semblance of a phantom three feet high.

On the 13th Margery "was still suffering from frontal sinuses and had just received a second subcutaneous injection of antitoxin. She was ill but insisted upon sitting"; there was no continuance of the new luminous manifestation. On the 14th, however, we have it again:

> A light four or five inches in diameter came from Margery's chest, landed on the table, and stretched out to upwards of thirty inches. When so stretched, its upper and lower poles were its brightest parts. . . . Throughout this sitting, whenever any physical phenomena occurred, Richardson controlled both Crandon's hands and Margery's right. Goodall maintained control of Margery's left hand throughout. . . . Strict conditions of control as already described were maintained during all these phenomena.

Again on the 16th, with no record of control, there was a brief physical display with lights rising in the form of a small phantom, to a height of three feet above the table. In my presence on the 22nd, control of Crandon and Margery throughout the séance was in one way or another [4] entirely in the hands of the De Wyckoffs and myself; there were a few weak attempts at lights but Walter said his force was small. On the 25th, with "all physical phenomena done under

[4] See the complete record, p. 53.

full control" of the two Crandons by Hale and Mrs. Richardson, and with the additional precaution of luminous head-bands and anklets on the Psychic, there were observed "some beautiful light phenomena, making a ball of light on the table develop upwards of 24–30 inches." And on the 27th, with control similarly in the hands of Arkin and Mrs. Litzelmann throughout the séance, "there were a few light phenomena and the sitting then closed rather abruptly." One is left at some loss for an interpretation of these light effects. Presumably they are to be regarded as having something to do with the teleplasmic evolution. The obvious weakness of this statement is its horrible generality; but if it is the best we can do, this need not deter us from making it.

The topical treatment employed in this text as in *M. M.* requires for the better part no particular comment. Evidently one of the results of such treatment is the complete separation, in so far as the facts of the sittings permit it, of the teleplasmic and the telekinetic aspects. We shall find, in 1925–6 as in 1923–4, that the mediumship is predominantly a telekinetic one, with episodes properly recognizable as teleplasmic occurring only at intervals and under some direct provocation. It may therefore be in order to indicate here that the reader interested in pursuing in connected narrative the teleplasmic aspect to which the present and preceding chapters have been devoted may turn next to Chapter V; and that at the end of that chapter he will find further references to facilitate his pursuit of the teleplasmic theme.

CHAPTER IV

Informal Tests of the Walter Voice

By the Editor, and from the Séance Records

An outstanding feature of Margery's mediumship has always been the vocal phenomena; nobody can possibly attend without having actively presented to him the question whether this is really an independent voice, and the enormous implications which an affirmative answer thereto would carry. Chapters XI and XXXVII of *M. M.* summarize alike the history of this question, and my own exposure and reactions to it. I believe that I was justified in the attitude that the other immediate physical problems came first, that I did not have time to consider the vocal problem until some of these had been in some way resolved, and that I might therefore with propriety make a working hypothesis about the Walter voice and lay this hypothesis aside for resurrection and test at some undefined future date.

Dr. Richardson, however, with his more easy and more frequent attendance and his medical viewpoint, found the vocal question the most intriguing of all the problems presented by the mediumship; and the one upon which he, as a scientist, might most profitably concentrate his attention. Though he has no official connection with any organ or organization of research, he is without question the most competent in the scientific sense of all the frequent sitters. So, more or less automatically, there grew up the convention of regarding him as the sitter whose wishes should receive most attention after Walter's and Crandon's had been met, and in whose hands might best be left any continuity of program in the scientific development of the sittings. The net result of all this was that, following hard on the Dingwall sittings, Richardson started and for some months pursued a systematic examination of the vocal phenomena. This took two directions: a study of the mechanical means, presumably of teleplasmic character, of voice production,[1] and an attempt to borrow from Scientific American procedure and demonstrate the physical independence of the voice from the Psychic's vocal apparatus, without further question as to what its mechanical status really was.

[1] See Chapters XVI, XX.

The water tests of Chapter XI of *M. M.* and the tests, with hand control of the Psychic's mouth and other mouths present, of Chapter XXXVII, offer initial suggestions for procedure. I have already discussed[2] the philosophy of this situation, and explained why Richardson's ultimate program was shaped along the lines of mechanical mouth control; this argument I need not here repeat. The first idea which he tried to work out involved the use of a toy balloon, to be inflated and held in the Psychic's mouth while Walter spoke.[1a] One's initial impression would be that this might afford a valid control, through the hope that the whistle in the mouthpiece of the balloon would come into play if the Psychic's mouth were sufficiently diverted from holding the balloon to be used for speech. In any event, it would be a preliminary attack upon the problem; modification or complete overthrow of the program could come as the result of experiment.

The first experiment, then, was made in the séance of February 16th, 1925. The balloon-whistle used was the ordinary five-cent toy familiar to us all. It lay in the Psychic's lap when the séance opened, and presumably remained there while Walter chatted extensively on various topics. Toward the end of the séance "he said suddenly: 'Why, what is this?', and the balloon whistle sounded above the Psychic's head." This phenomenon, even though constituting a diversion of the balloon from its original purpose, and therefore open to attack as a begging and fogging of the issue, would be of extreme interest if we only had a more adequate description of it; for plainly the blowing of a current of air through the whistle, or even the holding of the normally inflated balloon followed by a release, is something a little beyond ordinary telekinesis.

The next mention of the balloon-whistle is found in the record for March 11th. Discussing with Richardson the plans for use of this instrument, Walter suggested an improvement: let *each* sitter have a balloon,[3] paint a big luminous cross on each, then let all sitters (and the Psychic) inflate their balloons and hold them so with the tongue while Walter went on talking. In the dark, it would seem probable that collapse of any balloon would then be visible as well as audible; while Walter held out the further hope that he might be able to do this stunt in red light, or to permit the light to be turned on without warning while he was doing it, thus disclosing all the balloons in their

[1a] This instrument recurs on pp. 48, 58; but in another use.—J. M. B.
[2] *Journal*, A.S.P.R., Dec., 1925, p. 680.
[3] To dispose of all possible confederacy.—J. M. B.

proper places and properly blown up. When the baloon was again tried out in the séance room, it was under less ambitious conditions. The record for March 31st tells us:

> Under Walter's instructions, the Psychic took the penny whistle in her mouth, blew it up to full capacity, stuck her tongue in the pipe, and so held the balloon distended. Then Richardson said: "Walter, now say 'David dug a deep trench.'"[4] Whereupon Walter immediately replied: "David dug a devilish deep trench;' and on request for the same thing again: "David dug a damned devilish deep trench." The voice came apparently from above the Psychic's head. There was no squeak from the balloon, and the luminous cross on its frontal surface showed it to remain distended. After the test, the air was released with the usual prolonged *squeal*.[5] The Psychic's hands were under control[6] during this test and it seemed to all sitters that the enunciation by Walter was even more distinct than usual.
>
> Tests made on several occasions[7] by all of us showed it to be impossible to substitute lip for tongue to keep the balloon distended. Neither is it possible, apparently, for the tongue to tuck a piece of chewing gum into the pipe to keep the balloon distended. Assuming that Crandon released the Psychic's right hand, it is apparently not in any way possible for a distended balloon with pipe plugged by the tongue to be shifted to the fingers without an escape of air to cause the squeak. Therefore, while it is obvious that the test is not 100 per cent scientific, there was no doubt in the minds of all sitters that the voice had been demonstrated to be independent of the Psychic's vocal organs.
>
> The test was then made again at Walter's suggestion; and while he was speaking, Richardson was told to put the back of his hand against the distended balloon which was in the Psychic's mouth. He reported the balloon to be distended; no sound came from it; and the luminous cross in its proper shape could be seen by all.[8]

During the above sitting, Walter promised Golding that on the following evening he would add variety to the independent-voice tests

---

[4] This sentence having been constructed to involve free use of labial consonants such as d, t, ch.—J. M. B.

[5] A useful check.—J. M. B.

[6] By Richardson and Crandon.—J. M. B.

[7] Before the seance—J. M. B.

[8] The record makes no showing with regard to examination of the whistle, prior or subsequent to the test.—J. M. B.

by permitting a water test. The record for April 1st shows that he made good:

> Walter came through in five minutes and apparently in excellent spirits. There had been prepared on the table a small glass empty and a big glass two-thirds full of water. Walter said almost immediately: "Ha! Whiskey!" Then we heard water pouring. The light was turned on, with permission, and the small glass was found full of water. It was emptied[9]; then in the darkness the same phenomenon was repeated. Then under instructions the Psychic filled her mouth with water from the big glass, and under these conditions Walter said: "David dug a devilish deep trench." He then whistled long and more loudly than usual.

The record adds, at this point: "A perfect test of the true independence of the voice." This it obviously was not. The use of a second glass is so that a measured amount of water may be taken in, and this amount checked up when the subject returns it after the test. The diversion of the second glass from this use, plus the failure of the record to specify anything about hand control, would have to be remedied before the quoted comment would be in any degree justified.

The obvious and admitted dependence upon Crandon's unaided control makes it of little point to attempt any critical discussion here, save as a pointer for future experiment. One fact may, however, be stressed, in view of the facility with which certain performers are able to whistle through the nose. Mouth control of almost any type, whatever its value when Walter *speaks*, has no serious significance when he merely *whistles*.

Walter now forgot all about the balloon test for the time, and for several evenings pursued the water test in the direction of increased rigor. Thus this test was repeated on the 3rd (April), and in the repetition the criticisms immediately above were met. The record tells us:

> Walter came in about ten minutes in excellent spirits. He first did the water test to prove the independence of the voice. The Psychic filled her mouth with water, after which Walter said with great distinctness: "I have dug a deep trench for mine enemies," and then whistled beautifully. The Psychic then ejected the water into a measuring glass, and it was found to be the same amount

[9] By the sitters.—J. M. B.

that she had taken in. Perceiving apparently that Costikian was not wholly convinced, Walter then instructed us to have everyone fill his mouth with water and repeat the test. This was done; and he spoke and whistled with equal ease and distinctness. This was most impressive to all because before the sitting everyone had tried speaking and whistling with mouth filled with water, and all had found it impossible.

The water test had been given on April 2nd, at the Richardson residence (see page 70); it was repeated on the 4th, in Lime Street:

> Walter instructed us to proceed on the water test of the independent voice. Martin had tried before the sitting, to test the impossibility of one's normally speaking or whistling with mouth full of water.
>
> The Psychic's mouth was filled with water, taking all the water there was in the [secondary] whiskey glass. The original big [reservoir] glass of water was put, under Walter's instructions, by Martin behind his own chair. The empty whiskey glass to receive the rejected water later, was put in Martin's pocket. The light was then put out and Walter spoke, saying "Hello! Do you hear that? David dug a devilish deep trench." He then rapped three times on the cabinet as a signal to put on the light and let the Psychic empty her mouth. This she did, bringing forth the same amount she had taken, about two-thirds of the capacity of the whiskey glass.[10]

This record is to be recognized as a very satisfactory one; it can be attacked only on the ground that it falsifies, or that hand control of the Psychic was relaxed to permit her to use a rubber bulb or something of the sort as a temporary receptacle for the water. I think the water test in its very nature remains open to these alternatives so long as it is not conducted in full light. Assuming that it cannot be (as in fact it was not ever) so conducted, we have got as far with it as we can ever get; except that by citing its repetition before new sitters we to some degree make more difficult the two explanations which remain open. It was so repeated, on April 5th, on which occasion there came, in what appeared to be a female voice, the sharp query from the cabinet: "Don't you hear the voice?" to which Walter

[10] Richardson joins with Crandon in the oral statement to me that this returned water was unmistakably free from all trace of the stomachic content and stomachic odor which would necessarily be present following regurgitation.—J. M. B.

at once added: "That's Nannie," [11] The voice was also credited with being louder here than at any previous water test. The record speaks of "strict control conditions," without further specifying what these were. I suppose we are privileged to interpret the remark in the light of the record of April 4th, showing as this does the appreciation of what control is necessary in connection with the water test.

After a blank on April 7th, in the presence of Mr. Roy Holmyard of Cincinnati, a prominent member of the American Society with much experience here and abroad, a successful sitting on the 8th resulted in Holmyard's being exposed to the water test:

> He then gave Holmyard and the other strangers the water test for the independent voice, with great brilliancy and under strict conditions. The strangers had tried it on themselves before the sitting. The Psychic took two-thirds of a whiskey glass of water into her mouth; the empty glass was given to Holmyard, and the big glass was put by Holmyard on the floor behind his chair.

Further narrowing of the residual possibilities of fraud was sought on April 10th, for which date we are told:

> Then Walter proceeded with the water test of the independent voice. The Psychic's clothes were searched for receptacles, and Millea put in his pocket the empty glass from which she had taken the water. After her mouth was full and the light was out, Walter proceeded to sing a song [of his own composition] and to make several other remarks with perfect distinctness; and he threw in a whistle for good measure. The Psychic then ejected the same amount of water taken in.

On the 11th, in what one judges to be the most satisfactory of all the water tests to date, an approximation was made to its prosecution in the light. Another program had been planned, but Walter receded from this:

> The implication was that the conditions were not favorable for hand-making, but he announced that he would settle the question of the independent voice by a clear-cut test. Accordingly the Psychic went into trance, this being accomplished almost instantaneously; and in this condition she filled her mouth from the small glass of water which Crandon held to her lips. Martin placed the empty glass in his pocket, and Walter then whistled and spoke

[11] A deceased relative of one of the sitters.

with exceptional cleverness. He then said: "You may turn on the red light,[12] but don't go poking about in the cabinet. Don't worry about the medium. Her instinct protects her." This last was thought to refer to the possibility of her choking while in trance with a mouthful of water. Later he said: "She could not have choked because I took away her swallowing apparatus." Red light was on until after she had ejected the water.

On April 12th, he again gave the water test, the record citing the performance only by title. Much the same may be said of another repetition of this test which was staged on April 18th, only the presence of Walton making the incident of more than ordinary interest. And after this date, we find nothing further to record in the way of voice tests until we come to Richardson's formal attack upon the problem of a mechanical control for the Psychic's mouth, as chronicled in Chapter XX.

[12] May we not assume the presence of trance to have been the determining factor permitting this?—J. M. B.

CHAPTER V

The Teleplasmic Hand

By the Editor, and from the Séance Records

As we have seen,[1] the first series of teleplasmic manifestations following Dingwall's departure fell into character with the attempted materialization of the "talking head" which had marked his later séances. In early March Walter suspended this,[2] and the only teleplasmic suggestion of the few séances immediately following lay[3] in certain marked luminous effects free from anatomical context. The first suggestion of a new chapter in the teleplasmic sequence antedates the older chapter, going back as far as February 23rd. On this date the record tells us that there was seen "outlined against the luminous doughnut[4] the shadow of the finger-like processes" with which Walter works. The following night, "in all the work on this luminous apparatus,[4] Walter's terminal was seen like a black-pointed mitten, and frequently was seen to be at the end of a long black arm coming from the direction of Margery's body."

This systematic silhouetting effect is now for the first time met in Margery's séance-room because it is only now that we have free illumination of the articles used in telekinesis. Of old, luminous paint was employed regularly on the ends of the curtain pole, and occasionally in other connections; and very occasionally, one of Walter's own psychic lights afforded means for the silhouetting effect. But the psychic terminals, whatever their character, were projected and used for the most part in absolute darkness. Doubtless it was with the very intent of provoking this shadowgraphing effect that Dingwall introduced the luminous doughnut and the luminous basket, and painted luminous bands around the ends of the megaphone.[4] The result was immediate, as his own records show; and of course the silhouetting of the terminals against the bright backgrounds continued after his departure, with the continued use of his apparatus and technique. The effect continues to be chronicled, in some *but not all* of the sittings at which telekinesis occurred; a typical entry being that for April 4th,

[1] Chapter III.
[2] Pp. 21–2.
[3] Pp. 22–3.
[4] See page 47.

in which the description of telekinetic effects is accompanied by the statement: "Several times during the work on the luminous objects [4] the black outline of the terminal could be plainly seen by all."

At this stage, there was resurrected, for rather persistent use, an instrument which had been met only casually in Margery's séance room of prior dates. Two rectangular slabs of cardboard, the one 19x10 inches and the other 12 x 10, were completely coated, on one face of each, with luminous paint, and at the séance of April 11th were introduced to Walter. The idea was to leave them flat on the table, where Walter, by passing his terminal over or placing it upon them, could produce the silhouette effect. In practice, he was rather more likely than not to pick up the "plaques," as they came to be called, and carry them about the room telekinetically. Even in doing this, however, owing to the complete illumination of the entire surface, the silhouetting of the grasping member was by far of more interest than the mere levitation; so I catalog such action here rather than elsewhere. The record for the 11th tells us:

> He then gave an exhibition of his terminal, as seen over the illuminated plaque, both large and small; his "arm" and "finger" [5] were plainly visible. He carried the plaque all around the table, at different angles, and nearly across to Donnell, saying that the latter's psychic force [6] helped him to move it so far.

Again on the 12th we have a record from which the following excerpts are pertinent in the present connection:

> All the rest of the phenomena of the evening were done under double control: Goodall having both the Psychic's hands, Miss Pierce both Crandon's hands and his head. . . . The luminous plaque was used. Walter lifted it, waved it all over the region of the top of the table as high as two feet above the table, and constantly we could see the outline in black of his thumb and terminal as he held the plaque. The control was irreproachable.

On April 18th, we are told, "Walter's visible terminal was seen in shadow over the illuminated plaque." Again on the 19th the same phenomenon is mentioned by title only; and continuous double control

[4] See page 47.

[5] The quotes are not mine, they occur in the original record, to indicate that these are terms merely descriptive of the visual effect, and not actual claims as to the character of what was seen.—J. M. B.

[6] See open reference No. 5, Vol. 2.

is stated to have been in effect. The record for the 20th goes more into detail:

> After some good whistling and personal chat, Walter said: "I have a new idea. Leave the light going and all of you go downstairs for ten minutes; then perhaps I will do something for you." This was done; and on our return Walter directed the luminous plaque to be put on the table. Then under strict conditions of control of the Psychic's head, hands and feet,[7] Walter's hand came out over the luminous plaque and played for ten minutes as it might on a piano, keeping time to his whistling of a jig tune. The hand was relatively crude, with short fingers. It was a right hand, and resembled the one we have seen and photographed in red light.[8]

Again on the 21st, under control which is described in detail in another place, the static silhouetting was given:

> The luminous plaque, laid horizontally, was then used to show the complete silhouette of Walter's right hand, visible to and described by all. It was a somewhat crude hand, with short fingers, but the fact that it was a right was obvious to all. The plaque was then held successively by Dennett and Adler, bent, lifted, and pulled away from them [by Walter].

The next repetition of this phenomenon was before the same very small and wholly friendly audience to which it had first been offered. The date was April 23rd, and the record reads:

> He then proceeded to show us his hand again over the luminous plaque. It was a right hand, with short fingers. The sulcus between thumb and forefinger was very deep, the whole closely resembling the hands seen in the Dingwall sittings and likened by McDougall to "surgically manipulated animal lung tissue." In other words it was not a human hand but obviously a crude attempt at a hand. It was very lovely, however,[9] and played a merry tune to Walter's whistling, using the fingers as they would be used on a piano. Crandon remarked that the little finger looked distorted

---

7 Of course only Adler and Crandon were available for this.—J. M. B.

8 In the Dingwall séances; see the photographs of Chapter II.

9 I incorporate this passage of the original record with full knowledge that it will be regarded by hostile critics as showing an incorrect mental attitude on Crandon's part; and with some sympathy for this criticism. See *M. M.*, p. 219, where I remark upon the adjectives habitually applied by Crandon to Walter's whistling. For Crandon's comment here, see open reference No. 6, Vol. 2.—J. M. B.

and dead. Walter replied: "Yes; if I had more force I could make the hand perfect."

On the 24th, after the hand had been seen in incidental silhouette on the circular platform of the Dingwall bell-box,[10] the set demonstration of the silhouetting was put on:

> Walter then asked for the luminous plaque, and bent and twisted it while it was held by Andrews, his terminal being seen pulling and holding the edge of the plaque. The plaque was then put on the far west corner of the table[11] and Walter put his whole hand out over it—obviously a right hand with short fingers, more or less crudely formed—and there went through the motions of piano playing.

This, of course, begins to be important. We have for the first time the possibility of seeking outside testimony that this silhouetted object was of the form of a crude hand, was alive, was apparently not the Psychic's hand or foot. This possibility arises again in connection with the séance of the 25th; and in addition, the psychic student meets there the further complication of trance:

> The Psychic had no supper and was entirely disrobed except for a bathrobe and stockings. She was searched by Mrs. Fessenden before the sitting. Walter came through at once, and immediately asked to have the Scientific American bell-box put on the table; then he immediately ordered it off again. A rustling sound was heard in the Psychic's lap. Walter then asked for the luminous plaque to be put on the table, and almost immediately showed the shadow of his complete right hand and wrist above it. It was then discovered that the Psychic was in trance. Martin was instructed to feel the hand, which now rested on the plaque. In the dark he did so, describing it as cold (about 40° Fahrenheit) and soft like a baby's hand.

I presume the rustling in the Psychic's lap will here be taken, alike by proponent and opponent of the hypothesis of validity, as indication that the hand was something independent of the Psychic's four normal extremities, and that it was actually brought forth in the fashion

---

[10] See page 118.

[11] As remote from the Psychic as could be, and in the region occupied by the strangers, Andrews and the Hales.—J. M. B.

which Dingwall described in his records and which so well comports with both hypotheses. It is not, then, especially pertinent to cite the presence of stockings, save as these would prevent the feet from being used to manipulate the extra hand; and it *is* pertinent to lament the absence of recorded independent motion by the hand. The record goes on with a most interesting further description of visibility of the hand in red light, but independent movement apparently continued to be lacking:

> Something was heard in the dark to flop on the table like a fish-tail, and then under Walter's instructions dim red light was given. All sitters saw a rather poorly formed right hand and forearm, pinkish white in tint and covered with an obviously human-appearing skin. No finger-nails could be identified. The forearm appeared shrunken like that of a famine victim. The total length of hand with forearm was some fifteen inches; and at the edge of the table it was connected with a cord extending down into the opening in front of the Psychic's robe and toward her abdomen. Then under instructions each sitter felt of the hand, squeezing it as much as he wanted to. Walter particularly told us to feel the bones in the middle and little fingers. Crandon described it as being obviously a phalanx, with shaft and a large knob at each end. Each finger contained two of these, but not three.[12] The ends of the fingers were soft,[13] there was no bone in the body of the hand itself, and apparently none in the forearm. In fact the whole materialization seemed to be that of a hand containing some but not all of the bones. The skin was soft and had the usual wrinkles; no veins appeared. On Mrs. Fessenden's exclaiming: "My, how cold it is." Walter's reply suggested that this was to be expected.

I may here remark that this coldness, continuing long after the production of the hand, affords one of the major obstacles to the belief that this is a normal artificial object, brought forth from the obvious locus of anatomical concealment. One adverse critic was sufficiently impressed by this argument to postulate a refrigerating instrumentality of some sort, which remained concealed in the region whence the hand came!

The record (still of April 25th) now passes on to action which offers a large hope that there was really involved an independent motion

---

[12] The human hand contains three in each finger.—J. M. B.

[13] Doubtless because of the missing third phalangeal bone.—J. M. B.

of the hand. Although the next paragraph might well be regarded as part of the bell-box chapters, I give it here for two reasons: it seems equally to belong here, and with it here we may present the complete record of this interesting and important séance all in one place:

> Then on request the bell-box [14] was again put on the table, in a position the other side of the end from the Psychic.[15] The light was put out. Ten seconds later we heard a flop again; and when the light went on the hand was on top of the box flapper, bent at the wrist, the forearm hanging down the Psychic's side of the box and the table; Walter having moved the box so that its edge was at the Psychic's edge of the table. In the red light the hand then rang the bell-box. In the dark, Walter next said he would ring the bell a requested number of times. Then with the light on, Walter with the visible hand rang the bell-box the number of times requested by Martin; and then, after a brief period of darkness, again in the light the number of times requested by Mrs. Fessenden. The box rang only when requested. Walter asked Crandon to make the spring stronger; Crandon replied that it was not necessary for evidential purposes. "Very well," said Walter, "I'll do it myself." And he apparently did it, for next time we saw the bell ring the excursion of the flapper was greater than before.[15a]
>
> After five seconds of darkness, we observed again in the red light that Walter's hand had seized the luminous basket, and then in the red light we all saw his hand move the basket and tip it over. In the next red light, we found that Walter had put the luminous doughnut on the finger of the visible hand; and in red light he then waved it to and fro.
>
> Following Martin's request, Walter's hand was thrown on top of Martin's. Later it was thrown over to cover Martin's hand combined with the Psychic's, near the west wing of the cabinet and *not over the table*. This [16] was then shown us in bright red light.
>
> Then following instructions, Martin took the luminous doughnut between his left thumb and forefinger. In bright red light, Walter's hand took the doughnut from him between his thumb and

---

[14] Scientific American model; see p. 116.

[15] This is the way the record reads: Crandon in May, 1927, says that it means on the side of the table remote from the Psychic, and at the corner, on that side, which was slightly further from her than its mate.—J. M. B.

[15a] Cf. the theory of fraud outlined on p. 119.—J. M. B.

[16] The position finally attained; not the action of attaining it.—J. M. B.

forefinger, and waved it twice in air. After this Walter remarked:[17] . . .

The Psychic then came out of trance, and Walter sang and whistled and answered questions by Mrs. Fessenden and told us about fourth-dimensional[18] ethics. He said there are only two sins there: suicide, and hurting the other fellow.

The above record is complete, save for Walter's thrusts at Worcester and McDougall which I have deleted from public presentation. And again on the 28th, before a different group of sitters, there occurred a séance revolving so wholly about the presence and behavior of the materialized hand that we may present in this place the entire record, minus such of Walter's conversation as may need to be suppressed:

The Psychic was disrobed except for bathrobe and stockings. Walter came through in about five minutes, in cheerful mood. He talked with us for about ten minutes, and said he was going to try to show us phenomena in red light. Thereupon, trance came on.

Within two minutes Walter called for red light, his voice coming between the snores of the Psychic. The dim red light revealed a white hand, crudely formed, on the Psychic's edge of the table. It was a right hand; the palm was shrivelled and the fingers were not in good proportion. The thumb was toward the west. Later in the sitting it was obviously a left hand, palm down, with thumb to the east. Throughout the sitting the control of the Psychic's two hands was unbroken and these hands could be seen plainly during all the red-light periods. In about the third period of exposure of the hand to five seconds of red light, it had been shoved further out upon the table until, with the forearm, it measured some fifteen inches in length. The only movements we saw of it as a whole were toward the Psychic, and were always accompanied by tremors of the cord. The cord was round and twisted like stick candy; an inch and a half in diameter.[19] In red light each sitter was allowed to feel of the fingers, and each was directed to feel the phalangeal bones in each finger. There were apparently

[17] I take the liberty of expunging his remarks, which were most uncomplimentary to certain former sitters.—J. M. B.

[18] Crandon and Walter both regard Walter as living in a four-dimensional world.—J. M. B.

[19] Almost certainly an over-estimate. I find a large tendency to under-estimate small fractions of an inch in the seance room, and to overshoot the mark on dimensions of an inch or two. Crandon agrees with all this.—J. M. B.

two, not three, in each finger, but none in the palm or forearm.[20] In all we were given twenty-five exposures to bright red light, varying from three to twenty seconds. We were told to feel the skin. It was thick and soft, but had every feel of human skin. It could be lifted off the subcuticular tissues. In the dark the hand was flopped over on the hands of Dennett, Mrs. Yerxa and Mrs. Dennett successively, palm to palm; and then on two hands combined in red light.[21]

To further demonstrate the bony stiffness of the fingers, in the dark the hand went over to Dennett's right hand holding the Psychic's left, and Walter's finger was poked first into the back of Dennett's hand and then into his palm. Dennett estimated the pressure at a quarter-pound. In long exposure to red light, the hand grew smaller in a kind of shrivelly amebic manner; in the dark it grew bigger again. In no two exposures did it seem to be exactly the same size.[22] One disproportionately large middle finger grew out toward Adler.[23] The skin always felt cool.

On request, Dennett put his watch and chain on the table. Walter's hand was then shown clasping this, and later shown again with the watch on the back of Walter's wrist.[24] Walter's fingers, when they had just picked up something, seemed to be shorter, thinner, and more pointed. In one pose in red light, three fingers were seen poked through the hole in the doughnut. The next time, a thumb was stuck through this whole.

The hand was seen to ring the bell-box [25] the number of times requested by Dennett and then by Mrs. Dennett—five and three times, respectively. We could see the excursion of the bell-box flapper as the bell rang, and we could see the cord contracted in, as a whole, as though made up of separate longitudinal fibers.

Walter now said he would show how he did some things in the dark. The big megaphone was placed erect on the table, and the light turned on. The hand was seen on top of the megaphone; it pulled this over to the Psychic's edge of the table, the hand going

---

[20] Thus corresponding closely with the hand of the 25th.—J. M. B.

[21] Of what sitters, the record fails to state.—J. M. B.

[22] When we have two or three successive exposures with markedly different aspect, Dingwall very justly warns us against too hastily assuming that these are different aspects of the *same object;* but if we may take this record at its face value, this suggestion would here require altogether too wide a supply of clandestine material.—J. M. B.

[23] It is not clear to me whether this is to apply to the entire series of exposures of the hand, the word "grew" being interpreted statically; or whether it refers to a dynamic phenomenon of one or two successive exposures.—J. M. B.

[24] Are we to assume that it was a wristwatch?—J. M. B. Yes.—L. R. G. C.

[25] Scientific American model.

with it and the two falling together in a heap into her lap. In red light we saw the hand holding the side handle of the big megaphone, and then rolling it back and forth. Trance ended at 10:15.

Walter then sang, whistled and talked. It is a pity that it could not all be recorded; some of his sayings follow:

Never inflict your will on any one else, except an untrained child. It's terrible. Two free wills in a house are better than one. Make harmony your pet; keep it around. Tame it, have music in your home.

When you sit in a chair, twice as much of you as is seen is all around you, making an aura of about a foot in thickness. I make my invisible hand out of the Kid's aura. These sittings are fine preparation for a four-dimensional life. There are two fundamentals in preparing for the next life: telling the truth, and self-control. If your mind is prepared from the first, you will never have to suffer homesickness as I did.

He directed us hereafter to sit only three times a week: Tuesday, Thursday and Saturday; with possibly an informal sitting on Sunday.

On the 29th, a group of the old friends, Brown, Adler, etc., sat in the hope of seeing materialization of the sort recorded above; but Walter came through in ten minutes and said his force was low; that he would be unable to do materialization tonight, but would try to do it on May 3rd for the same group.

For May 1st, an engagement had been made to sit in Lime Street with the Code-Hoagland group from Harvard [26]; and Crandon's record indicates that they were exposed to the materialized hand:

Walter came through with whistle and voice, immediate and strong. He asked if all sitters were instructed as to behavior. Then trance came on.

Damon was told to put his hand on something vaguely seen near the luminous plaque. He did so, and felt four finger-like processes of a mass; cold and firm but soft and clammy. Then Walter ordered red light for three seconds; then in a second period of red light each sitter in order felt and pressed down on the teleplasmic hand. There were four such exposures, and the hand was examined by all sitters. The second time the wrist muscles were felt; another time, the firm core in the wrist was felt by all, and also tendons which slipped under the exploring finger like the

[26] See Chapter IX.

drumstick of a fowl. The temperature was that of a dead fowl.[27] All believed they felt the tension of tendons; four saw the thumb (near Damon) moved independently; the rest of the mass did not move at the same time. Damon and Hillyer saw two nails on the fingers.

The hand moved in every direction; it moved the luminous doughnut in a circular path with a diameter of some six inches. The palm was shown lifted off the table with acute flexion at the wrist, the finger ends remaining on the table. The wrist in the light extended at an angle of 45°. There were in all about ten exposures in red light showing the teleplasmic hand—the longest of thirty seconds, the shortest of three seconds.

Crandon went to the telephone. Code was told to put the doughnut on the table. He put it on the middle of the table; then Walter made him put it against the teleplasmic hand. The hand then picked it up and turned it over and the thumb and finger grabbed it. Before this the Psychic forced Damon's right hand in hers down hard on Walter's hand and said: "It hurts here." She did this again twice, later. Then Walter asked Hillyer to turn the doughnut bright side up and shove it over toward the teleplasmic hand. Then the hand picked it up again. During all this time Hoagland had the Psychic's right hand, the one usually held by Crandon; and the Psychic's head-band was observed constantly by Hillyer. Walter's hand was put on Hillyer's.

In the dark, with the Dingwall bell-box, the black [28] hand could be seen ringing it by dropping upon the luminous platform; and at one time, it seemed as though a second psychic structure were in contact with the bell-box top, from Damon's aspect thereof. The speed of action here prevented absolute verification of Hoagland's triple control.[29] The bell-box top got stuck and Damon fixed it twice. The weight of Walter's hand pressed it down sideways, and Walter finally ordered it off the table, in disgust. Then came more work with the luminous doughnut. Then the doughnut was put on the floor by Damon and later was ordered into the basket. Walter's hand touched Damon, and then the basket with the doughnut in it was levitated and waved about at the height of one foot over the top of the table, and then thrown to hit Hoagland's right shoulder.

Walter said, in effect: Here's a message for the Professor. Tell him we have some goats over here with lungs with bones in

[27] A totally uninforming statement, of course.—J. M. B.
[28] Black in silhouette in the dark.—J. M. B.
[29] Of Crandon's two hands and the Psychic's right.

them; but over on your side they are not always goats, they are herring-chokers. Tell him we have a modern Hell—oil-burners. Tell him to take his friend Houdini to the Harvard Club again.[30] Tell him I'd have more backbone than that, even if I were a poor fish. McDougall couldn't do any better without changing the philosophy of a life-time.[31] Tell him the Kid carries equipment in her insides of a little ice-box, a pair of bellows, and six lungs with bones in them. She chews liver for a cud;[32] she has insides as big as a cow.[33]

The above record is given complete, save as indicated. Though drawn by Crandon, it is subject to attack only by showing how the observations which it records could have been provoked, under the conditions recorded, through fraudulent production of the phenomena; for *it carries the signatures of all five sitters, all of whom have ultimately rejected in detail the hypothesis of genuineness.* It may also be emphasized that when Crandon goes to the telephone, he leaves the room entirely; and that under these conditions the phenomena continued—for how long, we are prevented from saying by the unfortunate failure to record the moment of his return.

On May 2nd, the materialized hand again performed, but only as an incident in a séance of general character; and, so far as I can conclude from the failure of the record to mention onset, emergence, or incidentals thereof, without trance:

> Some very fine work was now done with the plaque and the Dingwall bell. Walter repeatedly showed his hand, ringing the bell and drumming on the plaque. The fingers were of unequal length and shape, but unmistakably it was a hand; and five times it was seen to descend upon the platform of the bell and hit it a resounding whack. As it approached the lighted disk each time, it was illuminated on the under side apparently. Walter whistled while the fingers made as if to play on the piano. The plaque was held in turn by Miner and Leavitt, and Walter took it from them, showing plainly his terminal over the edge. . . . All the dark

---

30 The reference is to one or more occasions on which McDougall entertained Houdini at this Club. Houdini boasted far and wide about it; McDougall confided to some of his acquaintances that he did it because he found Houdini's psychology so absorbing.—J. M. B.

31 *M. M.*, p. 476.

32 *Journal, A.S.P.R.*, Apr., 1925; p. 198, index (40).

33 Etc., etc.; I give this humor only so far as it seems to me to be inoffensive. —J. M. B.

phenomena were done during double control, plus control of Crandon's head by Leavitt; and the Psychic wore her usual illuminated head-band and anklets.

On May 3rd, with a wholly friendly group:

> Walter said that he could not produce the visible teleplasm tonight because there were so many nerves around; but he would do something just as good. Besides his usual brilliant levitations of the luminous big megaphone, the ring and the basket, he gave various exhibitions of ringing the Dingwall bell-box, bringing his whole hand visibly down with force on the top thereof. The hand was better formed than the one we see in red light; and Walter said of it: "Yes, that's the one I use in the paraffin work." He picked a handkerchief off the plaque; he showed his whole forearm, wrist and hand in full length along the plaque.

On May 4th, Walter "showed his whole hand hitting the Dingwall bell-box twenty times, and showed us his hand over the luminous plaque five times, perfect in outline—a right hand." And May 5th brought another group of friendly sitters, to whom:

> Walter said that he could do nothing in the red light tonight, because his material tonight was gummy or sticky. And sure enough, when later we had contacts on face and hands the teleplasmic hand was very cold and sticky; and when Walter wished to pick up the luminous doughnut he had only to slap his hand down on it, and then lift it up adherent to his palm. He then did some very fine exhibition of the hand over the luminous doughnut and plaque. Over the latter the hand could be seen as high up as six inches above the plaque, waving gracefully, coming down on the plaque as though playing the piano; while Walter kept up a lively whistling to fit the motions. He gave numerous contacts of his teleplasmic hand with all the sitters.

On May 8th, in a séance given mainly to bell-box and telekinetic work, Walter none the less "proceeded to show in a most wonderful and distinct manner his whole hand ringing the Dingwall bell-box by means of the luminous top. This was clear, was repeated nine times, and was seen by everybody." Again on the 13th, "he rang Dingwall's bell-box showing his hand completely over the luminous top; and each time it rang with a loud crash. He showed us his hand as though it were playing a piano, over the luminous plaque."

For no reason that appears in the records, the luminous silhouetting now ceased for some time to be a feature of the Lime Street séances; though occurring with increasing freedom in the Cambridge séances under the jurisdiction of the young men from Harvard.[34] Similarly for no recorded reason, there came along two séances at which a heavy concentration of psychic lights was observed. On May 30th:

> Walter then gave us a psychic light, long and willowy and undulating, rising as high as a continuous column four feet high from the floor, again crumpling like a luminous cloth to the floor. For the most part, the light went over by Mrs. [Richard] Mansfield's left knee; and it there stayed nine minutes, constantly touching and patting her knee.

It was doubtless much the same sort of demonstration that led, in the record for May 31st, to the extremely inadequate statement: "The exhibition of psychic lights was very striking."

When, as appears usually to be the case in this mediumship, telekinesis is executed through the use of a teleplasmic terminal which is in some degree visible and tangible, it must always be difficult to draw the line between the telekinetic manifestations, and the display of the terminal to the sitters' sight or to their touch as an end in itself. A good deal of contact between the sitters and the terminals which might reasonably enough be regarded as belonging in the present part of the story, I deal with under the telekinetic heading. But a little above, where the contacts involved a verdict by the sitters as to the apparent consistency of the teleplasm, I have classified the episode in the teleplasmic group. Similarly, we may here incorporate the experience which is described in the record for June 11th, even though it very closely overlaps ordinary telekinesis:

> In the dark, Walter did his telekinesis of all the luminous objects with wonderful levitation.[35] As a new act, he put the luminous doughnut on his [teleplasmic] finger and whirled it about. He showed his hand over the doughnut and over the Dingwall bell-

[34] See Chapter IX.

[35] One can, if one wishes, differentiate between ordinary telekinesis of which motion across the table is typical; and levitation, when the object is actually carried about the room in defiance of gravitation. Telekinesis in general may defy gravity but need not do so; when it does so, if we seek a special name, we find it in levitation, which thus becomes a particular category of telekinesis.—J. M. B.

box top; and he repeatedly touched the three strangers, on request, on their hands. Day also got several touches on the forehead, as did Crandon. He ruffled and pulled the hair of the three strangers[36] at their request. The teleplasm was very cold and gave the sensation of being wet. After one's skin had been touched by it, the cold, moist feeling persisted for several minutes.

On June 15th, we return to the silhouetting of the terminal. The record is a trifle puzzling, making a distinction which might well seem not to exist, and which Crandon agrees with me should not have been made. Presumably the platform of the bell-box was brighter than usual, so that a more clean-cut silhouetting was obtained; also, a closer approach to actual illumination of the hand as it approached the luminous surface. In any event, whatever the precise interpretation we give it, the record tells us, the italics being mine in connection with the foregoing comment:

> Walter rang the Dingwall bell-box and we saw *not the shadow of his hand but the actual hand*—four fingers and thumb—against the luminous platform of the box. A handkerchief was put over the platform *to dim it a bit;* and Walter held his hand over this and picked up the handkerchief. He said in answer to questions that the hand was connected to the Psychic by an invisible cord. Walter directed Laura Crandon to place her head, face down, on the platform; he then touched her face with his hand. It felt cold and moist.

For June 28th, in place of the more familiar luminous plaque or luminous platform of the bell-box, there had been prepared, for Lime Street use in imitation of Harvard technique, a new luminous coördinate board, with one-inch squares.[37] This was so newly made that the luminous paint was hardly dry; and its use led to the following striking record:

> On request Walter put his hand over the coördinate board; it was a right hand and covered squares approximately nine by four inches. This he showed us three times; then he exclaimed: "Dear, dear; there's paint all over my hand." And sure enough, when he picked up his hand from the board, the fingers and hand were more or less outlined with a smear of the luminous paint. We then had

[36] A regular part of the telekinetic séances; see p. 50.
[37] Described on p. 89; not to be confused with the plaque of p. 32.—J. M. B.

the very interesting experience of seeing Walter's hand more or less luminous, enabling us to follow its movements. It went quickly toward the floor between the Psychic and Crandon; then it reached way under the table and touched Adler's left knee and Brown's two knees, the longest reach being well over five feet from the Psychic's right shoulder. He then touched every sitter on chin or forehead, touched several hands, and reached up and pulled the cow-bell [38]; all these movements could be followed. He then put his right hand again on the coördinate board; and on request less than a minute later, his left hand. The hand seen all through the evening was apparently complete in all details, with well-rounded fingers and plenty of intelligent motions.

The coördinate board continued in use, although it did not figure in all the sittings of the ensuing weeks; since Walter, in response to the Harvard "exposure," developed a policy of more red light and less darkness. It appeared in the séance of July 6th, however:

Walter said he was using up his force too much with red light phenomena; he would show us his hand up to the elbow in the dark. This he did first on top of the Dingwall bell-box; then on the coördinate board, held vertically as well as horizontally. He touched both the Hodges, who reported the effect as cold and clammy.

Again on the 10th, Walter "also rang the Dingwall bell-box, showing his terminal"; and "all the phenomena were done under strict double control, plus the luminous wrist-bands, anklets and head-band." The sittings of July 16th–18th, under my jurisdiction, were devoted in considerable part to a display of the teleplasmic hand; they are recorded separately and in full in Chapter XIV. For the sake of comparison and of a general check-up and estimate on Crandon's reporting, it may be of interest to quote the following from a memorandum by him, covering the sittings of the 16th and 17th:

The hand was perfectly developed, both a right and a left, and shown in full size and in motion over all the luminous objects. Its measurements were eight by seven inches. Each finger moved separately, both on the table and over the coördinate board held by Bird six inches above the table. At all critical moments of this

[38] See record for June 20th, p. 164.

manifestation, Bird had hold of the Psychic's right and Crandon's two hands, and Richardson had the Psychic's left. The luminous bands on the Psychic's five extremities were visible at all times.

The history of the teleplasmic hand during the period covered by the present chapter will be incomplete until the reader has examined the records of my mid-July séances mentioned just above; as well as of the Harvard sittings of Chapter IX, in which the hand played a large rôle. From the date marking the close of the present narrative, the hand ceases to be offered as an end in itself, though often seen incidentally to other manifestations. The reader who is interested in tracing its history should digest first the remarks of pp. 47–8; after which he may find brief mention of the hand on pp. 50 (record for March 14th), 53 (second paragraph), 60 (record for April 19th), 75 (bottom), and 125 (record for June 25th). Such reader may also feel that the hair-rumplings and shoe-removals of Chapter VI involve a tactile experiencing of Walter's terminal by the sitters on a scale justifying their inclusion in the teleplasmic sequence. Chapters IX and XIII, as just indicated, will then carry this sequence through June, 1925, and bring it up to the point where, in Chapters XIV, XV, XVI and XXIV, we have a deliberate and well-staged return, by Walter, to the formal presentation of the teleplasmic side as an end in itself. Further references permitting the reader to pursue this theme without interruption occur at the end of Chapter XXIV.

CHAPTER VI

The Telekinetic Aspect: to July 1st, 1925

By the Editor, and from the Séance Records

The immediately preceding chapters have been devoted entirely to the teleplasmic aspect of the mediumship, from Dingwall's introduction of this down to an indeterminate date in June–July, 1925. It has however been stated that the telekinetic side was not abandoned; that this continued to be displayed, usually in séances free from teleplasmics but sometimes in parallel with the more abstruse phenomena of newer type.

Dingwall's contact with the mediumship, however, left on the telekinetic practice almost as indelible marks as in the matter of trance and teleplasmics. His whole attitude, from his very first séance, was that of intense repugnance for any phenomena which Margery had ever produced before, intense desire for new and different manifestations. I have hazarded the guess that this was with the intent, if the case should turn out to be one of fraud, of taking the psychic and her confederates (if any) sharply out of practiced territory. It took the form, after the suggestion of the trance and the teleplasmics, of a complete elimination during Dingwall's stay of the Scientific American bell-box and the substitution therefor of a mechanical bell-box designed by Dingwall;[1] the introduction of paper "doughnuts" (rings made out of a single sheet of paper, by cutting first a large circle and then cutting the center out of this) and small wicker baskets as objects of telekinesis; and the very free use of zinc sulfide luminous paint in marking these objects for use in the dark.

This brought about, as I have emphasized in Chapter V, a wholly new situation in which telekinesis was often accompanied, almost of necessity, by a silhouetting against a luminous ground of the "terminal" employed by Walter. It also brought about a new era in the telekinetic history of the mediumship. For we now have telekinesis of several entirely new objects; and telekinesis on an entirely new scale of objects that are visible in the dark. At the same time, telekinesis is telekinesis; there is a far greater facility of observation

[1] See page 118.

under the new technique, but the process is fundamentally the same. I need not, therefore, in the present volume, detail completely all the telekinetic action at all séances; much of this can be adequately covered if read into the record by title. Also, with the luminous silhouetting, the presence of a materialized end-organ is a more obvious and fundamental part of the telekinetic process than it was before. Observations made, visually or tactually, that serve in any sense to characterize this organ must still be regarded as part of the teleplasmic aspect of the case; but mere visual or tactual observation of its presence may now be set down as details of the telekinetic episodes. We shall have no chapter on psychic contacts as we did in *M. M.*

Among Dingwall's ideas which did *not* remain permanently with the mediumship was one of placing the séance table, with any objects thereon, in a gauze cage to isolate them from any possibility of normal action. This cage was used once after Dingwall's departure, on February 16th, 1925; the record indicates what happened to it and why it was dropped:

> In the Psychic's mouth was a five-cent mouth-balloon which had been suggested by Richardson as a test for independent voice.[2] Walter . . . said he wanted the cage cut in halves, and that he would then work through it easily. Then he said suddenly: "Why, what is this?" and the penny-whistle balloon sounded above the Psychic's head to the great surprise of all sitters. Then Walter said: "Now I will show you a joke. Everyone move a little away from the cage so I can run around." After about five minutes he said: "Well, I must go now. Don't forget to look for your whistle." The sitting closed. Search for the whistle revealed it within the cage in front of the Psychic. Examination of the cage showed that several thumb-tacks had been pulled out; and there were two places where the whistle could have been shoved through. Adler and Crandon state that they did not drop the Psychic's hands at any time. As Walter said, it was only a joke at best, to show that Dingwall's cage was not fraud-proof.

On the 21st, 22nd, and 23rd (February), Walter gave considerable time to the display of his telekinetic powers. I give a paragraph to the details from each of these sittings, in order:

> He beat time with the megaphone on the table. He picked up the luminous doughnuts, put one on the end of the megaphone, put

[2] See page 25.

the big megaphone over the little one, put the whole on the table. He held the megaphone to the mouths of the various sitters, put it on heads and hands, played with it generally, and blew the balloon whistle so hard that the rubber came off.

He wafted in air the larger luminous megaphone, and the smaller one at different times, with undulating horizontal movement over a large area within the circle, holding it in front of J. H. Brown, setting it upright on the table, etc. He and E. W. Brown played ball with the smaller megaphone, Brown sitting at the far center of the circle. Walter hit the megaphone from the table with such force that it landed in Brown's lap. Brown had hardly placed it on the table again when Walter hit it again; and they thus played shuttlecock with it for a time. Walter hit the megaphone also away from Brown, so that it landed on the floor between Mrs. Brown and Crandon. He then moved the luminous doughnuts about on the table and in air, held them in front of J. H. Brown, tossed them over the latter's shoulder, etc.

He picked up the big luminous doughnut with difficulty, doing this much more easily after Crandon bent two or three angles in it. This doughnut was wafted all over the surface of the table, thrown on the floor, picked off the floor and lifted vertically to 18 inches above the table. He then manipulated both large and small luminous megaphones from the floor to the table, and made them sail above and over the table at a height of two feet, with fish-like motions. Both the Bradlees received touches on ankles and legs. During all important manipulations Mrs. Bradlee held the two hands of Crandon and Margery's right hand, while Bradlee held Margery's left hand.

February 26th saw a mild epidemic of touches, without further telekinetic accompaniment. Gerke got it on a leg, Adler on his right hand, Crandon on his head. Adler reported that his contact was like that of a powder puff; Crandon described his in terms of a duster or light mop. And all sitters of March 2nd received a firm downward pressure from Walter's terminal.

March 8th found Walter in inventive mood, looking for something different to do with the apparatus of telekinesis. Doughnut, basket, large and small megaphone:

> were waved all about over the heads of the sitters. The big megaphone was thrust down upon the head of each sitter in succession

save Margery. Megaphones were snatched out of the grasp of various sitters and hurled across the room in all directions. All sitters except Crandon were invited, one at a time, to put their heads on the table; whereupon the hair and shoulders were stroked by Walter's terminal. The luminous doughnut was lifted four feet above the table-top, then dropped to the floor and lifted from the floor to a point three feet above the table-top. During the whole séance, whenever physical phenomena were going on, Donnell held both Crandon's hands and Margery's right hand; and J. H. Brown held her left hand throughout.

This business of having a sitter put his head on the table (later, often with his nose in the center of the luminous doughnut), to get his hair psychically rumpled, became a regular order of routine with Walter. Comment may also be made upon his often-demonstrated ability to pick up the doughnuts when they lie flat on floor or table. One reason for their introduction was to test this ability. They are not grasped as readily as other and more upstanding objects; grasping often is effected only after sliding the doughnut about the floor or to the edge of the table; but the flatness and thinness are not found to be at all an insuperable obstacle.

For March 10th telekinesis of doughnut and megaphones is mentioned merely by title in the record, without particulars. Immediately ensuing dates gave rise to the following, the record in each instance being quoted verbatim:

Mar. 13th: Walter came through without speaking, but manifested by touch or pull on Hillyer's trouser-leg, then Marshall's, then Damon's right thigh. . . . The large luminous megaphone was put on the table; then with Damon holding Margery's left hand and Hillyer holding her right and both of Crandon's, it was pushed across the table into Margery's lap, lifted from the table and two to three feet above the table, and while aloft moved constantly with fish-like motion. Under the same control it was lifted from the table up over Damon's head and thrown outside the west wing of the cabinet.

Mar. 14th: The penny-balloon whistle, marked with luminous paint, was on the table initially; it was moved across the table, lifted in air, and dropped. The large luminous doughnut was lifted from the table and dropped on the floor; then lifted thence to the table, a black mitten-shaped terminal being seen grasping it. The large luminous megaphone was rolled away from Margery on the

table, apparently when Walter tried to grasp it; he asked that it be rolled back. It then went two or three feet in the air with fish-like movements; first one end, then the other, was presented to Goodall, Richardson, Mrs. Richardson and Crandon. Mrs. Richardson held the megaphone up horizontally in both hands and Walter lifted it out of her hands and up into the air. He repeated this for Richardson. He whistled a jig tune and the small end of the megaphone danced on the table to this tune. Then with vigorous movement the megaphone was tossed up on to the top of the cabinet. The megaphone was placed over the whistle on the table; then a sound was heard, apparently from within the megaphone, as of blowing up the whistle; then the loud note of the whistle sounded, showing that the balloon must have been much distended and released. The whistle was again blown up while under the megaphone and released still under the megaphone. Throughout the sitting, whenever any physical phenomena occurred, Mrs. Richardson controlled both Crandon's hands and Margery's right, and had Crandon's mouth on her hand. Goodall maintained control of Margery's left hand throughout.

March 15th: Walter came through with touches on Damon's leg and on Hoagland. He asked for the big luminous doughnut, pushed it audibly to Margery's edge of the table, and it dropped to the floor. After a brief time he lifted it to the table-top and higher, then made wild dancing motions with it in air above the table for half a minute. The megaphone was called for, and as last night, it rolled away from Margery, whereupon Walter asked somebody to brace it so that he might pick it up. This done, it sailed all over the area above the table, thirty inches in air and with motion like a big fish or Zeppelin. The small luminous basket was then called for and moved all about the table, lifted four inches and sailed about through the air, and finally thrown with great force over toward the northeast corner of the room, landing on the sofa between Mrs. Brown and Mrs. Stinson. Throughout, Hoagland kept constant control of Margery's left hand; Damon of her right hand and Crandon's two hands; and Crandon's mouth was on Damon's hand. During and at the end of every phenomenon, Hoagland and Damon repeated the precision[3] of their control.

March 16th: Gray was touched on hair, hand and sleeve. The big luminous megaphone was lifted out of Gray's hands, sailed through the air a distance of about 24 inches from the table, with

[3] *Sic.* This presumably indicates a spoken validation of control by Hoagland and Damon at these critical moments.—J. M. B.

the usual fish-like motions, and finally thrown up on the roof of the cabinet. Half-a minute later it was thrown down from the roof.

March 19th: Walter came through touching Richardson. Later, Arkin, Richardson and Miss Richardson were successively told each to put his nose in the doughnut[4] on the table, whereupon Walter stroked the hair and patted the shoulder of each. He lifted the doughnuts one at a time from the table, up a foot or less, dropped them on the floor; then with great persistency after several failures picked each up and put it on the table. He lifted the small luminous basket two feet in air, waved it all about, and finally threw it with great force toward Mrs. Stinson in the far corner of the room, landing it on the couch beside her. The big luminous megaphone was placed on the table at Walter's request. He lifted it and made it travel all around the table like a Zeppelin. He allowed the Richardsons and Adler successively to take hold of it, whereupon he snatched it away. Richardson estimated that he held it with at least fifteen pounds resistance. The megaphone was thrown on the floor, put back by Adler, lifted and hurled with great violence into the space between Margery and Crandon. It hit neither, landing in the southeast corner of the cabinet. The small luminous megaphone was used similarly but with greater speed; used to knock on the table; and finally hurled toward Mrs. Stinson, landing on the sofa beside her. All phenomena were carried on with Richardson controlling Margery's left hand and Mrs. Richardson controlling her right hand and Crandon's two hands and face. Margery wore visible anklets and headband.

March 21st: There was brilliant work with doughnuts and megaphones. With the big megaphone particularly, Walter had several sitters try to catch it; others he allowed to hold it, then took it away from them. De Wyckoff, Mrs. Richardson and Mrs. Brians were each told, one after another, to put his nose in the doughnut on the table, after which Walter stroked their hair and patted their shoulders. During all physical phenomena De Wyckoff held Margery's left hand, while Mrs. Richardson or Mrs. De Wyckoff[5] held both Crandon's hands and Margery's right hand, and controlled Crandon's head. Margery wore luminous anklets and headband, which constantly accounted for these extremities.[6]

---

[4] It may be understood that the doughnut is always luminous.

[5] The circle was changed during the séance.

[6] *I.e.*, which were at all critical periods reported visible to some or all sitters, in their proper places with relation to the room.—J. M. B.

March 22nd:[7] Walter came through promptly in good spirits; raps and greetings were heard on the east wing of the cabinet near Bird. The illuminated penny-whistle was lifted from the table and thrown to the floor. The doughnut was asked for by Walter, obtained by Bird, and thrown by him on the table. It was lifted from the table; travelled all over the region above the table at a height of some eight inches; and was slipped over the Psychic's edge of the table, up and down like a rising and setting moon. The basket was then asked for and put on the table by Bird.[8] It was lifted up and over the table and thrown to the floor. The small megaphone was asked for and when obtained was lifted all around with the fish-like effect. Mrs. De Wyckoff was asked to hold it, and it was taken away from her with much force. The big megaphone was then called for, and when obtained was lifted high and exhibited for three or four minutes with beautiful fish-like motions. Walter then said: "You may put anything in the room on the table, and I will lift it up." Whereupon J. H. Brown passed along a half-dollar to be put on the table. It was heard to make many raps; then it fell to the floor. Walter said after a few minutes: "Oh, I can't be bothered with that." We thought he was excusing his inability to lift it. Later it was apparently felt scratching along the table-leg, the vibrations felt and the sounds heard suggesting this interpretation.

Bird was now instructed to sit within the circle, facing the Psychic.[9] He was told to hold the basket in two hands, at a time when he was holding it on one palm, showing that Walter knew in the dark that only one hand was being used.[10] Bird felt and saw the "terminal" come out and agitate the basket. This occurred several times; then all at once Bird heard something fall in the basket. Walter said that the half-dollar was in the basket; Bird examined the basket and confirmed this. The basket was then taken from Bird's hands, tipped over, the half-dollar spilled on the table, and the basket finally thrown on the floor. It was brought back, and there ensued a complicated series of motions of the basket, during which Walter several times put it accurately on Bird's extended hands. Several times Walter instructed Bird to

---

[7] This record is largely by me, and in so far as it is not by me and does not deal with elements clearly beyond my knowledge, it has my complete endorsement, barring the one exception which I take on p. 54.—J. M. B.

[8] The apparatus was initially on the floor behind the wing of the cabinet, in easy reach from my initial position.—J. M. B.

[9] Hard against the table, closer to her than usual for sitters facing her.—J. M. B.

[10] The single luminous band was well up toward the top of the basket, and would hardly afford, by silhouette or other means, any indication of how I was holding the basket.—J. M. B.

take the half-dollar out of the basket or put it in, and Bird handled the coin freely on his own initiative. In every case when Walter spoke, there seemed no normal means whereby it could be known to anyone save Bird where the coin was; but in each case the instructions were consistent with the situation as it existed. Also several times Bird was instructed to take the basket in one hand or in two hands, and each time these instructions were pertinent. Several times Walter withdrew the coin or placed it in the basket. Once or more he lifted the doughnut from the floor and placed it in the basket, which was then in Bird's hands. Once or more Walter's terminal could be clearly seen outlined against the doughnut. Once when Bird held the basket on his two palms he had the sensation of a touch on his finger-ends, which extended toward the Psychic beyond the edge of the basket. With Bird holding the basket containing the doughnut and the coin, the big luminous doughnut was brought down over the whole assembly; the big end of the megaphone was then tipped in such a way that the basket was spilled out of Bird's hands into the megaphone. The entire outfit then went into the air as one unit. At one stage, a big psychic structure like a foot or a forearm was felt touching De Wyckoff's knee and Crandon's left leg.

Throughout the sitting control was either by De Wyckoff at Margery's left and Bird in the position between the Psychic and Crandon;[11] or else by De Wyckoff of Margery's two hands and by Mrs. De Wyckoff of Crandon's two. [After removal of Bird to seat at table, facing the Psychic,] in all these experiments the control was constantly declared to be perfect by the De Wyckoffs.

The period of the above séance during which I sat at the table, facing Margery and engaged in play of various sorts with Walter, lasted more than half an hour; it constituted one of the most striking of all my Lime Street experiences, and I think by all means the most nearly unique. The record of this part of the séance is entirely mine, save for the statement that "in *every* case" Walter seemed without normal means of gaining the knowledge that he displayed. There were times when such means probably or certainly existed; once, for instance, I had dropped the coin audibly on the table. There were, however, occasions when I had it in my hand or my pocket, or in the basket in my hands, or when I had pretended to lay it in the basket, on which I was

[11] For history and description of this technique of control, see *M. M.*, p. 154; as well as numerous subsequent points in the book describing the occasions on which control was exercised in this manner.

very confident that normal means of sensing the situation were lacking to anyone other than myself. Likewise there were moments when I had the basket in one or in two hands; and when Walter was able to say which, without touching it himself.

The physical action of this part of the séance had its focus directly in front of me—so much I could determine from the pulling and tugging on the basket and from the few occasions when the terminal was visible to me. The hands of Margery and her husband were completely accounted for; the circle remained permanently incomplete while the De Wyckoffs controlled without interruption as described in the record. No other sitter could conceivably have got into the theater from which the phenomena were offered. There remains only the fact that the medium's feet were subject to no organized, continuous control.

She wore stockings, with soft slippers and without luminous control. At various critical moments of the séance I was able to find one or occasionally both of her ankles, shins or knees by groping with my own feet; and occasionally her restless feet would contact with my feet or shins, being then recognizable because they were so softly shod. I was also quite confident at times that there had been a grasping of some séance object or a control of the phenomena, going beyond what could have been achieved with a stockinged foot. To a critic who insists that nothing is impossible for a member that is not under continuous and rigorous control, this séance would prove nothing. To one who is prepared to estimate what is and what is not feasible under any given set of conditions, the fact that the Psychic wore stockings, coupled with the fact that the doughnut was handled as freely and as successfully as any of the other apparatus, ought to go a long way in demonstration of validity. And if the objection be urged that the performance was never repeated I can only answer that if it were done by fraud it ought to be susceptible of repetition with no difficulty; while the cognitive aspects of Walter's performance on this date *are* rather analogous to what later became a regular feature of the séances. My own state of mind during the performance was that it was about as intrinsically convincing as anything that had occurred in my presence since the cabinet-smashing episode of June 24th, 1924.

> March 25th: Walter then did some wonderful levitation with the doughnut, sailing it all about the table in graceful curves. He then took the luminous basket, lifted it thirty inches above the table, made it sail about, and finally landed it on the floor. Next

he used the big megaphone, which sailed about through the air over the table, then was laid with one end in Hale's lap and the other end to his mouth. Then both the Hales and Miss Richardson were asked to hold one end while Walter snatched it away from them. Similar phenomena were given with the small luminous megaphone, which was at last thrown across the room toward Mrs. Stinson. The big one was finally thrown with great force between the Psychic and Crandon into the cabinet. Walter then asked that all luminous objects be removed. Asked what to do with the basket, he said to leave it on the table and he would attend to it. This he did by throwing it over toward Mrs. Stinson. All the physical phenomena were done under full control. Hale had both Margery's hands, Mrs. Richardson had Crandon's; and Margery wore luminous headbands and anklets.

March 27th: There was an exhibition of his very best levitation all over the table-top from the floor to the table, three feet above the table, with throwing of objects about, all under perfect conditions of control. He had each sitter in turn put his face forward on the doughnut as it lay on the table, and he then stroked the back and hair and patted the shoulders of each. Then he went on to entirely new phenomena. The lacings of Arkin's left shoe and Crandon's right were undone, the two shoes taken off; then Mrs. Litzelmann's right shoe was removed. The removal process was preceded by a lot of pulling on the lace; then a finger-like process would be inserted in the top of the shoe to loosen the lacings; then a firm grasp would push down along the heel, gripping this and pulling the shoe off. Each shoe was then put separately first on the table and later on the floor. Throughout the sitting, from beginning to end, Arkin had Margery's two hands, Mrs. Litzelmann had Crandon's two hands, and Margery's luminous headbands and anklets were visible.

It is a happy circumstance that on this, the first occasion when it was offered, the shoe-untying stunt was carried through to its logical climax in the removal of the shoe, and was prosecuted under such complete control. The extremely small circle gives unusually good assurance against confederacy from within; the specter of confederacy from without I suppose we shall always have with us as an escape from isolated phenomena of isolated séances which defy all other conventional explanations. That the present episode does defy these seems fairly clear; I doubt that Margery's ability to do all this with a foot will be urged. Here it is of interest to note that in the cases of her

immediate neighbors, Arkin and Crandon, it was their shoes on the sides away from her that were tampered with. Perhaps the severe skeptic will take this, plus the extension of the action to Mrs. Litzelmann, as indication of a confederacy from without operating from the far side of the circle. It may not then be amiss to remind the reader that Mrs. Stinson is very badly crippled with a general arthritis; numerous physicians have attended her and the *bona fides* of her condition cannot be questioned. She is so bad that once she is seated, it is a matter of severe labor and considerable noise for her to leave her chair.

> March 28th: Walter went to work on the baskets, doughnuts and megaphones, carrying out one of the most brilliant programs we have ever seen. Amongst other things there was a tug-of-war with Laura Crandon on the megaphone. He complained that he had so few things to work with that he was getting sick of it. We promised him some new apparatus. He put his attention on Richardson's right shoe; he untied the laces and removed them about three-quarters from their holes. Failing then to get the shoe off completely, he picked Richardson's foot and leg up, and stamped several times on the floor with this member, with great noise.

We may, I think, now adopt the suggestion of the above record, that the performance of telekinesis with basket, doughnut and megaphone is about standardized. We need therefore give no further space to descriptions of these acts that involve no new element; we may chronicle them by title. Such chronicling will cover the physical side of the sittings of March 29th and 30th. On the latter date, Walter repeated his expression of boredom with his present " playthings " and asked that some new ones be got. On the 31st, after the routine performance with the luminous objects, he did something considerably more impressive: telekinesis of an object produced at random from a sitter's pocket. The record is adequate:

> There was very brilliant work with the megaphone, basket and doughnut; and then with Golding's pocket knife. " You know," said Walter, " there's no string on that." He rapped a requested number of times on the cabinet with a twenty-dollar gold piece, and finally put this in the basket on Golding's knee. Then he did something new with the megaphone: he lifted this, on the far side of the table from the Psychic, from the floor to the level of the table; he then asked Adler to hold it with two hands; after which, Walter's terminal apparently came out above the table, took the megaphone from Adler, and completed the circle of travel with it.

April 1st saw two items of novelty. One of these revolved about a handkerchief with a crude face drawn on it in luminous paint. This had been made during Dingwall's stay, and christened the "Houdini handkerchief"; the general character of Walter's humor as directed thereat can be sufficiently imagined. On this evening he asked for it, but said it was too brightly lighted. Crandon substituted one of his own. We may now turn to the record, going back to page 27 for our atmosphere and adding to the data there given the further statement that the penny whistle was present:

> After a few minutes [of inaction], Walter said: "Turn on the red light and look in the back of the cabinet." The red light was given, and we beheld in the right back corner of the cabinet the penny whistle, hanging unsupported in the air, fully eight inches away from both back and east wings of cabinet. . . . Walter asked for five seconds of red light; we turned this on and saw the handkerchief in the same place where the whistle had been, suspended without visible support and slowly rotating in the air.

The routine telekinesis was given on April 3rd and 4th; following which, on the latter date, "Walter tried some red-light telekinesis, using the big megaphone, standing on its big end. He was able to move it a couple of inches." Following a return to the routine for the 5th, he promised some more red-light telekinesis for Martin on the 11th; and on the 8th, after a routine display, he did for the first time something which has since then become well standardized:

> He then began working on the basket in the dark. He worked ten minutes and then asked us not to pay any attention to him but to tell stories. He interjected many "damns," and finally said: "I think I have it; turn on the red light three seconds." This was done; the basket moved an inch, then turned over on its side. It was then on the northwest corner of the table, farthest from the Psychic, and all hands were visible. This experiment he repeated many times, with increasing success, asking us to leave the light on until the basket moved. As a final exhibit, he held the basket with long axis horizontal, over the far edge of the table, with nothing resting on the table but the handle.[12] He then lifted the basket up on the table, from that position into its normal upright phase. This

[12] A position in which it is wholly evident that it could not be maintained normally without support of some sort.—J. M. B.

he repeated three times, all in good red light;[13] and each time, during the same red-light period, Walter laughed.

April 10th saw the routine of telekinesis of illuminated objects in the dark; but first:

> The next efforts were in the way of red-light levitation. Walter moved and tipped over the little basket, at the two corners of the table remotest from the Psychic.[14] He then asked Millea for his wrist watch and strap. This was put on the table, and in good red light Walter moved the unit two separate times between two and three inches along the table; every hand and foot being visible at the time.[15] . . . He pulled off Mrs. Ekland's hair net and pulled the hairpins out, letting her hair down. He took a quarter (Crandon's) off the table and handed it to Mrs. Ekland "to pay for the net," putting it squarely in her hand. He then took Ekland's pen from the table, put it on the floor, lifted it up and put it into Mrs. Ekland's up-turned palm, her hand resting on the doughnut. All these phenomena were produced with Millea in possession of the Psychic's two hands, and Mrs. Millea in possession of Crandon's hands and in control of his head.

And all of them, after the indicated omission of more routine items, were of course in darkness.

The 11th saw a continuation of the red-light telekinesis of an object contributed by a sitter: Martin's watch. The record tells us:

> We now heard [in darkness] sounds as of the watch being pushed about for a few minutes, when Walter said: "Put on the red light until the watch moves." In dim red light the watch was seen plainly to slide along the table a few inches—it looked like a beetle crawling. The experiment was then repeated with other objects, the movement of a shoe five or six inches being the most spectacular. This shoe had been removed by Mrs. Fessenden from her own foot in the dark, and placed by her on the table; its movement in red light was plainly seen by all.

The usual routine of the dark-room telekinesis of illuminated objects was given on this date; as on the 12th, 18th, 21st, 24th, 26th, 29th,

---

[13] But not a single period of red light for all three episodes; rather, there was an interval of darkness after each.—J. M. B.

[14] The same performance as that of the 8th.

[15] But an interval of darkness having preceded each episode.—J. M. B.

30th, May 2nd, 3rd, 4th, 5th, 8th, 13th, 18th, 29th, 30th, 31st, June 2nd, 6th, 8th, 11th, 14th, 25th and 27th. It is to be understood that this routine includes not merely manipulation of doughnut, basket and megaphone, tug of war, throwing away of the megaphone and basket, etc.; but also the putting of coins off and on the table, in and out of the basket, etc.; the rumpling of the hair of sitters as they place their noses in the doughnut on the table, etc. As regards departures from the routine, or more or less critical observations in connection with the routine, the following excerpts from the records may be given:

> April 12th: [Following the identification of objects contributed by the sitters and while these were still on the table.[16]] Walter then separately moved each of these articles in two directions, at an angle to each other, over distances of from two to six inches. The clinical thermometer he not only moved parallel to its long axis, but also rotated it. He then tipped over the little basket and moved it first from one corner and then to the other of the two corners of the table farthest from the Psychic. All this was done in good red light.[17]
>
> April 18th: The basket was moved and tipped over in red light, and then Walton's watch was placed on the table, moved five inches in one direction and six inches at right angles thereto, in red light. . . . Walton's pencil was lifted from the basket in the dark, and an object put in the basket by Walton was removed by Walter and identified as nail scissors.
>
> April 19th: Levitation of the luminous basket, the luminous doughnut and the large megaphone were all done with great brilliancy in red light; and Walter's terminal was shown over the illuminated plaque. All this was under perfect conditions of double control, except when Crandon went to the victrola, at which time phenomena still went on. In red light a match box belonging to Button was moved five inches.

Of the sitters at the above séance, Hyslop was unimpressed with the performance; he objected seriously to Crandon's definition of "phenomena in red light." He is very clear that nothing happened which

---

[16] See page 287.

[17] With intervening darkness between every two episodes, or every two groups of episodes. Crandon's use of the term or the concept "red-light phenomena" always implies this restriction, which in his viewpoint is fundamental. He regards it as entirely possible for the teleplasm to support exposure to these brief intervals of light, where continous exposure would destroy it.—J. M. B.

merits such description; he insists that red light was merely given for observation of the results of a motion occurring entirely in darkness, or that there were always intervals of darkness between phenomena which might mean something in terms of fraudulent preparation. I do not believe that he would presume to suggest how these intervals might have been used in support of the effects presented; his objection to them is on more general grounds than that. Perhaps, as I once said of Comstock, he is superstitious about the resources of the conjurer's technique. But whatever their basis, his exceptions must be recorded here, as must be those of every sitter of whose exceptions I am aware.

April 21st: Dennett put on the table, in the dark, a large silver cigarette case. This was handled and moved about by Walter in the dark. It was opened, and a cigarette pulled out of it and put on the table. This episode was not well controlled; the Crandon-Psychic link was not covered at the moment. Then in good red light Walter moved the case, in view of all, five or six inches along the table. Next, in good red light, we discovered[18] a flower brought by Mrs. Dennett, balanced, standing nearly vertical on the edge of the table most distant from the Psychic. Walter in the red light then proceeded to bend it over until it rested on the table. Late in the sitting a big gourd rattle with a handle was put on the table; and Walter not only moved it, but the gourd-handle carried one of the doughnuts along with it through a travel of five inches, in good red light.

April 24th: Walter asked Andrews for his wrist watch and strap. This was put on the table, and then Walter moved it four inches in good red light.

April 29th: All these phenomena were under strict double control of Crandon and the Psychic. When Crandon was called to the telephone, in his absence Murray maintained full control of the Psychic; and beautiful levitation of the doughnut continued, with waving in all directions. On Crandon's return, Walter picked the luminous doughnut off of a nail in the middle of the east wing of the cabinet [on which it had been placed by the sitters]. Throughout the sitting the Psychic's head and ankles carried luminous bands.

This last episode had been given also on the preceding evening. It is of considerable interest in that the nail in question is distinctly

[18] This means that the red light came on to reveal it so standing, and that it continued the balancing during the duration of the light.—J. M. B.

behind the Psychic as she occupies her séance chair. When we grant the double control, we are reduced, for a "normal" explanation of the manifestations, to a reliance upon the Psychic's feet, which must be pictured as out of control and engineering the levitations, etc. The present incident contradicts this theory about as sharply as well could be.

May 2nd: Then the basket was put on the table and Walter in the dark moved it over to Richardson's side; then called for the red light. The basket was then seen to be about two inches over the edge of the table, suspended without normal support. It righted itself on to the table and slid along about one inch toward the center, all in continuous red light.

May 3rd: All these phenomena continued while Crandon was out at the telephone.

June 2nd: He [Walter] extracted Mrs. Griscom's comb from her hair and put it in Griscom's hand. He unfastened completely the lacings of Griscom's right shoe and made a good attempt to take the shoe off. He then took off Mrs. Litzelmann's right shoe with success. Griscom could feel the finger between his shoe and stocking, trying to loosen the lacings.

June 6th: Some streamers of ribbon had been hung over the cabinet pole, with luminous paint at their ends. This was with the hope that Walter would blow them out. He did so, at request; or rather he must have moved them with his terminal. For shortly afterward he touched Richardson's wrist and deposited small specks of luminous paint thereon. Also it was observed that no breeze was felt when the ribbons moved; and when, later, breezes did come, the ribbons were quiet. Touches were also felt by Crandon and Mrs. Richardson.

June 25th: As a finish to the sitting Walter rang at great length the bell suspended under the chandelier,[19] and then used the big megaphone in some way to ring this bell.

June 27th: With Hill he had an exciting game of ball, using the megaphone as bat and the clothespin hitched to the cowbell for ball. There was a long series of "strikes" and "balls," after which he rang the suspended cowbell vigorously. All these phenomena were under double control. During the sitting Walter gave Hill repeated touches, and finally made a definite effort to unbutton Hill's shirt.

[19] See page 165 for description and history.

Rather than get too far ahead of the chronological development of the case, it seems desirable to suspend the present narrative here. It is to be pointed out that the exigencies of proper topical treatment make it necessary to deal with three very striking séances under a separate heading in Chapter XIII; and that the Harvard records cited in Chapter IX also revolve in considerable degree about telekinetic phenomena. For the immediate future, most of the séances at which telekinesis is chronicled will be found in Chapters VIII, IX and XIII. And when we have got these chapters behind us and have thus brought the entire history of the case up to an approximately even date, we shall resume the telekinetic sequence in Chapter XVII. Any general comment which might be appropriate at the present point may therefore be postponed until there is a larger body of data on which to base it.

CHAPTER VII

Donations from Walter

By the Editor

For a while during the first half of 1925, Walter pursued an amusing theme which I shall have to present wholly in narrative and descriptive form. The general idea was that of bringing presents to the sitters; these usually took the form of small articles of jewelry. The Lime Street routine of sitting is very far from what would be necessary to prevent the smuggling of such objects into the room; and a fair case could be made as regards the possibility of handing them out under cover of the moments at which control is interrupted. Even if one believed the conditions adequate to exclude all this, one would have to grant that the records do not show this to be the case. So here I simply tell what is stated by the sitters to have occurred. If genuine, these presents obviously are apports; and it appears altogether probable that apports do occur genuinely in some cases.

From February 26th on, Walter did a good deal of talking about his plans for giving presents to Conant, Gerke, the Richardsons, Goodall, etc. Some of this conversation is in the records; much of it I suspect has been omitted, for there is extreme lack of continuity in the recorded fragments. A promise of what was to come may be seen in the record of March 14th, which informs us that one of Margery's garters, lost for three days, was put in her lap by Walter during the séance. If the mediumship suffers through the constant occurrence of things of this sort, which make a large demand upon one's credulity and which could not possibly be put on a basis of rigorous demonstration, I think we must also realize the advantage in having the complete and frank and friendly record of the frank and friendly intercourse between Walter and his sitters.

Some of the atmosphere with which Walter managed to surround his presentations to the sitters is worthy of reproduction. In a joking way, he is always representing himself as living in the fire-and-brimstone atmosphere of Hell, as being a little devil with a forked tail, etc. Once when he had assured Mrs. Stinson that they would meet on his side, she acknowledged the satisfaction which this gave her by some use of the word "Heaven." and Walter at once pointed out that

he had said nothing about *that*. It was in this spirit that (February 26th, 1925) he told the sitters that his presents for Conant and Gerke would comprise something from the molten fires of Hell. Another frequent theme of his jests is that his presents for the sitters are got by a more or less piratical process of canvassing old graves.

During the latter part of March the conversation about the intended gifts to the sitters became much more frequent. The first successful performance came on March 27th, Mrs. Litzelmann being the recipient of Walter's favor. During this sitting, Walter suddenly said: "Sary, put out your right hand, palm up, on the doughnut on the table; but don't break the circle doing it." After Mrs. Litzelmann had done as directed, Walter went on: "Sary, here's a button for you; keep tight hold of it." With the words, there was put in Mrs. Litzelmann's hand a small cold object feeling quite like a button. Examination after the séance showed this to be "a piece of turquoise matrix, flat on one side and spherical on the other, circular in shape, ready for mounting in a ring." The record chronicles: "Throughout the sitting, from the beginning to end, Arkin had Margery's two hands, Mrs. Litzelmann had Crandon's two hands, and Margery's luminous headband and anklets were visible." It adds, by way of summary and conclusion, "The conditions of control were so perfect as to leave little doubt that this was a true apport."

On the very next evening Walter did it again. He told Patty Richardson to hold out her right hand on the doughnut without breaking the circle, as Mrs. Litzelmann had done the night before. She reported that she felt his terminal touch her thumb and then her palm, in process of placing in her palm a small cold object. "Here's a button for you, Patty; a speautiful spink one. Hold on to it." It was found to be a piece, about $\frac{1}{4} \times \frac{1}{2} \times \frac{3}{4}$ inches, of what was taken to be a Mexican opal; it was white with a slight pinkish cast, and somewhat translucent. The record fails entirely to cover the question of control, either for the generality of the séance or for the moment of delivery of Miss Richardson's present.

The next donation was for Walter's mother. It came on April 1st, in a séance the record of which is explicit regarding the existence of control for a long series of telekinetic phenomena; but no statement is made to cover the moment of delivery of this present. Contrary to precedent, Walter this time announced, before delivery, what it was: a crystal cameo. Because his mother was not in the circle, he said he would hand it to Golding, who was. Golding under instruc-

tions placed his left hand, palm up, on the doughnut (luminous, here as always) on the table; there was put into it, and bounced out, a small cold object "like a stone." Later investigation showed this to be "an exquisite crystal cameo, ¾ x ½ x ¼ inch, with the most delicate Greek female profile carved on it."

After this, there was quite a lapse before Walter made his next donation. On April 12th he promised a present for Dr. and Mrs. Brown if they would be present on the 17th; but they weren't, so nothing came of that. On the 15th, however, Adler was the beneficiary:

> Walter then went on: "Freddy, you're a patient sitter. I'm going to bring you a ruby. It will be a half inch long. Don't let anybody tell you it is a " sympathetic " ruby. Ha, ha; it's a real one. I think I will give you something tonight, also. John, go get Freddy a ' stun.' Hurry up, there! Don't be slow." Crandon then asked if Walter would do some work with the plaque, to which he replied: "No, not till John brings that stun." In about two minutes Walter said: " Freddy, put your left hand on that luminous ring on the table, palm up." Whereupon we all could see, under perfect control conditions, a black, arm-like process cross the luminous ring; and Adler felt something drop in his palm, though it bounced out and fell on the floor and was found later. Walter said: "Too bad. You will find a green stone with the matrix in one place crumbled, and no wonder; it has been buried 150 years. Don't let anyone get it away from you."

The record fails to chronicle the finding of the stone at the end of the séance, or its character; so this much of the story must consist in *ex post facto* statement by Adler himself. He tells me that it corresponded in all ways with the record; and by way of proving this he shows me the stone itself.

The Browns got their present on the 26th (April). The record is adequate:

> In the midst of the show Walter said: "You remember, Kitty, I promised you as one of my early faithful sitters a present; and that present would have orange blossoms on it.[1] Well, I've sent for it. It isn't here yet. It will be here pretty soon." About two minutes later he broke in on whatever he was doing to say:[2] " Here's your

[1] We have seen that he made a promise; the sitters confirm the matter of the orange blossoms, which does not appear in any of the records.—J. M. B.

[2] It is of course understood that there was no dictaphonic or stenographic transcription of the seances in which the record is Crandon's, unaided; conversation with Walter out of such sittings is set down out of the best recollections of Crandon, almost always with aid from the others.—J. M. B.

present, Kitty. Put your hand, palm up, over the lighted doughnut. Here it is." Then we could hear something hard rapping all over the table. Then with great precision there was placed in Kitty's right hand a hard object, which she at once declared to be a ring. Then Walter said: "I had to search seventeen graves for that. You'll find on it some crumbly stuff; and no wonder. It has been buried 150 years. It has great value; I doubt if you ever saw one like it. It is a lapis."

Kitty's apport proved to be a solid silver ring. There was a worn mark inside it which may have been a worn mark "Sterling," but which looked to our eyes as though it were not that. The ring was worn and shiny, as though it had been used for many years. Where it reached the sides of the stone it showed on each side a conventional orange blossom in silver. The stone itself was a beautiful lapis lazuli 1.5 centimeter long and one centimeter wide. A striking feature is that every sulcus or carved depression in the ring was filled with a reddish brown oily dirt, as though the ring had never been cleaned. The delivery was made under double control of the Psychic by [Dr.] Brown and of Crandon by Mrs. Brown.

Walter seized the opportunity offered by the presence of the Litzelmann's, on May 4th, to remember another old friend:

Walter went on to say that he wanted to be the sole donor of the ring to Sarah [Litzelmann]; so he said: "Carl, I am going to send now for the money. And Freddy [Adler], you have been a patient, faithful sitter and I am going to send for your ruby now. Don't let anyone tell you it is 'sympathetic.' Hey, John, go get that money and the stun. John isn't sure that he has time. He has duty elsewhere. Yes, you go ahead, John; and be lively about it. You have plenty of time." Walter then went on with some repartee; and in about two minutes he said: "John is back; good boy, John; now you can go. Do you hear that, Carl?" Whereupon we heard the crackling of paper on the east wing of the cabinet and on the table. All this was under perfect double control. This same crackling paper was forced into Carl's left hand, and a minute later Freddy's hand, palm up on the luminous doughnut, received something done up in waxed paper which we had just heard Walter fumbling about to extract from the luminous basket. . . . The apports proved to be, for Carl, a new twenty-dollar bill; and for Freddy, a pigeon's blood ruby, big as one's fingernail. A perfect stone.

After a long hiatus, Walter returned on December 22d, 1915, to the business of giving presents to the sitters; but under a technique that is hardly satisfactory to anybody save the donee.

> He told Conant to put his left hand, palm up, over the doughnut. Conant did this, retaining the Psychic's left hand; Gerke had her right hand and both of Crandon's. Something was put into Conant's hand. A similar experiment and experience was put through for Gerke. Each was told to put his apport into his pocket and not to tell the other or anyone else what it was. Walter added that one of the two would have in his pocket "the spirit of '76." Conant declared later that he knew what Walter meant by "the spirit of '76," but neither revealed what he had received.

A secret present was similarly bestowed upon Patty Richardson on January 2d, 1926. The record tells us:

> He then instructed us all to sit away from the cabinet except Patty, who was told to put her hand through the hole in the front door.[3] She was told further that what she received was to be a secret between her and Walter. After a while she felt a small object being put in her hand; and she later took it home with her without telling anyone what it was.

Though his inclination to bizarre performances remains unlessened, the particular stunt of giving presents to the sitters was indulged in by Walter for the last time on the above date.

---

[3] Of the glass cabinet—see Chapter XXV.

CHAPTER VIII

Séances Outside the Lime Street Premises: 1925

From the Records, with Comment by the Editor

During the very first days of the mediumship, it was customary to alternate the sittings between the Crandon residence in Lime Street, and Dr. Brown's house in Beachmont. As the interval between séances became shorter and the amount of séance paraphernalia greater, the convenience of having a fixed place of meeting became more compelling; and the urgency of Dr. Crandon's being always within easy telephonic access of his various hospitals was another factor tending in the same direction. As a result, we have a condition to which the skeptics have always pointed with extreme derision. In point of fact, it has never been the custom to hold *all* séances in the medium's own residence. But the custom has sufficiently approximated this to lend real point to the criticism; so that a proponent of the mediumship has felt obliged to meet this objection not with a denial, but with an argument to show that the phenomena are not a function of the Lime Street room.

As the list of séances held in 1923–24 shows,[1] the custom of sitting partly at Dr. Brown's was terminated on August 18th, 1923. During the balance of these two years, and exclusive of five sittings given in Paris and London during December, 1923, seventeen séances were held outside Lime Street, on eight different premises in or near Boston, in New York, in Buffalo and in Niagara Falls. It continues to be a matter of principle to sit now and then in some other place. Barring the one occasion on which Dingwall took the medium to Mrs. Hemenway's residence, she sat outside Lime Street for the first time in 1925 on March 6th, at the DeWyckoff apartment in New York. No record was made; but Crandon received an oral statement from De Wyckoff enabling him to refer to the séance in one of his own records, with the statement that "good physical results were obtained, especially the lifting of a silver plate from floor to table and back, and much independent voice. There was no cabinet."

[1] *M. M.*, Chapter LIII.

The experiment of sitting in a strange place was repeated on April 2nd, at Dr. Richardson's residence. Despite Richardson's long and intimate connection with the mediumship and with the Crandons, this was the first time that his house had been used for a sitting. The full record follows:

> This was the first time Margery had sat in this house, and we had some doubts about the rooms, etc. Events proved that Walter was entirely at his ease, though Mark and John failed to come [as had been hoped, and as was one large reason for sitting on these premises]. The sitting was held in the music room on the ground floor, which is about 25 x 15 feet, and has nine windows. These were darkened by drawing shades and curtains; but even then slight shafts of light entered, to which however Walter made no objections. The only circumstance that appeared to annoy him was the rather frequent passing of automobiles.[2] Before the sitters were aware of their approach, almost, Walter would say: "There come the neighbors," and would pause until the glare and rumble had ceased. He also noticed a peculiar sound in the victrola, due to some mechanical deficiency. This instrument played "Souvenir" throughout the sitting, but [in the absence of an electric motor] had to be wound by Verna J. from time to time.
>
> The cabinet was made by a three-way screen, over which was thrown a brown blanket, a specially warm cover, later called a horse-blanket by Walter. The cabinet was so placed that its left wing touched the keyboard of the piano, leaving perhaps two octaves exposed, between the hands of Margery and Richardson. Walter twice played distinct notes on request, under double control of the medium and Crandon [by the Richardsons].
>
> Walter came through very quickly and whistled his greetings, as usual. He said the boys [John and Mark] were not present, but he expected them later. They were busy, he said, on some work of their own; whatever the reason, they did not turn up. However, as Walter said, we felt we ought to be glad to get anything on first trial in a new place. The first thing he did was to lift the small lighted megaphone from the floor to the table. He asked for the large one, a little later, and was rather vexed that it should have been forgotten. He played skillfully with the lighted doughnut, carrying it up to the inside of the cabinet, where it remained for some time, at a height about on a level with the medium's head,

[2] Lime Street, being one block long, is absolutely free from all traffic save that originating in or destined to this block; so that, though the séance room is at the front of the house, automotive noises are seldom heard therein, and automotive lights never seen from its fourth-floor level.—J. M. B.

looking as though stuck in this position. Adler affirmed, later, that this was the longest excursion the doughnut had ever made from the Psychic. Later Walter placed it upon Richardson's thumb and otherwise manipulated it.

In the expectation of having Mark and John present with Walter, Mrs. Richardson had brought two objects formerly belonging to John. With Walter's consent she now placed one of these on the table which stood before the medium. It was a glass ball, quite heavy; and as Walter said that it "did not interest" him at all, it was removed and the second article put on the table. This was a white Teddy bear, about eleven inches tall, dressed in trousers and a jacket, with pocket and cuffs and buttoned down the front. It was a favorite toy with John Richardson, and has been kept in a box along with another tiny wooden bear, one and one-half inches high. Mrs. Richardson brought this box into the room on the present occasion, telling nobody; and she left it on a shelf until the sitting was in progress in the dark. As it was wrapped in a cloth carefully pinned up, she feels safe in saying that nobody knew of its presence save herself. Only at the present juncture did she undo this package, take out the Teddy bear and feel in the box for the other little wooden one without finding it, and lay the Teddy bear on the table with no word as to what it was. Walter at once began to play with it and talk about it; but he grasped at once and fell in with the idea of keeping the secret from the other sitters. He did not actually name the toy, calling it "Josiah," saying something about "bears and bearskin coats," "what nice cuffs," "who made these clothes?", "I undid the buttons," "won't I tease the boys!", etc. He said "don't put it on its face," and then Mrs. Richardson sat the animal up; which he observed correctly, although apparently wrong about its first position. It soon became evident to Mrs. Richardson, from his words and actions, that he had found the small bear which had eluded her. This he tried to place in her hands; but he failed, the small shape falling to the floor, where there was some difficulty locating it after the sitting. Walter then picked up a handkerchief, from the floor he said, and dropped it into Mrs. Richardson's hand. During all the time he was playing with the toys, none of the sitters knew what he was talking about, except her. Richardson took it to be a toy animal, but visualized the wrong one. At the end, the little buttons were found unfastened and one arm was out of its sleeve. Mrs. Richardson feels fairly certain that Walter did this, but hesitates to make a positive statement since the bear had not been out of the box for months and was not seen by her on

the present occasion until the end of the séance. The incident shows supernormal knowledge, beyond a doubt.[3]

The independent voice was next tested, by Walter's orders. The medium filled her mouth with water, which she afterwards expelled again; and while she held it Walter spoke with great distinctness the words: "David buried all my enemies in a damned deep trench." One of his witticisms of this evening was: "My Ethical Culture[4] consists of 'To Hell with my enemies.'"

He reproached us for coming to sittings "all fagged out." This, he said, was not fair to him. Several sitters, those nearest the Psychic, felt touches as of some heavy but soft object on knees and feet. Margery herself also reported this. Walter lifted a tambourine from the table and jingled it in rhythm in the air, apparently about one foot up. He picked a piece of paper from the floor and put it in Richardson's hand.

Leaving, he said the force was spent and he was afraid to stay any longer. There was "double control" during a great part of the evening.

This record, of course, demonstrates nothing more than that the phenomena of the mediumship can be obtained outside the Lime Street house. The demonstration was repeated with added emphasis during May and June, 1925, in connection with the Code-Hoagland inquiry.[5] During this period, six séances were held in a laboratory room in the Harvard "yard," and two in Hoagland's residence.[6] Even from the ultimately adverse viewpoint of the Code-Hoagland report and its collateral documents, it seems granted that the action throughout these séances was fundamentally parallel with what is to be observed in Lime Street. That, of course, is in the last analysis all that can be expected. Sittings on strange premises cannot, of themselves, determine the question of absolute validity; they are pertinent only to the exclusion of such fraud as depends upon preparation of the premises.

The Harvard sittings perhaps afford, in this respect, what the mathematician would recognize as a local maximum of demonstration;

---

[3] This statement, of course, is predicated upon the assumption that throughout this episode control was valid and continuous of both the Psychic's hands and both Crandon's. Whether this was actually the case, or whether reliance had to be put in Crandon's statement of control for a part of the sitting, the record does not clearly indicate.—J. M. B.

[4] The pertinence of this lies in Crandon's lifelong interest in the Ethical Culture movement. Doubtless the conversation had turned in that direction.—J. M. B.

[5] Chap. IX.

[6] See *M. H. V.*, pp. 38–82, for detailed records.

but the demonstration must be kept alive by continuation of the practice of sitting, every now and then, elsewhere than in Lime Street. This was done, during the summer of 1925, by using the Crandon summer cabin on Point Shirley, some fifteen miles out of the city along the North Shore. While this cabin is the property of the Crandons, it is free from many of the objections of general principle that apply to the Lime Street séance room. In particular, the walls are entirely bare, and the cottage is of course detached on all sides. The space under the floor is open to free examination by anyone who will crawl under the house. There is freedom from the city noises. It is a very simple matter indeed to conduct a search of the premises which enables one to say that any invasion of the séance room must originate out of doors; whereas, as I have once testified,[7] the Lime Street premises are quite complicated.

The cottage is mostly one large living room, 24 feet by 20, and got up to resemble as closely as possible a ship's cabin. Infinitesimal staterooms opening out of this room serve for sleeping quarters, bath, etc.; and at the rear there is a galley, similarly opening out of the main room, and measuring 16 by 7. Behind this is an unfinished shed or lean-to. Séances are held in the living room. There is a skylight, and there are windows clear across the front; there are no adequate provisions for darkening these. It must be extremely light in this room when there is any moon at all—it just happens that whenever I have attended sittings there, there has been none. Under these latter conditions, of course, darkness is quite satisfactory.

Séances had been held in the Cabin before, as a reference to *M. M.* will indicate. The first time in 1925 when a sitting occurred at the Beach was on July 12th. The record gives an adequate idea of the difference in general conditions, and of the action obtained:

> The séance was in the open room, with no cabinet. The victrola was kept going by Dr. Brown.[8] The room was darkened only relatively. Walter came through almost at once with merry whistle and jest, in spite of the absence of cabinet. After a while he proceeded upon his present plan of giving nothing but phenomena in red light. The bell-box[9] was rung the number of times requested by Hubbs, Mrs. Hubbs and Mrs. Thaler with one hundred per cent success.

[7] *M. M.*, p. 107.

[8] Who had to wind it, and set it back to the beginning of the tune, as these operations became necessary.—J. M. B.

[9] The Scientific American model.—J. M. B.

Still in good red light Walter proceeded to work on the straw basket. This was placed on the table, and after a few minutes Crandon was able to leave the circle and stand over by the red light, where he was told to turn it on for ten seconds. This was done; and the basket was discovered with one edge resting on the edge of the table farthest from the Psychic, and slanting off the table forty-five degrees from the vertical, a position impossible by normal means. It then was seen to lower itself into completely horizontal position, the bottom alone touching the edge of the table.[10] It then lifted itself back to the vertical and fell over on the table. In the next period of red light, the basket was seen in front of Hubbs. In the red light it was then rotated through ninety degrees, and then slowly fell to a horizontal position[11] toward the chair just vacated by Crandon. During each of these red light periods, a striking manifestation occurred. While the basket was in motion in red light, Walter whistled four or five notes, loudly and distinctly, above and behind the Psychic. Each of us looked at her mouth and found it tightly closed at this moment.

Later in the sitting a light was seen at Mrs. Thaler's back, and she felt a touch on her right hand, which Walter said was by someone on his side.

The Cabin next came into use for séance purposes when I remained in Boston over the week-end following my sittings of July 16th–18th,[12] to spend Sunday the 19th with the Crandons and other old friends at the Beach. We went down in three carloads, taking some of the séance paraphernalia with us. We stayed into the evening and held a séance, during the preparations for which I managed to execute a search of the entire premises which was quite adequate to the exclusion of all unauthorized persons. The duty of drawing up a record was assigned to me; I discharged it while the party was breaking up and preparing for the drive back to the city:

Aside from the sitters in the circle, Bird was free in the room, keeping the victrola wound and reset to the starting point in the absence of motor and repeater, generally observing the phenomena from a roving position of best momentary advantage, etc.

The circle was originally formed directly beneath the skylight, to cover which no attempt was made. Walter came through and requested that we move toward the front of the house, so as to

[10] And the entire basket being off the table, at the side, without visible support.
[11] In the air off the table, to one side.—J. M. B.
[12] See Chap. XIV.

get more out of the very dim diffused light from this source. [There was no moon.] After the circle was thus moved, Bird remained for the most part in the back of the room; and from such position, at all times of the séance, the several sitters were silhouetted to him against the windows. When he moved around to the window side of the circle [occasionally], the sitters on the room side were not in the least degree visible to him, nor was any of the furniture in the center of the room visible; so he infers that he was invisible to the sitters so long as he remained in the quarter away from the windows.

The first action consisted in free motion of the dark megaphone, as described by several sitters, in the space above the table. Bird's eyes were not yet sufficiently accommodated to the darkness to see this; the others were closer to it, and in large part reported it by the senses of touch and hearing.

The large basket, with luminous ribbon band and three luminous spots on the handle, was placed on the table. Walter took off the band and dropped it on the floor, then was thought by some sitters to have placed this on Margery's feet or ankles. The basket moved very freely about the table. Once or twice red light was permitted for a short period [a red bulb had been brought out and substituted for the white one in a socket on the wall which Bird could reach]; and the basket was found, on the onset of this light, teetering on the edge of the table, clearly without adequate support, as in the case of the note-book on July 9th and the basket on the 12th.[13] It went far over and off the table almost into horizontal position, recovered, remained in teetering balance, and finaly fell or was carried to the floor. Twice thrown away by Walter, it was the first time recovered by Bird and the second time permitted to remain out of action.

Either the basket or the doughnut, Bird is not sure which, was recovered by Walter after it had dropped to the floor at the side of the table remote from the Psychic. The doughnut was moved freely about the table, and once or twice was recovered from the floor at points nearer the Psychic than implied in the preceding sentence. There was here no silhouetting of the teleplasmic hand, as such; but on numerous occasions there were rapid eclipses of luminous objects on the table, apparently by Walter's terminal in transit.

During many of the more impressive acts there was control by Bird of the Hubbs-Margery link; and by Mrs. Hubbs of the Cran-

[13] See pp. 243 and 74, respectively.

don-Psychic link.[14] Bird's control of the junction was usually supplemented by control of the Psychic's head through contact with his own.

Late in the sitting Hubbs, at Walter's invitation, put his luminous wristwatch on the table. It moved at least a foot in the direction straight toward Hubbs, and therefore diagonally toward the corner of the table at the Psychic's left. This direction was about sixty degrees removed from a line joining the Psychic with the initial position of the watch. The watch, too, went to the edge of the table in red light and teetered there; and of course the claim of a thread or other connection meets difficulties here which do not arise in the case of the doughnut; for the watch was produced from Hubb's wrist during the séance.

Bird exercised far greater freedom of exploration about moving objects than he would have dared admit during the progress of the séance. In this he met no contacts whatever save in the case of the moving watch, when he collided with what appeared to be a cord, extending in the direction of travel of the watch. He satisfied himself that this had been the leather strap on which the watch is mounted; further immediate exploration by Bird indicated that this was extended in precisely the direction of the watch's travel, and subsequent experiment resulted in duplicating, from this strap, the sensation previously encountered during the séance darkness.

The Code bell-box was placed on the table; the external hinged board was opened and closed by Walter, and the bell was rung several times.

The table used was the round dining table which is part of the permanent fittings of the cabin. There was no cabinet at all; the Psychic sat free in the room like any other sitter. Walter's whistle was once heard from a point which all sitters placed at the side of the Cabin, remote from the Psychic and well outside the circle.

On the following Sunday, July 26th, another séance was held at the cabin, under much more impressive conditions. Mrs. Bird was in Boston with me for my sittings of July 23rd–25th; and at the Crandons' invitation, we were living in the cabin at Point Shirley, driving in to Boston each day and back to the Beach each evening after the séance. We were thus in residence at the cabin from Friday morning until Monday morning; so that when the crowd arrived for Sunday

[14] At first glance it looks as though I might more profitably have controlled the Crandon-Psychic link. But if confederacy can be charged against either Hubbs or Mrs. Hubbs it can be charged against them both; and I then prefer to have the position dictated by the fact that Margery is right-handed.—J. M. B.

at the beach, it was in many respects as though they were visiting us in our own house. I think even the critic of hostile disposition must grant that under these circumstances we have a much clearer demonstration of the innocence of the premises than it was possible for me to have the week before. Both Crandon and I made records; his was in the usual form and mine was in the shape of adequate but extremely sketchy notes, jotted down that night after the crowd had left and before I retired. I was on the road home until a very late hour Monday, and hence received Crandon's record before I had had time to expand my own into a finished form. Accordingly I here present his record, with certain amplifications from my own notes. I make this explanation merely as a matter of history, and not in any sense to dodge responsibility for the record; it may be read as though it were mine.

Bird was free in the room to tend the victrola and to control at his pleasure. There was no cabinet. The darkness was much more effective than last Sunday; at no time was there the slightest visibility, to Bird, of silhouettes of the other sitters against the windows, though he was almost continuously in position to see this had the effect been sensible.

Walter came through promptly, and said his force was low, but that he came rather than disappoint us. He at once rang the hole bell-box several times, despite the seal over all the openings as described in previous records;[15] then he ordered various pieces of kitchen hardware brought in and played with them, mostly on the floor in a fashion that would have been evidential only with a foot control of extreme severity—which we did not have. At one stage or another Murray and Mrs. Bird reported touches.

Walter finally instructed the sitters to put out personal belongings on the table, for him to identify. During these identifications, Bird stood directly behind the Psychic, reaching around over her shoulders so that with his left hand he could control the junction between her and Murray, with his right that between her and Crandon. Throughout this period, with minor exceptions, he was continuously conscious of contact with all four of these hands; and as an incident of his position, his head was in constant contact with the Psychic's.

There was no element of supernormal attribution by Walter of each object to its proprietor; rather, he called for each sitter by name to put out something. The objects offered in response

[15] See p. 126, top, for summary of the facts referred to here.

were therefore on the table singly, and the only supernormal element lay in Walter's statement of their identity. As each object was successfully or unsuccessfully named, it was withdrawn by its owner and Walter called upon another sitter. The objects offered, the sitters presenting them, Walter's performance, and the degree of control by Bird in accordance with the above description, follow:

J. H. Brown; a penknife. So identified by Walter. Brown did not respond for an interval, whereupon Walter added: "It may be a pencil." The knife was in fact smooth and round to an unusual degree for such an object. Full control by Bird.

Gerke; a magnifying glass in its leather case. Identified in three stages: leather, glass, a magnifying glass in a leather case. Full control by Bird.

Dr. Brown; a bill (money) of unstated denomination. Identified at once by Walter's remark: "Take back your money, Bos'n".[16] Full control by Bird.

Bird; a handkerchief. Identified by the words: "Take up your handkerchief, Birdie." Full control by Bird, his left hand which put out the handkerchief sweeping back to a position of control over such a path that it would have met either of the hands under its control had they, too, been under the necessity of making a similar return. Before again releasing either of these hands Bird verified the identity of both.

Murray; a purse. Successfully identified. No memorandum of this identification in Bird's record, and hence no knowledge of state of control.

Dr. Brown, called upon next for an object, robbed Laura Crandon, at his left, of a hair-pin. No indication of protest or surprise from her was audible to Bird, whose first inkling of what had occurred came from Walter's words: "Ha, ha; Eddie; you can't fool me. Laura, take back your hairpin." Full control by Bird.

J. H. Brown; a penny. Identification slow, halting, and without any definite ultimate success. This is the more interesting, since this was the one identification during which Bird's control was not satisfactory.[17]

---

[16] Walter commonly calls Dr. Brown this, in allusion to Crandon's yachting days.—J. M. B.

[17] My memorandum does not specify what the deficiency was; it simply says "control bad." I think it probable I had gone to wind or set back the victrola, and that the identification was started while I was away from my post. I had to leave my position thus, several times during the course of the identifications. In every other instance save this, an entire episode, from Walter's calling for the stated sitter to contribute an object to his final success in identification, fell entirely between

Gerke was next called upon by Walter; and he started to get out a cigarette. In the meantime, Dr. Brown possessed himself of another piece of Laura Crandon's property, this time her shoe, and placed this on the table. Walter said: "Thought you'd fool me again, did you, Laura? It's your shoe." Whereupon he threw the shoe to the floor. By this time, Gerke had his cigarette on the table; Walter immediately identified it, too. Full control by Bird throughout this.

Bird; a commutation ticket. Walter identified it as a paper, control by Bird being satisfactory, under a technique identical with the one employed before when he had to put out an object for identification.

Crandon; a pair of scissors of odd design. Walter described this object as "scissors with a hole in it," quite correctly. No memorandum of control, this item being missing from Bird's record.

Bird, invited to contribute two objects at once, could find only his "keytainer" with perhaps half a dozen keys in it, and a wooden toothpick which he came upon, loose in his pocket. Walter identified the former as "a case with something in it;" the latter he characterized as "too personal" to be named. No memorandum of control for this episode.

Out of all this, the points to be stressed are these: In the first place it was quite out of the question for the Psychic to handle the various objects as they were put out. In not more than two instances at the outside was there audible to me any noise accompanying their placing on the table by their owners or contributors. But after they had been so placed, something was distinctly heard to handle them; and Walter's words carry more than one index that identification was by a tactile process. Anything in the nature of vision, normal or hyperesthetic, by the Psychic I think must be ruled out. My line of vision across the table coincided almost absolutely with hers, and I could see no slightest silhouetting of the sitters opposite us. I think it ridiculous to talk of visual hyperesthesia under such absence of light.

We must, then, if we seek the oblique explanation, fall back upon the hypothesis of confederacy. *But it was Walter's voice, with all its habitual nuances and all its habitual quick humor and all its habitual effect of coming from the immediate vicinity of the Psychic's*

two of my absences and was therefore prosecuted under my continuous control. On each return, of course, I verified the identity of the hands on resuming control. —J. M. B.

head, that did the talking. And we were not even in Lime Street, where the fireplace and the comparatively easy invadability of the room offer the impervious skeptic some precarious foothold. Short of attacking my account itself, I must confess I do not see any answer in terms of fraud. Even a confederacy of prior arrangement, so that the Psychic knew what objects were to be put out, by what sitters, would work only if it involved Gerke and myself.

Again on the following Sunday, August 2nd, there was a party at the Beach followed by a séance. There was good moonlight; to escape this, the sitting was held in the shed back of the kitchen, which has no openings of any description other than the two doors, one to the yard and one to the kitchen. The record tells us of a decidedly brilliant séance:

> We sat in the shed, which was cool and absolutely dark. Outside of the constant recurrence of a small star-like light, the phenomena were practically all in the red light. Dr. Brown was outside the circle to keep the victrola going.
>
> Walter came through at once and first worked on Dingwall's small illuminated basket. We were given in all about fourteen periods of red light in which to observe the manifestations. The small basket was seen resting on one of its edges on the west end of the table. From that point, in the light it erected itself to vertical and then lowered itself carefully over on the table. This was repeated on the north and east sides of the table.
>
> Then Walter called for some personal object, whereupon Crandon put on the table his handkerchief. At the next period of red light the handkerchief was not to be seen; but then it slowly reappeared up over the north end[18] of the table, and climbed up on the table.
>
> The handkerchief was next seen within the small megaphone; and it grew out of the big end, just as a rose or head of lettuce might grow. This was repeated three times. Then the handkerchief was next seen on the back of Murray's head and neck, moving down to the side of his neck. It seemed to Murray as though there was something inside the handkerchief; and Walter said: "Of course there is." Several other small personal objects were placed on the table by various sitters and moved from six to nine inches. As the various objects climbed up on the edge of the table and moved about, the Psychic's head was moved violently and irregularly in her efforts to see the phenomena; and it could by no

[18] The Psychic was at the south end, Crandon testifies from a very clear memory.

calculation be thought to be connected therewith. Hand control was perfect throughout.[19]

It would seem fair enough, in view of the use of the lean-to for the above sitting, to regard it as having been held in a different place from previous sittings at the Point. From this viewpoint, when the next séance was staged at the Beach, on August 16th, a third "premises" was used—the garage. The floor here, of course, is of solid concrete, with no space under it; and it is of interest to remark that in the shed where the séance of the 2d was held, this is also the case.

Dr. Brown was on the outside of the circle to keep the victrola going. The room used (the garage) was absolutely black.[20] No luminous controls were employed.[21] Walter came at once and called at once for playing cards. Dye then opened in red light a freshly bought, sealed package of playing cards, with the revenue stamp on them. These he shuffled in the dark and put under his leg in the chair. At Walter's request, in the dark Dye then put out one card at a time; and after Walter had read a card in the dark, which he did with increasing rapidity, the card would be given to a particular sitter, until finally each sitter had one card and some had two. Brown kept a list of the sitters and the name of the card as given by Walter. Walter named eleven cards complete, as regards denomination and suit; with two errors as between Spades and Hearts. In addition, three face cards occurred in the course of the test; of these he named the suit but made no attempt to read the denomination, throwing these cards on the floor instead.[22] Save as indicated, all fourteen identifications of the cards were completely successful; and only these fourteen were attempted.

I think the most important aspect of these Cabin sittings is to be found in the way they dovetail with the current Lime Street séances. They amply support the generalization that the phenomena which are being obtained at a given moment in Lime Street continue to occur when the sittings are transferred to the Beach. The character of

---

[19] The visibility rendered this somewhat superfluous; in so far as it was necessary, the failure of the record to mention double control leaves us to assume that Crandon's control of the Psychic's right was unchecked.—J. M. B.

[20] It has one window and there are translucent panes in the doors. Both were adequately blanketed.—J. M. B.

[21] See open reference No. 7, Vol. 2.

[22] See Chap. XXIII, particularly p. 293, top.

the manifestations varies strongly from time to time, and must therefore be a function of *some* variable; but that variable is emphatically *not* the place of sitting.

With the onset of September, the Sunday parties at the Beach were dropped; but the occasional sitting outside Lime Street and in new places was not dropped. On September 17th, the mediumship for the first time invaded the Litzelmann residence in Cambridge. Both Margery and the Doctor have been in the house, socially and professionally; but the séance record tells us that they had never been in the room in which the sitting was held. The action centered entirely about the Richardson voice machine, so the detailed record may best be given elsewhere. Here we need only cite page 265 in support of the statement that the séance was in every way a success, constituting a good contribution to the sequence by which Richardson approached certitude in his vocal tests.

When next the mediumship went abroad, it was to give, or to hold, a séance in the residence of Mr. William Foss, of Concord, Mass. Mr. Foss is himself a physical medium of considerable fame in the Boston territory. He sits always with a considerable number of his family, if I may generalize from the reports that reach my ears; and he admits outsiders sparingly and with reluctance. Comstock, of the Scientific American Committee, at one time gained the old gentleman's confidence and attended a considerable number of sittings. Conditions of occurrence and of observations were of course never what he would have desired; but he felt that there was approximately an even chance that the manifestations were valid. If they are so, the stories that one hears of Foss would place him close in Margery's class, in all respects save that of range or versatility. But we shall see immediately below that on Foss' own admission these stories are exaggerated.

On September 28th, 1925, Margery and the Doctor journeyed to Concord and a séance was held in the Foss residence. As is usually the case when Margery sits with another medium, the result seemed to consist more or less in a crossing of the two mediumships, rather than in a clear-cut performance by either medium at which the other could be regarded solely in the light of a sitter. Crandon's record follows:

> Before the sitting, Foss, who is seventy-five years old but very active, sat with hands on a table in bright white light in the living room, while intelligent raps in code came on the table apparently without any possibility of fraud. The sitting was held in the kitchen, around a table five feet square. A slight white light came

through two windows; a third window back of Foss was covered by a blanket.

The table almost immediately became mobile, with motion as though it were on a ship at sea. Then the whole house, or the portion of it in which we were, shook violently in periods of ten to twelve seconds. This was noted by all; Foss had repeatedly observed it [in his own séances]; it was not apparently possible to do it normally, though we tried this after the sitting. Then came a lot of raps in threes of differing intensities, apparently answering yes or no to questions of identification put by Foss or Randall. Things were then quiet for a spell, and in order to start them again Foss sang "Nearer, My God, to Thee." At this there was a low whistle of surprise from behind Margery. This was very welcome to the two of us. Then Foss sang "Old Black Joe" and Walter—for it was unmistakably he—broke in with an obligato accompaniment which was very beautiful. Walter was then introduced all around and seemed in very friendly and tactful mood. Next there came an apparent effort of someone to speak between Foss and Randall. Walter kept encouraging this by saying, "Come on, Joe. Now, Joe; it's easy. Let me count one, two, three, Joe; then speak." "Joe" then came through in a very rapid whisper quite new to us, and in the region between Foss and Randall, saying: "You usually have strands on your wrists and ankles." This we took to be addressed to Margery, and we felt it more or less evidential. We asked Walter how Joe would know that, and Walter said: "I told him. Do you think we are all fools over here?"

Then followed a period of raps of all intensities on the table, ending with a bang as from a gun, which startled everybody. Foss now said a pistol was being held against his forehead, and we shortly heard a pistol hammer lifted up. We had no enthusiasm for this. Crandon got many touches on left foot, ankle and thigh. Papers were taken from his left coat pocket, brushed across his face, and put back in the pocket. It was mechanically impossible for anyone in the room to have done this. It was apparently done by Walter, who chuckled in glee. Then Crandon was nearly tilted out of his chair, sideways, three times. Walter said Joe was doing this. Walter then told us to call him up later at Lime Street, and departed.

Foss said that he had never attended a sitting like that; that he usually has many voices. The stories of his "materializations" turn out to be a mere matter of touches with apparent hands; he has never seen an apparition. The control conditions during our

sitting were good, and we feel there is no doubt of Foss' integrity. He says he sits not over three times a year. He says further that he can go out in a field with a tin pan in bright sunlight and raps will come on the pan.

On the way home Walter whistled once in the car. He told us later that he rode home with us on account of the taxicab strike.[23] At 11:30 we called on Walter in Lime Street, and he said he had to stay around whenever the Kid sat, in order that no other control should get hold of her and do her possible damage.

From October 30th to November 5th, 1925, Margery was in Buffalo and Niagara Falls, on family and personal errands. During her stay, as in December, 1924, she gave sittings—five in all, to a total of about thirty-five sitters. This time, however, Crandon remained in Boston, and the sittings went on without him. The brief memorandum drawn up by Crandon, from Margery's oral report of her trip, follows:

Among the sitters on two occasions was a Mr. Lamont, a medium, of Buffalo. This medium's control is a "Mr. Fox," alleged to be an English general who passed over seventy or eighty years ago. At these sittings Walter came through, and there was a large amount of comedy as he conversed with "Mr. Fox" through the entranced Lamont. The contrast between the gay and energetic Canadian (Walter) and the dignified Britisher kept all the sitters convulsed with laughter. A large assortment of luminously marked objects was levitated about the region in front of the medium, with control of the medium constantly changing between four or five of the men sitters. Among these sitters was "Jones,"[24] who is apparently developing as a medium.

Anything which might be said here in summary on the major theme of the present chapter has been said on pages 69 and 72. The two final sittings of this group, however, introduce a new theme, in expansion upon which it is in order to observe that whenever Margery sits with other mediums, there may be anticipated an interesting combination of the two series of phenomena or an interesting interplay between the two sets of controls. This theme may be pursued through p. 334 and Chapter XXXIII to the chapter, falling in the second volume of this text and not yet numbered when this page goes to press, dealing with the interplay between Margery and William Cartheuser.

[23] A typical bit of Walter humor.—J. M. B.
[24] See Chaps. XLI, XLII.

CHAPTER IX

The Code-Hoagland Episode

By the Editor

In August, 1924, Mr. Foster Damon, Instructor of English at Harvard, was introduced to the Crandons and had a sitting. At several occasions during the ensuing autumn he returned to the Lime Street seance room, bringing with him Mr. Robert Hillyer and Mr. Grant H. Code, incumbents of academic positions similar to his own. The three made, in the academic and literary sense, a rather distinguished group. Damon has conducted a good deal of research into the practices of medieval alchemy, which he finds to parallel present-day metapsychics to a surprising degree. Hillyer is a poet of some distinction; Code has written verse and short stories, and in addition is an amateur conjurer and contortionist of rather more than average ability.

From what they saw of the mediumship in the latter part of 1924 (Damon having six sittings, Hillyer and Code three each), they acquired a state of mind which I think may best be described as comprising a large degree of incipient conviction. This went to the length where one of them presented Margery with a copy of his latest book, with an enthusiastic inscription on the fly-leaf testifying to his belief in her supernormal powers; and where they used their experiences in Lime Street as a basis for the assignment of themes to their undergraduate courses. In addition, the entire group in a general way and Code in particular came into a cordial personal friendship with the Crandons.

These young men at this time were quite out of patience with Professor McDougall for what they, in common with the Crandons and myself, regarded as his bungling consideration of the mediumship. When, as they and I saw it, Dingwall continued the identical bungling course which McDougall had pursued, and showed a large McDougall influence, their indignation became extremely real. They enlisted the aid of Mr. Hudson Hoagland, a graduate student who had previously been majoring in physics but had recently transferred his allegiance to psychology, and Mr. John Marshall, regarded as one of the more

brilliant members of the Senior class; and they began an intensive contact with the mediumship which they hoped might lead to its greater academic respectability and its more competent examination. I believe that they had no more definite plan, at first, than this. Their first renewed contact came on March 13th, 1925, when Damon, Marshall and Hillyer attended a seance, being the only sitters outside Adler and the immediate family.[1] The same three, plus Hoagland, sat on the 15th,[2] this being Hoagland's introduction as the seance of the 13th was Marshall's.

Following this, the aims of the Harvard group became somewhat more ambitious, turning more or less definitely in the direction of a set series of seances to be conducted by them. In anticipation of this, they had turned their attention to the construction of seance-room apparatus; and they had produced a very much better thought-out and better finished version of the mechanical bell-box than that which Dingwall had hastily constructed for use in his own sittings. It is this bell-box which I describe on page 117; Dingwall's own model was relatively crude. The general principles of design follow his, however; and inasmuch as the introduction of the new mechanical bell-box resulted in the old one's becoming obsolete, it has been customary to refer to the new one, like the old, simply as the Dingwall bell-box. The details of the design, and all the work of construction, it must be emphasized, are to be credited to the young men from Cambridge.

They brought this revised Dingwall bell-box to Lime Street on March 29th and attempted a sitting, with Marshall, Damon and Hoagland in more or less complete control of all potential sources of fraud.[3] They drew a total blank. Walter explained, after they had gone, his reasons for withholding the phenomena;[4] and promised to do better the next time they came. The record of this date is drawn in a form which seems to recognize Hoagland as the active head of the Harvard group. It is a fact that the others brought him in, with the idea that he had a laboratory technique and an experience in dealing with physical problems which they lacked; and that his combination of physics and psychology was just what was needed for the work in hand. Equally, Hoagland regarded himself as the eyes and mind of the Harvard group, looking very much down upon the inexperience,

[1] Pp. 22, 50.
[2] P. 51.
[3] See open reference No. 8, Vol. 2.
[4] See open reference No. 9, Vol. 2.

idealism and general unscientific background of his colleagues. A little later in their game I spent a long afternoon with him at his residence, in the course of which he put to me very strongly this estimate of his own and his colleagues' abilities.

Their consideration of the mediumship now began rapidly to crystalize; and when next they sat, it was under a quite definite program of trying for something very conclusive with the Dingwall bell-box, in the absence so far as might be of all superfluous sitters. The date was April 17th; and Crandon's record may be given in full:

> Present to left: Damon, Code,[5] Adler, Marshall, Hoagland, Crandon. Walter came through promptly in about six minutes, and mutual introductions were carried out.[6] Hoagland had brought from Harvard the finished mechanical bell-box designed by Dingwall.[7] After getting acquainted with it for a while, Walter found no difficulty in ringing this bell with great vigor in the dark, and thereafter during the sitting whenever something else was accomplished successfully, Walter banged with great vigor upon the DB.[8] This and all other phenomena during the evening were done under strictly double control conditions.
>
> In the dark, Walter exhibited levitation and other forms of telekinesis of the luminous basket and the doughnut. Then he had each of the sitters in turn put his nose into the doughnut while he pulled the hair and stroked the neck of each.[9] The big megaphone was then called for and beautiful levitation was shown, the megaphone sailing above the table in all directions with the greatest freedom.

The Harvard group was next present on May 1st; the record appears in full on page 39. While the DB was again present, the sitting shows the same thing happening to these investigators that later happened to me: their program was deflected into close coincidence with Walter's current routine. Partly on this account, and partly because of the difficulty of excluding social sitters and controlling general conditions in Lime Street, the Harvard group now advanced an extremely definite project that they be given dates for a series of highly formal sittings, to be held on premises supplied by

[5] For the first time, in connection with this project.—J. M. B.

[6] These must have involved the apparatus and the program rather than the sitters, none of whom was strange.—J. M. B.

[7] A description ensues, which I omit since I cover it elsewhere.—J. M. B.

[8] Dingwall bell-box.

[9] See p. 50 for generalization covering this.

them and to be under their entire control save for whatever of general reservations Crandon might apply to them as he had applied to Dingwall. The immediate result of this project was séances Nos. 428, 432, 438, 442, 452, 453, 457 and 458, running from May 19th to June 30th, 1925. The ultimate result has been a very complicated series of facts and theories, about which extreme controversy has centered. Much has been published, but in fragmentary and often in partisan fashion. No orderly statement of all the facts has been attempted. Such statement, with orderly assignment of the existing literature to its proper place and without undue duplication of or quotation from such literature, is now a problem of extreme difficulty.

I may most profitably set down first, without further explanation for the moment, that the young men from Harvard finally adjudged the mediumship to be wholly without validity. I may then briefly summarize the chronology of publication. Following a period of uncertainty as to whether their findings were to be published at all, and as to the form and place of publication, Hoagland submitted to the *Atlantic Monthly* a semi-popular account of their work. This appeared in the *Atlantic* for November, 1925, page 666; I cite it hereafter as *Hoag. Atl.* In the *Journal* of the A.S.P.R. for December, 1925, I published a criticism of Hoagland's article, both in matters of its face value and in matters of my own inside information of its delinquencies and those of its author and his colleagues; all leading me to conclude that this "exposure" possessed as little merit as Houdini's had done. This article I cite hereafter as *B. vs. H.* Then, Hoagland having published only his conclusions with a running comment upon such of his data as were most in harmony with these, and there being no apparent hope of getting the full séance records before the public in any other way, a group of Dr. Crandon's friends published a pamphlet, the main purpose of which was to carry these records, but in which space was also given to considerable material in rebuttal of the claims of the Harvard group. The title of this pamphlet is Margery-Harvard-Veritas; it appeared privately in Boston in 1926, though its title page carries a copyright date 1925; I cite it hereafter as *M. H. V.* Although other material dealing primarily or incidentally with the issues arising out of this episode has appeared elsewhere, these three citations are all we need to make at this point of our story.

By these citations, we may consider that the séance records themselves, Hoagland's treatment of them, and such of the defence as ap-

pears in *B. vs. H.* or in *M. H. V.* are read into the present record. The first two are obviously available to my readers; any who have not seen the third may get copies from Crandon while they last. I may, however, summarize briefly the salient points of the Harvard sittings. All were held either in Emerson Hall, Harvard, or in Hoagland's residence. The official make-up of the investigating group was to include only Code, Hoagland, Damon, Hillyer and Marshall. At their pleasure, faculty members of higher rank were to be invited in as observers. Such observers were to sign the séance record and assume all other due responsibilities, but were to have a hand only indirectly in any final verdict which might issue from the investigation. The record was to be dictaphonic, and was to comprise all significant facts; there were to be no post-mortem allegations of fraud, *a la* Houdini.

Dr. Deborah Fawcett or some other qualified woman was always present to examine the Psychic before and after the séance; and this was to be done more seriously than ever before or since with this mediumship. Foot control was left entirely to the luminous bands; hand control was supplemented in most sittings by a galvanic current running through the circle and to a galvanometer outside the room, under constant watch of a specially detailed observer.

On two occasions, dictaphonic accident required that the record be drawn up or supplemented from the memories of the sitters. Once, when I was in Boston at the date of a sitting, I was invited to attend and did so. Other added sitters included Professor Harlow Shapley of the department of Astronomy, five times; Dr. Hilbert F. Day, surgeon, twice; Dr. E. G. Boring of the psychological laboratory, Dr. S. B. Wolbach of the Medical School, Professor W. J. V. Osterhout of the Rockefeller Institute and Professor E. B. Wilson of "Tech.," once each.

Considerable new apparatus and new procedure was used. An electrical bell-box of new model[10] was conspicuous among these innovations, as was a plaque ruled off by luminous lines in one-inch squares and designated as the "coordinate board." A means was employed of determining that the electrical conductivity of Walter's terminal was substantially that of a human arm. The phenomena obtained were telekinesis, with a constantly increasing degree of silhouetting of the terminal against luminous grounds, notably the coordinate board. When I was present, the Psychic for the only time wore bloomers

[10] See Chap. X.

sealed above and below to insulate the ordinary locus of anatomical fraud. Paraffin and modelling clay were used to secure imprints from Walter's terminal. Etc., etc.

During the course of their official sittings, the members of the group individually or collectively attended other séances in Lime Street. On May 24th all save Marshall were present at a demonstration of Richardson's voice machine.[11] On the 31st Code and Damon attended a family gathering.[11a] On June 18th, 19th and 20th I was conducting serious séances in Lime Street; on all three occasions Damon ran the dictaphone for me and Hoagland was in the circle, while Code was present once.[11b] And on the 25th, Damon and Code brought in another English instructor, Dr. Hood, the Hole Bell-box[12] being introduced to Walter on this occasion.

These attendances are of some importance as emphasizing that the negative conclusion reached by the group involved a turnover of opinion on their part. Of further significance in this direction is a conference which I had with Hoagland, lasting an entire afternoon on the occasion of my June visit to Boston. We discussed the things they were doing and planned to do, the program of my own sittings, the general bearings of the one undertaking upon the other and how we might best avoid duplication of effort, the actual assistance which they could render in my sittings, the make-up of their group and of my circles, etc., etc., etc.; all in a way making it utterly absurd to suppose that in Hoagland's mind at this moment there reposed any doubts about Margery's essential *bona fides* and validity. We even discussed the bearing which the to-be-anticipated verdict of genuineness might have upon Hoagland's academic work and his relations with McDougall, under whom he was majoring.

My first inkling that this picture had changed came in a letter from Crandon himself, advising me in a general way of the claim which had been set up that the phenomena were produced normally, under a hypnotic and auto-hypnotic setting which relieved both him and the medium of the charge of conscious fraud; and telling me of one or two interviews in which members of the group had put these views before him. My first word from any member of the group itself came a day or two later, in a letter from Code, dated July 5th. He wrote as follows:

---

[11] See p. 263.
[11a] See pp. 43, 61.
[11b] See Chap. XIII.
[12] See pp. 60, 62, 125.

This letter is strictly confidential. Recent developments in the Lime Street case make it highly important that I see you for a confidential talk as soon as possible. The case apparently has a solution that is not dishonorable for any of the parties involved. It is not a question of the supernatural,[13] but of a very delicate and complicated problem in abnormal psychology, the nature of which I cannot commit to writing. The strictest privacy is essential. Any publicity is to be deplored, especially since it is likely to excite, irritate and complicate a very unstable mental situation. It seems to me unwise to let the persons chiefly involved know that I have communicated with you. At present I am in a position to be able to influence them for their own good; I am acting solely as their friend; and any destruction of this confidence in me would put it out of my power to do anything for them. I write to you partly because you control some lines of publicity on the case and will best know what can be done. But I write to you chiefly as a friend of the parties involved. You have it in your power to do them inestimable service, and your intimate knowledge of the case puts you in a unique position.

The highly melodramatic working of Code's mind, as indicated by the veiled hints in place of direct statement as to whom he was talking about, the similar pussyfooting as to what he was talking about, and the whole spirit of the letter in fact, seem entirely characteristic. In our conference, held on July 9th, he dropped the fiction that we were dealing anonymously with the parties; but he never ceased to deal anonymously with the situation. He was greatly concerned, throughout the period of my intimate contact with him, about the psychological catastrophe which hung over Lime Street and from which salvation could be achieved only through him; but beyond indicating that its incidence would follow from the moment when the Crandons themselves came to a realization of the truth of the hypnosis theory, he was never able to reduce it to any more definite terms than those of the above letter. And indeed, as much as anything the dominant reason why he wanted to see me so badly turned out to be his fear lest I publish in the Journal of the A. S. P. R. something about the work of his group and their findings. When he was assured that I had no intent of doing anything of the sort, he breathed more easily; and only then was he able to discuss other aspects of the case.

It was from Code's lips at this time that I first had the story that

[13] The wrong word; he means *supernormal*.—J. M. B.

has been so often retold, as to just how the great discovery was made. Substantially it came to this:

Repeatedly, during the séance of June 29th (the seventh and penultimate one held by the Harvard group), he had been dissatisfied with the appearance of the luminous anklets. It seemed to him that one of them was on the floor with a foot or a slipper lying over it to prevent it from being seen as a full circle of light. Finally, he did so see it for a moment, and he made the direct statement, for the dictaphone, that it was off the Psychic's foot. This Walter promptly contradicted, and followed the contradiction by giving a more or less convincing display of the visibility in proper semi-circular form and of the proper mobility and other proper relationships of the two ankle-bands. But Code, and perhaps some of the others, were not convinced. As a matter of fact, Walter on the following evening admitted that "of course" the band had been off; but he said that, to save the face of the group in the presence of a very supercilious guest of Shapley's, he had denied it at the time.

The anklet, then, it is granted by all parties, was off. The record is defective, in that it does not indicate whether the Psychic wore slippers alone, or slippers with stockings. The fact is, she wore slippers alone. Following the séance (of the 29th), Code remained behind (at Hoagland's residence, where the sitting was held although the record fails to specify it) with Damon and Hoagland, for purposes of experiment. He found that with slippers over his bare feet and anklets of the sort used in the séance and similarly applied, he could very readily remove the luminous band, using the toes of the other foot for the purpose. He could put a foot or a loose slipper over the freed anklet to preserve its semicircular aspect; and with the free foot or feet thus attained, he could duplicate a lot of the phenomena of the mediumship. Finally, he could restore the anklets to place. The hypothesis was at once formulated that this was the modus operandi of practically all the phenomena. It is not a fact that always prior to this time Margery had sat without stockings; but with reference to the Harvard sittings it appears that this had been the case.

It will be seen that Code's personality runs large through the preceding paragraphs. Through those that follow it will run larger. We have had Code making the critical observations and prosecuting the critical experiments on which a theory of fraud is to be based. When the group needed a spokesman to put their findings before me, to try to win me over to adherence to their findings or at least to silent

acquiescence therein, he took this function upon himself. And he did not stop here. He proceeded to formulate that precise theory of the fraudulent origin and history of the phenomena which his colleagues were to espouse; to usurp complete leadership of Hoagland's investigation, in and out of the séance-room and in all its extra-official as well as official functions; and finally, to nominate himself for the delicate office of intermediary between the Crandons and the exposers, of kind friend of the medium and her husband who was to save them from the ruination which their own folly might be expected to bring down upon them. His own story covering his actions before, during and after the final séance of June 30th is told in part in the previously cited documents, and in remaining part in a communication by him printed in the *Proceedings*[13] of the (British) S.P.R. All this may appropriately be outlined here.

After the séance of June 29th and the sequel thereto in which Code experimented with ways for escaping from the luminous foot-control, the means of production of the Margery phenomena were believed to have been fully discovered. Measures to prevent the use of this type of fraud were to be taken at the sitting of June 30th. It was anticipated that this séance would then either turn out a blank; or would result in the spontaneous offering of new and unfamiliar phenomena, of whatever sort and by whatever means a spontaneous grasping of opportunity might permit. This of course meant exposure.

Code, in reflecting upon the consequences of such an event, concluded that they would be disastrous. He was very fond of the Crandons. He feared that the climax séance, if carried through according to schedule, would lead to a confrontation scene, in which Margery would be denounced in some way by his colleagues. He thought it better to break the news to her more gently, and to avoid entirely the possible conflict of a more or less open exposure. In addition, there was the consideration, hinted at in his letter to me, that if she or Crandon or both were brought to a full acceptance of the theories of the Harvard group as to the causation of the phenomena, he feared the emotional results which would then ensue; he went so far as to speak of possible insanity or break-down of the family ties under this stress. Just how this double psychological factor was to work out if he did not interfere with the plans of his colleagues for the exposure, he does not make anywhere clear; nor does he explain how the same

[13] Part 101, Vol. XXXVI; January, 1927; p. 414.

consequences were to be avoided in the slower and less dramatic exposure, and conviction in their own minds, which he must have expected would follow any steps that he might take to prevent the emergency of the moment. We are told only that he felt the call to rush into the breach and save the Crandons from the situation which threatened to engulf them.

Likewise there is lacking any published history of the development, in his own mind, of his theories as to the causation of the phenomena. It is not stated anywhere that he had any serious doubts of the phenomena prior to June 29th, and apparently he had none. But on June 30th he was in a position to talk fluently about his theory exculpating the Crandons from any conscious fraud. The basic idea is a rather elusive one; it partakes of the nature of hypnosis but must not be identified with hypnosis in the strict technical sense; it seems to lie on middle ground somewhere between true hypnosis and mere intense autosuggestion with complications. The upshot is that through the motivation unintentionally supplied by Crandon's keen interest and desire, and by other less definite and less respectable factors such as Margery's enjoyment of the limelight, Margery herself is pictured as going into this indeterminate state of amnesic suggestibility, wherein her physical resources, sharpened as always under hypnosis, are utilized for physical fraud without her concurrent knowledge or subsequent memory. There would have to be a good deal of extra-séance preparation, and for this we are told that she lapses into the near-hypnotic state at convenient moments during the day. There would have to be release of her hand and other active confederacy by Crandon, and for this we are told that *he* too lapses into that state. There would have to be extra-séance preparation by him of the surgical specimens used teleplasmically; the theory passes over this entirely, save as it is covered by the following fact: Individual members of the Harvard group were never in accord as to just how far we may picture the two Crandons as consciously and deliberately helping out a Walter who came into existence, initially, in the way indicated, as a semi-hypnotic impersonation of the dead brother, and in whose reality they have faith. Indeed, it has not been demonstrated to me that any of them save Code ever gave this hypothesis H, as it came to be called, more than the most perfunctory adhesion.

Code insists vehemently that he did not cook the theory up out of whole cloth as a mere means of shielding the Crandons from more infamous charges. At the time, he protested violently that he believed

it, that it was the truth and the whole truth and nothing but the truth. His conduct throughout the controversy, however, as well as during the 1926 discussions, public and private, arising out of Margery's warfare with her critics, makes it impossible for me to give credit to this, and convinces me that Hypothesis H was a deliberate and cold-blooded fabrication, to save him from the pain of charging conscious fraud against a lady whom he greatly admired. I do not believe that he himself ever credited it, for a moment. And it is wholly clear to me that he nowhere explains satisfactorily the very rapid genesis of this hypothesis in his mind. What he *does* tell us is that, moved as explained above by the fear of the consequences of a sudden and dramatic exposure and a self-conviction, he went to Lime Street in the daytime of June 30th and had a longish interview with Margery. He described to her the events of the previous evening, and tried to convince her that the phenomena had been produced by normal means. He thinks he succeeded in this; he found her reactions strongly in line with the idea that the trickery was unconscious and that she first learned of it through his words. She was frightened and asked his advice. He in turn was prepared to go to any length to prevent the threatened disaster of dramatic exposure. He suggested that they adjourn to the séance room so that he might consult Walter. He tells us that this was done; that Walter came through promptly; and that, Margery being in trance and without knowledge of what was said, arrangements were made for Code to serve as confederate in the séance of that evening. He was to occupy the seat of control at the Psychic's right; and he agreed to release her hand, to slide the luminous band up to her elbow so the hand might be used, etc.

In the séance he executed this agreement. His colleagues were baffled when their expectations of a blank were defeated; but after the medium had left the premises Code assembled them and explained to them what he had done in the séance. He did not tell them the story of his private sitting; he presumably left them to infer that he had acted entirely "on his own." That he had done the things during the séance which he claimed to have done, their own observations of the séance action plus their own newly found willingness to believe this fraudulent forced them to believe. For his entire statement therefore they took his word so far as the facts were concerned, and apparently raised no question of the propriety or motivation of his conduct.

In their private conference, Walter and Code had agreed that in

order not to "worry" Crandon, this conference would best be kept secret from him. Code and Margery made the same agreement after she emerged from trance. She accordingly expected Code to say nothing about the visit to the séance room, confining any revelations he might make to the conference with her in the living room and withholding any statement of the agreement alleged to have been reached. She said nothing about it herself; when Code was first quoted to her as having told of it she denied it; since then, of course, she must continue to deny it. Code is thus able to explain very plausibly the conflict, to which we shall in due course come, between Margery and himself as to what occurred on this day. I of course need not emphasize that the preceding few paragraphs represent my abstract of Code's story, and that I entertain the strongest reservations as to its correspondence with the facts.

It is not necessary to read into the last remark any accusation of direct and deliberate lying on Code's part. All who were in the slightest degree on the inside of the situation as it existed in July, 1925, knew that Code was a person of most unstable emotional make-up, and that he had the strongest specific emotional reactions toward the Crandons and toward every angle of the case. It is a fact that he derives the keenest intellectual pleasure out of his ability as a contortionist and amateur conjurer, out of his ability to reproduce fake psychical effects, out of his position as an exposer of mediums in general or in particular, and finally, like Houdini, out of his supposed ability to expose *any* mediumship. With this quirk of Code's mental make-up I had ample experience when I took him to Lily Dale with me in August, 1925, on a general scouting tour to see whether any of the mediums at that place were worthy of attention. Always his assumption was that the phenomena of each case were fraudulent and that all remaining for us to do was to learn how they worked.

A further fact known to all his friends was that Code's personal affairs at the time were in a troubled state; that his emotions were being run ragged by these troubles; that he came often to Lime Street seeking opportunity to discuss these troubles with Margery. His correspondence of the period with the Crandons gives every suggestion that his mental turmoil was eased by the advice which she gave him, and equally by the abstract factor of the contact which he had with her. She tells me that he more than once was reduced to tears in their talks about what he was best to do with himself. Certainly during the

two weeks in which I saw so much of him en route to and in Lily Dale, he was quite unable to conceal the degree to which his emotional life was being lived in Lime Street. One in particular of his letters to Margery gives a most extraordinary exhibit of the incoherent babbling of things better left unsaid. The document in question was a sort of farewell effusion, written after the denouement of the investigation and after he had left Boston for his new position in Delaware, and hence at a time when it seemed that there would be no further occasion for contact or correspondence. At one stage in late October of 1925, when both parties were firing broadsides at each other through the columns of the Boston *Herald*, the Crandons were so provoked by Code's part in the needless publicity that they had serious thoughts of publishing this document. Entirely as a matter of friendship, I wrote to him advising him of this, and suggesting that if he felt any compunction about having it appear in public he would do well to minimize his part in the published controversies. I suppose I should have been prepared to have him interpret this in accordance with the following extract from his British Proceedings article: "Mr. Bird warned me of the attack that would be made upon me, outlined the attack, and advised me that the less I had to say the better."

Now I have no wish to persecute Code. But I must spread these facts upon the record, for the simple reason that so very large a portion of the Harvard case against Margery rests upon his testimony. I have not the least doubt that Code's emotional state with reference to the case was such as to make accurate reporting by him quite out of the question. He was in no state to attempt observations of any description, or to remember what he had observed. Most certainly he was in no state to guard against subconscious fabrication, or against the zealous acceptance and championing of a story which he might have told in the first place under the impression that the end justifies the means. Once we have realized the degree to which the case against Margery depends on Code's evidence; the degree to which he was disqualified from testifying; and the degree to which anything he told his colleagues at any time was at once, automatically and uncritically accepted as necessarily valid, and made part of their case and basis of their further procedure—once we realize all this, we must feel that the gravest discredit attaches to the whole structure.

I have gone into some of the specific facts and charges in *B. vs. H.*, and others have been threshed over in *M. H. V.* I do not propose here

to review the entire controversy; but into certain aspects on which I have material not heretofore published I must go. Take for instance the matter of the anklets on June 29th. Evidently the prosecution must allege that the anklet was deliberately removed, and that such removal was habitual; evidently the defence must plead that it fell off accidentally and that this accident was unique. The evidence—even that adduced by the prosecution—is largely favorable to the defence. For the Crandons tell us that the anklet fell off on this date not through unaccountable eccentricity, but because it was different from and larger than the anklets previously used. It was the custom for the Psychic to bring with her to the Harvard séances the luminous control bands which she had in her possession for routine use in Lime Street. On the evening of June 29th, they tell us, they brought these bands as usual but they were not used. Instead, the record testifies:[14]

> The bands the Psychic wore had been made by the observers and substituted for the bands which she had brought with her. She had complained before the sitting that the ankle bands were too loose, and had attempted to tighten them with safety pins. The band's coming off during the sitting was thus made possible by the carelessness of the observers.

To this the Crandons add that the bands thus substituted were twelve inches in circumference, as against eight inches for her usual ones. The attempt to tighten them was unsuccessful and was abandoned; and to take up the superfluous length, the band, instead of being put snugly on the ankle, was placed across from the instep to the heel of the slipper, with no adequate support or fastening. One acquainted with trance restlessness would feel safe in predicting that the bands *would* come off.

I met Code in New York on the evening of September 9th, as he passed through the city en route to his new job in Newark, Del. We discussed the claims which I have set down above, and he put forward a counterclaim which I asked him to reduce to writing. As a result, he wrote me on September 11th to this effect:

> I made all the anklets and wristlets used at Harvard with the exception of those Margery brought with her. I measured them by my own wrists and ankles, not having Margery's handy at the time. They stretched somewhat in use. At first Margery wore

[14] *M. H. V.*, p. 76.

her own, which were painted on one side only and were so dim that we had difficulty keeping sight of them.[15] On one occasion, Shapley suggested on account of some phenomenon or other in the region of the foot that Margery wear a pair of ours instead of her own. On one occasion Walter permitted us to put a bright pair on her during a séance. It was customary to keep all the anklets exposed to light for some time before the séance and until they were needed. Then some one of us distributed them to the sitters.[16] At Emerson, I usually attended to this. At Hoagland's house on the 29th of June Hoagland took Margery[17] a pair of ours. There was no planting of large anklets on Margery at any time. The anklets were distributed at random from a common heap. Margery found her pair too large on June 29th, and reduced the size by pinning them with safety pins. Thus pinned, the anklets were precisely the size of her own, which were ten inches in circumference, quite large enough to slip on and off at will. There was no suggestion of this big anklet talk until June 30th. After the sitting of June 29th, in which the anklet had been reported off, Margery specifically called attention to the fact that they were so tight they cut into her ankles. This fact was verified at the time by Crandon, who removed the right anklet, and by Day, who removed the left. You must remember that at this sitting Walter had denied the anklet was off. At the sitting of June 30th Walter admitted the anklet was off, and covered himself by saying it was too big and had fallen off. This is the origin of the big anklet story, and it is nonsense. Margery never wore anklets big enough to *fall* off. Any elastic anklet big enough to wear is big enough to *take* off.

I have pointed out[18] that on their own showing of fact it took these young men six successful séances plus an accident to discover that a luminous garter can be removed from a lady's bare ankle if it is not in some way attached to the skin—or to a stocking. I now point out that Code's excess of enthusiasm for his story runs away with him. In the first place, if the garters, as pinned to take up the slack, were the same size as her own, they would not have cut into her ankles; so one of these statements is false. Further, a garter tight

[15] The seance records bear this out, so far as regards the matter of poor visibility.—J. M. B.

[16] In this connection, as well as in the light of the remark, a little earlier, about *all* the anklets used at Harvard, it should be pointed out that the custom was for *all* sitters to wear the luminous controls.—J. M. B.

[17] I.e., took upstairs to her dressing room.—J. M. B.

[18] *B. vs. H.*, p. 726.

enough to cut into the ankle I do not believe can be systematically removed by the use of the toes of the other foot alone, without sufficient noise and commotion to attract even the sluggish attention of such investigators as the first remark of this paragraph shows these to be. Getting it back on again would involve an easier problem, since here the toes may get under and around it while it hangs loosely on the foot. But to get it off, the toes must to some degree get under it as it sits upon the ankle, *so tightly as to cut in*. And they must do this without too much of noise or of synchronous movement of the two feet; for the *first* garter must be removed by a foot which carries its luminous control. Finally, Code's insistence that the garters were entirely proper and that the whole story of loose garters is a baseless fabrication suffers heavily in the face of the recorded statement that the Psychic "*had attempted* to tighten them with safety pins," plus the recorded admission that "the band's coming off was made possible by the carelessness of the observers." And when Code admits that the garters had to be tightened but still claims that the big anklet story is absolute fiction, to some degree he directly contradicts himself. No: the whole body of evidence suffers too much from the evident desire to make out a case.

I do not think that my favorable opinion upon the mediumship blinds me to the weight of evidence pro and con. It seems to me that, weighing all the factors here adduced, there is no valid evidence that the ankles were out of control other than through accident; and that the story told by the defence is in every respect as inherently plausible and as much in consonance with the records, as is that of the prosecution. And since the whole argument could so easily have been eliminated before it started by using stockings or plaster, the investigators ought to some extent to be bound by the results of their own stupidity. If they reported the phenomena valid, we should be entitled to throw them out on the ground of their bad control; must we not refuse to recognize their plea of fraud based upon that same bad control, and remind them that on their own showing all they can testify is, that they do not know what happened in their presence?

The only other point in Code's story which we need consider in any detail is his picture of his "private séance" with Walter, at which the plot was hatched for his confederacy on the evening of June 30th. It will of course be appreciated that this sitting was supposed either to turn out a blank, or to give action fundamentally different from that

of its predecessors. It did neither of these things; it gave admirable action, of approximately the usual sort.[18a] The other members of the group were very much at a loss to explain this in their own minds, until Code got them together after the séance and confessed that he had created the phenomena. He did not tell them of his conference with Walter, but let it be supposed that he had acted wholly on his own initiative. But in the ensuing week he told at least one of them privately about it, and by the time the report was ready for publication in the *Atlantic* they all knew of the claim in a general way.

I am not able to determine to what degree Code has told a single consistent story from the very beginning, and to what degree his story has been modified as he went along. In his British article, he gives what purports to be a contemporaneous documentary record, but one that is not at all impressive when analyzed internally. In this record, for instance, there occurs a deal of conversation between Code and Walter. Walter is represented as calling Code "Old Chap"; as using the words "awfully decent" in characterization of Code's conduct; as saying "Cheery-o" in farewell; and as speaking generally like an English schoolboy. Nobody who has ever once sat in Lime Street can possibly accept this as remotely parallel to Walter's manner, and any such person must wonder whether the record is not stamped on its face as apocryphal by these words which it seeks to put in Walter's mouth—whether these words are not explained by Code's knowledge that he was writing for an English audience.

Equally damning to the authenticity of this record is the picture which it gives of Walter's character. One who has seen and heard Walter's vigorous dealing with all the emergencies that have confronted him since the "Piece of String" adventure[19] of November, 1923, finds it utterly beyond credit to have him pictured as meeting *this* emergency with a whining, reiterated, "What are we going to do?" Walter solves his own problems, he doesn't bring them to his sitters for solution; and if he is baffled he says so in a straightforward fashion possessing no common factor with the exhibit which Code tries to give us. If Walter (a spirit, a prosopopesis, even a fake if you insist; I speak merely of the séance-room Walter as I have met him, without reference to what he really is) tried to assume the attitude in which Code puts him, he couldn't do it. One might as well represent Mr. Wilson begging his

[19] *M. M.*, Chapter XVI.

[18a] See open reference No. 33, Vol. 2, for comment by Hoagland on this and other points.

Cabinet for advice in a trying situation, or Mr. Ford torn in his mind over the advisability of spending a million dollars for a machine that would save ten dollars and six minutes in the manufacture of every car. No: this story, so long withheld and so patly produced, is clearly apocryphal.

Finally, we come to a specific denial of Code's story, *by a witness.* It has been hinted previously that when Code called at 10 Lime Street on the afternoon of June 30, 1925, he thought he was alone in the house with Margery but thought this mistakenly. As soon as the Crandons were aware of the nature of Code's story, Margery herself went through the formalities of recording her denial in due form; and at the same time they interviewed the witness of whom I speak, and got a signed statement from her. Getting both parties concerned before a notary was a matter of considerable difficulty and some procrastination. I doubt that this culminating step would ever have been reached had it not been for the stimulus provided through the publication in the British Proceedings of January, 1927. In the interval between November, 1925, and June, 1927, I ought to say, through misunderstanding by the Crandons with regard to the precise nature of an affidavit or through some looseness in the use of terms, the mere signed statement was sometimes spoken of by them as an affidavit, and knowledge of its existence became fairly general under that mistaken designation. Both affidavits in question follow:

Boston, Mass., November 24, 1925.

This is to certify that June 30, 1925, about noon, Mr. Grant H. Code came to call on me at my house at 10 Lime Street. At that time he was an Assistant in English at Harvard College and was a member of a group of young Harvard instructors who were having sittings at Harvard College with me.

He was admitted to the house by Mrs. Lizzie Waters and made his way up one flight, where I met him in what we call the book room. Mrs. Waters is what is called an accommodator, and occasionally comes to help in my domestic work.

He came to discuss the episodes of the sitting which had taken place the previous night, and incidentally to talk over his personal affairs, as a man might discuss them with his mother or sister. He stayed about twenty minutes and did not leave the book-room, brightly lighted with sunshine, until he left it to go out of the house.

There was no "sitting." There was no trance. We did not go to the séance room.

Mina S. Crandon.

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS

Suffolk, *ss.:* Boston, June 3, 1927.

Then personally appeared the above named Mina S. Crandon and made oath that the foregoing statement by her subscribed is true.

Before me,

WENDELL P. MURRAY,
Notary Public
My commission expires Dec. 13, 1929.

AFFIDAVIT OF MRS. LUCY K. WATERS

I, Lucy K. Waters, residing at 55 Hopedale Street, Allston, Massachusetts, hereby certify upon oath that in June of 1925, I was employed by Mrs. Le Roi G. Crandon, of 10 Lime Street, Boston, doing sewing work; that in the latter part of that month, in response to a ring at the front door, I admitted a gentleman who stated his name was Mr. Code, and that he desired to see Mrs. Crandon.

My attention was directed to his appearance because he wore no hat, and his socks were loose and hanging over the sneakers which he wore. I recall that his coat and trousers were not of the same color.

I went up the front stairs and spoke to Mrs. Crandon, who asked me to have the gentleman come up to the book room on the second floor, and he did come up the front stairs to that room, and I immediately went up the back stairs to a room on the same floor, where I took up some sewing. There are no doors between the room in which I was sitting, sewing, and the book room, and I was able to hear without difficulty the voices of the gentleman and Mrs. Crandon in conversation, but I did not overhear any of the words, but Mr. Code seemed to be very nervous and worried about something for I could hear him walking up and down, and his voice sounded as though he was sobbing a little.

He remained in that room about twenty minutes, and then went down the front stairs with Mrs. Crandon, and left the house. Neither he nor she left the book room at any time while he was there except when he was going out.

No one went upstairs to any room higher than the book room.

When Mrs. Crandon went down the front stairs with the gentleman, I went down the back stairs to the kitchen, for luncheon, and within a moment or two Mrs. Crandon came down to the kitchen, and we all had luncheon together.

I have previously given a statement of this matter to Dr. Crandon, about six or eight months ago, and I have also told Mr. Bligh Bond all of the facts which are stated above.

LUCY K. WATERS.

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS

Suffolk, *ss.:* Boston, June 3, 1927.

Then personally appeared the above named Lucy K. Waters, and made oath that the statements contained in the foregoing affidavit by her subscribed are true.

Before me,

WENDELL P. MURRAY,
Notary Public
My commission expires Dec. 13, 1929.

Now the above affidavits have their weak points and their inconsistencies, but I think all these are explicable on natural grounds and that they weaken the case for the defence little, if any. We shall have to conclude, for instance, that the sewing lady knows her own name better than Margery knows it. That Mrs. Waters does not attempt to fix the precise date of an eighteen-months-old observation is to her credit rather than to her discredit. As regards the obvious plea that the day of which she speaks is some other day on which Code came to the house, it is true that he came often; but I believe he will not deny that Mrs. Waters admitted him on June 30th, and that this was unusual if not unique. And if these affidavits be attacked on the ground of the long period elapsing between the date of which they speak and that on which they are drawn, I can only point out that Margery can hardly meet an accusation until it has been made, and that if she is telling the truth about the events of June 30th, she could not know of this accusation until she read of it in the *Boston Herald* or it was reported to her by some one having an earlier knowledge of it.

In point of fact Code claims credit for having told *his* story to his friends during the summer of 1925, and claims that what he finally published in 1927 is the same story. I will testify that the story of the above affidavits is the one which Margery has always told, from the moment when I first had knowledge of Code's claims about the private conference between himself and Walter; and I will point out that she is on no worse ground, as regards delay in getting it into a public document, than is Code.

If we are to reject the story that Code tells, we must have some sensible theory that will comport with the known and undisputed facts. Such a theory is not difficult of construction. Margery's own story of the interview of the afternoon of June 30th affords the only clue we require. She says that Code told her of the events of the previous séance; that he told her their belief as to the physical facts of the séance; and that he unfolded Hypothesis H to her in explanation of her share in these facts. He then explained that Crandon would undoubtedly go insane if he came to know all this; and proposed his own confederacy during the coming séance. It was in connection with this proposal that Margery said: "You frighten me." She turned it down emphatically, putting the refusal on the ground which she thought most likely to appeal to Code: that he would stand an excellent chance of detection, and that this would ruin him. After satisfying himself that the refusal was final he left. Even if one were willing to infer that she might go into trance and emerge again without knowledge that she had been "out," this supposition would be barred by the necessity for her going, consciously, with Code to the upper floor.

This story checks exactly with Code's, so far as it goes, and suggests that so far Code is telling the truth. If we then picture Code at the evening's sitting, still in the grip of his determination to prevent the dramatic exposure, we shall find him in control of the entranced Psychic and in a position to produce phenomena, to move her luminous control, etc., etc., to his heart's content, with neither her nor anybody else to say him nay. We cannot, therefore, deny his claim to a share in the phenomena of the evening; we can merely deny that he cooperated with Walter's or Margery's consent. He could do anything save drop her hand completely—the galvanometer control was in effect to prevent this. He *might* even shift the luminous control and his own point of contact with her arm, and then *imagine* that the phenomena were produced by the hand which he had thus rendered free and had thus put out of his immediate control. In point of fact, Shapley during this sitting of June 30th made certain observations, of which he drew up an independent and contemporaneous memorandum, in complete ignorance of Code's claims. This memorandum he left on his desk on sailing for Europe and it was found by his secretary and placed at the disposal of Code and his colleagues. While apparently not demanding the hypothesis that the medium's hand was free to the extent which the Harvard group would like to believe, this document is entirely consistent with such hypothesis.

So much for the bare facts of Code's behavior. Let us now examine the rationale of his conduct as he describes it to us. Was it a course of action likely to lead to the ends at which he tells us it was pointed? Was it a course which a rational person, free from emotional disqualifications, would have followed in pursuit of those ends? That it was not, appears inescapably from the very first moment when consideration began to be given the question of what the Harvard group were to do with their findings. From this moment, Code was in an impossible position. He himself tells us, in his *British Proceedings* paper:

> I could not bring myself to believe that an account of these tricks was an adequate explanation of the entire mediumship. In fact, it seemed to me that an account of these tricks published without a study of the subjective phenomena and of the human relations behind them would give, not a true but a false idea both of the mediumship and of the persons involved in it. Yet, as a member of an investigation committee, I had been limited to a study of the physical phenomena. Upon these phenomena only could I make a public report. The evidence which I could give that bore on the subjective phenomena and on the human side of the mediumship I felt that I had obtained in confidence and could not publish. Therefore I gave my complete view of the case to the Crandons and to my fellow investigators[20] and opposed as far as I was able publicity of any kind.

This seems a very polite and conservative way of saying that Code was between the devil and the deep blue sea. He couldn't permit his evidence to be published and he couldn't permit it to be withheld. That this dilemma would arise should have been evident from the first. Was it reasonable to suppose that a dozen or so excellent university men, having made a research of this degree of interest and importance, were going unanimously to agree not to publish anything about it? Such supposition was the height of idiocy. Of course one could hardly have predicted that one of them would go to the length of publishing it in a popular magazine in highly garbled form and of encouraging lurid newspaper stories based upon this publication; but this unexpectedness of denouement is a matter of degree only and not one of kind.

Code's procedure as he paints it was therefore one certain to

---

[20] Not quite true, of course; there were numerous things which he concealed from one of the Crandons, and for a time at least from his colleagues.—J. M. B.

involve him in precisely the dilemma in which he now found himself. Moreover, it was a procedure that could not possibly lead to the result which he was seeking. He admits this tacitly on the spot, by telling his colleagues that very evening what he had done; thereby reconstituting the emergency which he has just now relieved. It must have been evident to the muddiest intellect that Code's course could not possibly do more than postpone the crisis which he feared; and that in the postponement it would be made all the worse. So Code's whole conduct, if we accept his story, was idiotic and without effective motive.

There are numerous other grounds on which one must take exception to this story. For one thing, in conversation with me throughout the summer of 1925, he was always very emphatic in his endorsement of my objections to the *ex post facto* procedure of mediumistic investigation. This had been practiced upon Margery first by Houdini and later by McDougall, and conversation between Code and me on the subject was therefore not without plenty of illuminating material to serve as text. That you cannot collect the sitters after the medium is gone, and explain to them that she did thus and so, that the phenomena were produced by a fraud of which you were aware during the séance and which you could have prevented, but which you elected neither to prevent nor to record, is fully known to Code. Why, then, should we believe that at the first convenient opportunity he adopted this procedure as his own?

Again: Margery has been through the stress of exposure before. She kept her head admirably during the Houdini mess. If we read Dingwall's report with our attention centered upon the hypothesis of fraud, we shall find[21] an incident where, on this hypothesis, Dingwall had made a vastly more critical observation than anything Code ever claimed to have made. This record shows us the teleplasmic mass, which for the purposes of the present argument we assume to have been produced fraudulently from within the Psychic's body, lying inert upon her thigh. It must be got upon the table, and since Crandon is not in his accustomed place at the medium's right, she cannot free a hand for use in this service. She must therefore seize it with one of her hands held by one of the investigators, and thus held she must toss it upon the table. Its position is unfortunately such that the effort to reach it with her right hand, under Worcester's control, is out of the question; accordingly she must employ the left, held by Dingwall.

---

21 Proceedings, S.P.R.; Part 98, Vol. XXXVI; June, 1926; p. 133.

He tells me in conversation that by his announcement or by some other element of his behavior—I am not now positive which and am not now able to consult him—it must have been made evident to a fraudulent operator that he was fully conscious of the movement of the left hand and the possible significance of this. The incident therefore is altogether as critical as any situation that ever existed in the presence of the Harvard group collectively or of Code individually. Moreover, both personally and in virtue of his official connection Dingwall was a far more formidable figure than Code; and if Margery is going to break down and lose her nerve and weep on the methaphorical shoulder of her exposer, it will surely be in Dingwall's presence rather than in Code's. But she didn't! The most extreme advocate of the hypothesis of fraud will find that she never lost command of the situation with Dingwall for one split second, in the face of the most damning observations which such advocate could possibly conceive. After this, when Code asks us to believe that *his* elucidation to her of his wild and woolly hypothesis would break her down and strike panic in her heart to the point where she would as good as confess everything and make him an accomplice—well, he asks too much.

I think we may leave Code here, with the verdict that his story is quite incredible, and that it is not at all necessary to an understanding of what occurred on the two last days of the Harvard investigation. He will crop up once more, in Chapter XI, where we shall encounter another spasm of his extraordinary conduct, and one which may aid us in making a choice between idiocy and rascality as his mainspring. For the balance of the present chapter we need only consider one or two further aspects of the Harvard sittings which have not been wholly thrashed out in print. One of these relates to the claim of internal concealment of the wide variety of teleplasms produced during the séances. On at least two occasions, Margery was wearing sanitary napkins, indicating a condition which would make such concealment a physiological impossibility. In the text of the records there is no reservation from Dr. Fawcett about the reality of the menstrual condition; but there exist *ex post facto* statements by her, made at the time of newspaper controversy in October, and conveying the implied charge that the presence of the bandages was a blind, and that there was no evidence of their necessity. Later, in response to private inquiry by Hyslop, on my behalf and admittedly for citation in this volume, she made a statement of similar content; but one which was ambiguous and incomplete, and one whose ambiguity and incomplete-

MARGERY
HARVARD
VERITAS

A STUDY
in PSYCHICS

MARK W. RICHARDSON, A.B., 1889; M.D., 1894, *Harvard.*
CHARLES S. HILL, A.B., 1892, *Wesleyan; Harvard* L.S. 1895-7
ALFRED W. MARTIN, 1882, *McGill;* S.T.B., 1885; A.M., 1886, *Harvard.*
S. RALPH HARLOW, A.B., 1908, *Harvard;* A.M., 1919, *Columbia.*
JOSEPH DEWYCKOFF, *Lawyer.*
L. R. G. CRANDON, A.B., 1894; M.D., 1898; A.M., 1909, *Harvard.* F.A.C.S.

BLANCHARD PRINTING CO.
BOSTON
1925

The title page of an "anonymous" pamphlet; see p. 110.

ness were only cleared up after specific and leading questions had been put to her. The Crandons of course alleged at the time and have maintained ever since that the condition indicated by these napkins was present. It is not wholly impertinent to remark that Dr. Fawcett is an old friend of Damon's parents.

When I attended one of the Harvard séances, on June 22nd, the Psychic wore a pair of Mrs. Hoagland's bloomers, sealed above and below in such a way as to make impossible their undetected removal. This of course is a deliberately applied control for the prevention of anatomical concealment, and is of much more value than the fortuitous control afforded by the presence of catamenia. It was perhaps the most important single means of control used at this séance. Yet no mention was made of it in the record by the investigators, and had it not been for Walter's own humorous reference to the Psychic's "cast-iron breeches" it would not have got into the document at all.

It is incidents like this that lend some degree of color to Crandon's insistence that the whole Harvard exposure represents a deliberate attempt to discredit the mediumship, arising out of an anti-psychical prejudice in administrative circles at Harvard and gaining force as it was handed down through McDougall [23] to the young men working under his direction or influence. I have avoided this allegation of bad faith in the present text; but it is accepted by so many people that the story would be incomplete without at least a passing reference to it.

There remain one or two points to be mentioned, in which the *M. H. V.* pamphlet has been attacked by the Harvard group and their sympathizers. For this purpose we must cite an article by Prince, under the title "A Review of the Margery Case," which appeared [24] in more or less direct response to the pamphlet. In some respects it is merely amusing, as when it cites the pamphlet as "Anonymous." I reproduce the *M. H. V.* title-page and invite my readers to judge how microscopic a search for the names of the authors has been prosecuted by Prince. I suppose he would rest his case on the absence of the little word "by." But surely there is no ambiguity about the authorship and responsibility; and any effort to make it appear that there is smacks strongly of sheer animus.

The most serious charge brought against the pamphlet is that instead of republishing the Harvard séance notes in their original

[23] See Chapter II.
[24] *Am. Jour. Psychology;* July, 1926; XXXVII, p. 431.

form, as it claims to do, it makes important additions and subtractions. Under the former head we are told: "A paragraph of 108 words on page 182, declaring that in 'our minds' is 'no doubt that this mediumship is one of the most important ever recorded,' masquerades as part of the séance notes." If this is not a deliberate misstatement, it constitutes at least a very stupid attempt at critical distortion. The facts are these:

The séance notes are given, in what amounts to one chapter of the pamphlet. This chapter starts with an extensive discussion by the pamphlet authors; they finally come to the point where they say, in effect: " the full séance notes follow "; these are given; and the authors are then at liberty to continue their own text until they regard it as complete. I know no precedent for the claim that we must begin a new chapter after every extensive quotation.

The typographical arrangement is an unfortunate one. But this is due wholly to a too slavish following of the typed séance records delivered to Crandon by the Harvard group. These were not uniform in arrangement and heading; and they contained subheads which occupied a more prominent position and were in larger type than the major headings. Some of the records had no heading at all. This ill-arranged mass of material was sent to the printer with strict instructions to follow copy; and he followed it " out the window," in composing-room jargon. When he got to the ultimate end of the séance records, which technically constitute a 44-page quotation from which quotation marks were wisely omitted, he inserted a rule and went on with the authors' text. That the records are so badly arranged typographically as to make the latter portion of them look like an independent chapter from Harvard, is not the fault of the pamphlet authors. That, having completed their quotation of the records, they had only 108 words more to say, is perhaps unfortunate; but one would hardly demand that they go on after they were through merely to satisfy Prince's sense of typographical propriety. If the arrangement provokes the reader to wonder about the authorship of the paragraph in question, he will find in it amongst other things a statement that " those in charge of the mediumship gladly offer opportunity " to all proper observers to see it. If he does not then find it perfectly clear that this paragraph is by the authors of the pamphlet, I am indeed sorry for him. Had I been editing this volume, as Prince at one point insinuates to have been the case, I should have arranged this paragraph in a way that would have left even him with no excuse for a

deliberate misunderstanding of its origin; but I should have realized that in so doing I was practicing the niceties of editorship, to which one not by training and instinct an editor cannot rationally be held. There is no addition to the record here, and no sensible reader can imagine that there is; nor can I imagine that Prince honestly thought there was. What he was criticizing was the arrangement merely, and he would have been more honest to say so.

The facts about the alleged subtraction are of different order. On this ground, Prince says:

> Although various addenda of the earlier and uncertain stage of proceedings are properly printed, including one written twelve days after the sitting, Hoagland's addendum of 210 words relating to his discovery of the leg, made [25] during the sitting and announced later the same evening,[26] is entirely expunged, although regularly incorporated with the official notes and typed on the same page with the matter [included in *M. H. V.*]. Also the final 4½ pages of June 30th, partly composed of dictaphone notes of the same evening and partly of addenda supplied by members of the group, . . . [the ellipsis covers extended description of the content of these addenda], are completely obliterated.

It is difficult to regard these charges as other than maliciously distorted. The *M. H. V.* pamphlet makes no claim to complete presentation of anything other than the *séance notes*. Crandon was a sitter; and I think it will not be seriously maintained that séance notes can be continued after his departure. Anything resulting from such continuation is plainly an addendum, by the sitters who choose to make it. The *M. H. V.* authors have faithfully published everything which the Harvard group *dared* to dictate in Crandon's presence. Anything dictated or written in his absence, and which on submission to him he found acceptable, was granted the privilege of admission which it could not properly demand; and all such matter is distinguished, for the reader's eye, from the séance records proper. Anything dictated or written in Crandon's absence and which he does not accept enjoys no privileges whatever; Crandon and his co-authors are entirely within

---

[25] The *discovery*, not the *addendum*. Application to Prince's text of his own ridiculous standards would easily lead to the charge that he was here seeking to make it appear that the addendum had been dictated during the séance.—J. M. B.

[26] To his colleagues, after the departure of the Crandons. Here, I cease playing with the idea of censure, and actually censure Prince for withholding mention of the *ex post facto* element involved.—J. M. B.

their rights in refusing the leave to print to such material. It is not part of the record; it is part of the scheme of interpretation agreed upon by certain sitters and rejected by others. Why should these others be asked to print it? If any further emphasis on its *ex post facto* character were required, I need only cite the occurrence, in the document which Prince demands be printed as part of the June 30th record, of remarks by Wolbach and Day, who *were not even present* on that date! McDougall's notion that he is privileged to make any sort of *ex post facto* observation he chooses is bad enough; but it pales into nothingness beside this quaint demand that Crandon be bound in his publication of the case by such *ex post facto* elements originating *outside the responsible membership* of the investigating group!

Let me repeat: the séance records are complete and correct in *M. H. V.*, barring the slight expurgations and the alteration throughout from "Crandon" to "FH,"[27] to which Prince admits he doesn't really object. But when the other sitters attempt to incorporate riders upon the séance records, Crandon and his colleagues reserve the privilege of saying whether these may be admitted as representing the sense of *all* the sitters, or excluded as coming only from one element thereof. If the Harvard investigators don't like that method of publication, they are respectfully advised to publish their own records at their own expense. They may then incorporate as much extraneous matter of their own as they will, and exclude as much of Crandon's comment as seems to them damaging to their case.

[27] To gain uniformity with the style of *M. M.*, and to avoid all suggestion that Crandon was capitalizing the case.—J. M. B.

CHAPTER X

The Bell-Boxes of Early 1925

By the Editor

One of the devices that has been longest and most freely used as a séance room tool for Walter's manipulation involves one or another application of the general idea of the closing, by his telekinetic agency, of an electric switch; which of course is followed by the lighting of a lamp or the ringing of a bell or the functioning in any predetermined way of the circuit in which the said switch is wired. This procedure is in fact such an integral part of the case that an exception must be made to our general rule of not summarizing in this volume the work done in 1923–24 and chronicled in my previous book. We must have here an outline of the early developments in this department of the phenomena, in order to examine understandingly the sequence of 1925–26 events. Further, we have now come to a place where the story of the bell-boxes constitutes a vital element in the history of the Harvard exposure. We must therefore at this point interrupt the latter long enough to enable us to set down the former.

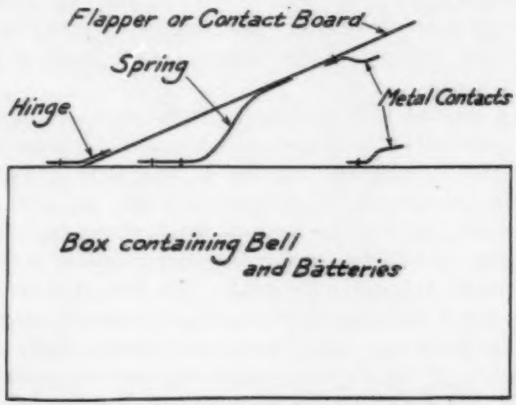
The idea was Comstock's originally, and in its original form involved the use of a telegraph instrument. This was wired into a bell circuit, so that the bell could be rung by closing either the key or the switch of the telegraph. At about this time, however, there arose a scheme of séance philosophy which pictured Walter as much better able to work upon objects that offered a high ratio of surface to volume, or to weight, or to force required for their operation. In response to this idea, I designed and constructed a contact mechanism consisting of two eight-inch-square boards, hinged together along one edge of each and held apart in the shape of a V by a spring. At corresponding points on their inner surfaces were fastened metal contacts. If the boards were pressed together against the resistance of the spring, the V would close until these pieces of metal touched; and when wired into an electrical circuit of any sort, the device then constituted a switch. Moreover, it was a switch which was particularly designed for facility of operation by Walter, under the scheme of philosophy which I have just outlined.

This contact apparatus was originally a separate unit, which could be wired into any type of circuit. During July, 1924, a fixed routine was established of using it with a bell. The next logical step came with the creation of a permanent housing, in a locked wooden box, for the bell with its batteries; and as a matter of further convenience, the contact device was then firmly fastened to the top of this box. The wires issued from holes in the sides of the box and ran to the contact plates; barring such portions of their lengths as were thus exposed, all the electrical portions of the ensemble were inside the box and inaccessible to fraud.

A detailed account will be found in *M.M.* of the conditions under which this apparatus was used in the séances, and of whatever of climax of demonstration it achieved. At first it rang only in darkness, but with all sitters save one excluded from the room, and with conditions of hand and foot control of the medium which wrung from Carrington a definite verdict of validity. Later there was initiated a slow process of working toward ringing in the light. The bell, at a typical séance of late 1924, would first ring, freely and spontaneously, as it stood on the table in the darkness; with Crandon sometimes wholly responsible for hand control of the Psychic and sometimes other sitters sharing this with him, but with no valid safeguard against confederacy from other quarters, and usually with none against the use of head or foot by the Psychic herself. Then the bell would ring on the table in an interval of red light, during which great freedom of exploration was permitted the sitters, in search of an external connection. It would next ring on the table in red light in response to requests from the sitters, who would be instructed to ask for arbitrary combinations of long and short peals. Finally, it would ring spontaneously, while being carried about the room by various sitters, to extreme distances from Margery running as high as twelve feet. All these items were brought to a point where they were obtained in a single séance, successively and practically on demand; and the closest examination of the box, internally, before the séance, was permitted any sitter. But ringing *at command while the box was off the table and in the hands of a sitter* Walter pictured as adding severe difficulties to those which he had to meet in the other acts; so, while he very occasionally gave this extreme of performance, it did not become part of the routine.

The spring originally installed to keep the contact boards separated was a spiral one. The boards were kept from opening beyond a certain

distance by a strip of cloth tacked across one of the open sides of the V; and slight depressions in the inner surface of each board received the ends of the spring. Thus the spring held the boards apart; and the boards, under constriction by the cloth strip, in turn held the spring in place. McDougall, in the course of his exposure to the bell-ringing in October and November, 1924, conceived the idea that the



Diagrammatic Sketch of Scientific American Bell-box

presence of the cloth strip might in some way add to the possibilities of fraud. To permit its elimination, a strip spring was substituted, fastened to the lower contact board and bearing against the upper one, as diagrammed. This eliminated all tendency for the top contact to fly over backward, the normal position of the spring holding it nicely, an inch or so out of contact position. At about the same time, the contacts were redesigned and improved, so that there might be no element of uncertainty to the eye, whether contact existed or not. The diagram makes this, too, clear. The changes produced no noticeable effect upon the séance action; ringing of the bell proceeded in just the way it had been proceeding, and the progress toward more brilliant performances under more brilliant conditions continued without noticeable acceleration or deceleration.

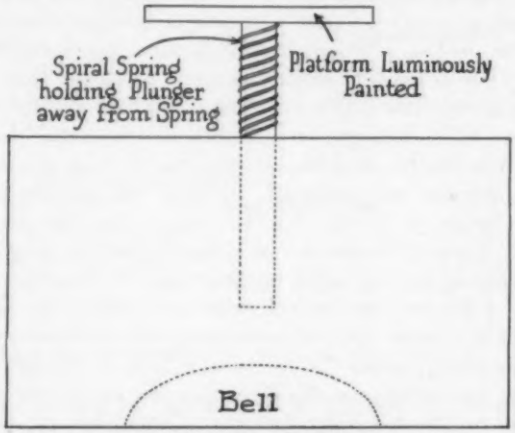
The bell-box was not used during Dingwall's sittings, except that in the very informal séance of December 30th, 1924, it gave its usual performance, concluding with ringing while he held it aloft and turned with it in his hands. He had no suggestions to offer as to how the

thing might be done fraudulently. But he took a violent dislike to the apparatus, shaking his head again and again and exclaiming that it was "most unfortunate" that it had ever been brought into existence. So far as I could ever get anything out of him on this head, his objections were based upon the fact that, when the bell rang, he wanted to know exactly what had happened; and he did not see how he was to decide whether the contact board had been depressed, or the current carried across the gap between the contacts on a psychic bridge of some sort, or the ringing produced by some manner of psycho-electrical trick inside the box, or even by a purely telekinetic manipulation of the bell-clapper inside the box. I thought that to some degree he exaggerated this difficulty; he is the only critic who so far as I know feels any doubt that the contact board is depressed when the bell rings. And if his criticism were valid, it might be met with the rejoinder that a determination of *how* Walter rang the bell was exactly what was *not* in mind when *this apparatus* was designed; all that was contemplated was a rigorous exclusion of fraud. In this respect the electrical bell-box is superior to a purely mechanical one, since it permits long continuous periods of ringing during which various tests or examinations can be carried on; while any mechanical substitute evolved by Dingwall or any other person limits us to instantaneous and isolated blows on the bell with something acting like a hammer. It is strongly suggested that his true animus against the bell-box arose out of the fact that it was designed by the Scientific American Committee, of which he has never been able sufficiently to express his contempt.

Dingwall, however, faced the necessity of providing Walter with "toys" of one sort or another for telekinetic and teleplastic manipulation during his séances; and as one of these he designed a mechanical bell-box. An ordinary clapperless gong was enclosed in a box, in the upper side of which there was a small hole. Through this hole there protruded a stick of wood, which was held away from the bell by a spring. If struck a smart blow, however, the stick would descend against the bell, ring it sharply once, and rebound under the spring's recoil to its normal position. Attached to the upper end of this striker was a horizontal plate some five inches square; and this was marked with luminous paint so that when Walter used the apparatus, there might be seen a silhouette of his terminal with which he did the striking. This device, which is diagrammed, was used more or less freely in Dingwall's séances; and when he left, it remained in Lime

Street, and was used in subsequent séances. The same applies to the electrical bell-box of Scientific American model, which is still in use, with the addition of a spot of luminous paint on its contact board so that this may sometimes be seen to move in the dark. In future discussion and description, we may refer to these two pieces of apparatus as the DB and the SAB.

After Dingwall's departure, the SAB was restored to its position of prominence in the routine of the sittings. Like the miscellaneous tele-



The Major Features of the Dingwall Principle for Mechanical Bell-box Construction

kinesis of Chapter VI, the performance given with it was so standardized, along the lines of the summary of several paragraphs above, that we need give no detailed account of its operation save when this involves something of novel character or outstanding demonstrability. An instance of this novelty is seen immediately, in the record for February 15th, 1925:

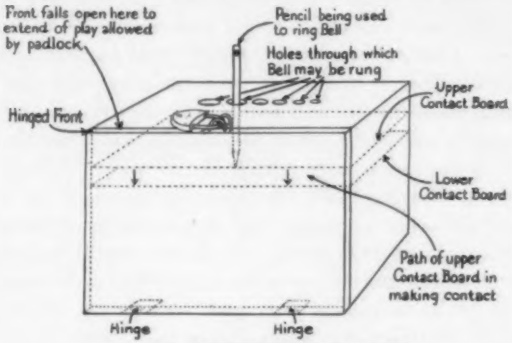
> He then did a new stunt. In red light he pushed down the cover of the SAB to a full excursion of an inch and a half, very slowly, until the bell finally rang. Then with equal slowness he allowed it to spring back. He then allowed Mrs. Allison to pick it up. It started ringing after it was in the air, and she then turned slowly around through 360 degrees and put it back upon the table, still ringing. It stopped in the dark [after the red light had been put

out at the conclusion of the experiment]. While it was ringing up in the air, however, there were two momentary stops.

If we address our attention to the possibilities of fraud in the ringing of this bell-box, certain things may be ruled out at once. Any one may explore the surface of the flapper with a magnet, and verify that it lacks magnetic properties. One species of skeptic clings pertinaciously to the idea of radio fraud, though any sitter may satisfy himself that the box carries nothing which conceivably could function as a radio receiver. Conventional magic might most profitably attempt the effect by misdirection of attention, in connection with the ringing of some other bell, elsewhere in the room. This theory is met by the facts that the flapper's motion is often observable, and that the ringing is often located in the box beyond possibility of error; also by my dictaphone records of Chapter XIV carrying the sound of the bell-ringing. The bell can obviously be rung, and synchronism obtained with the flapper's motion, if we run a wire or other connection from a guilty hand to this member; but the procedure adopted in the séance room is aimed first of all at excluding this most elementary of frauds, and is adequate to the purpose—so adequate, in fact, that no current criticism of the mediumship revolves about this hypothesis. Refusal to accept the SAB ringing as genuine now invariably falls back upon a plea originated by the conscientious objectors from Harvard—a plea that gives critical importance to the intervals of darkness that separate the ringing episodes. Margery is pictured as freeing a hand from her husband's control, and as manipulating the spring with this hand until the contact is all but closed. Preliminary ringing in darkness as the box stands on the table represents experiment and working test whereby she knows that the spring is just right. Then as the sitter takes the box in hand and rises and moves about, the constant small resultant jarring is supposed to cause the contacts to vibrate into and out of touch, producing the ringing.

This picture does not square with the facts. First, the only sounds that I have been able to get out of the box by the technique described are a series of highly staccato pickings at the bell, lasting each the merest fraction of a second and hardly to be called rings at all. If one wants continuous ringing, one must apparently bend the spring down so sharply that ringing *starts* while the bell stands by on the table, which almost *never* occurs in the séances; and under these conditions, accidental jarring is hardly enough to *break* contact and cause

the momentary silences. If one be content with tickings of the bell, these are to be got only by shaking the box to a degree going equally beyond accident, and leading to an audible dropping together of the metallic contact points which is more noticeable than the ringing itself and which is absent in the séance. Again; the theory *seems* to meet the fact in that ringing in the séances usually stops only after the bell is



The Hole Bell-Box of Chapter XI

back on the table and the light has gone out and opportunity has thus been given for reverse manipulation of the spring; but it conspicuously fails to meet the fact that the ringing here, which has been pictured as dependent upon the vibration from an unsteady arm, continues without modification after the box is put down.

Finally, while the bell-box acts are given always substantially as described, there now and again occurs, accidentally or through design, a critical variation in detail. Thus, under the theory outlined, the bell should ring the instant it leaves the table; in fact, it often does not start until it is very well indeed away from the table. Then, too, on numerous occasions the generalization that the bell continues to ring after the box is set down and until after the light goes out, has been contradicted. The box has been known to stop its ringing on the table before the light was turned off, and even while it was still in the hands of the sitter who had carried it about. And while the rings are always long enough to support the contrast which I have drawn between them and the effect obtainable by tampering with the spring, a notable variation is observed in the number and length of the silent intervals. Often these are quite long; and when they are so, they are not usually punc-

tuated by momentary or staccato rings, as would be the case if silence or ringing was due to jarring of the spring.

We may then proceed with the records: in connection with featureless performances of the SAB, merely giving the date and the name of the sitter who lifted or carried the box or turned around with it; and in connection with important episodes which add anything to the picture of validity, giving the full record so far as it involves the bell-box.

On February 22d, J. H. Brown was the engineer, as we may call the sitter who handles the box during the séance. On March 22d, 25th and 29th, it performed only while standing on the table; the same restriction applies to April 4th. On April 8th, Holmyard was the engineer; and the record tells us explicitly that the ringing began only after he had it well off the table. On the 10th, Millea was the engineer, and the record stresses the intermittency of ringing. On the 12th, after the ringing on the table in red light to the order of various sitters which *always* is given when the box performs at all, we find that:

> He had Miss Pierce pick up the SAB and it rang in the air while she held it; then he had her pick it up again, to show that it does not always ring when picked up. All this was in good red light.[1]

On April 18th, Walton was the engineer; on the 19th, Button. The record here explicitly states that there was intermittent ringing. On the 21st, Dennett engineered the box; on the 22d, it rang only on the table. For April 24th we may give the full record of the SAB performance:

> Walter rang the SAB the given number of times, as requested, in red light,[2] by Andrews, Mrs. Andrews and Mrs. Hale, successively. He then allowed Andrews and Mrs. Andrews successively to pick up the SAB, and it rang intermittently while each turned through 360 degrees. The ringing here began and ended in the red light. He then had Andrews pick up the box after Walter had

[1] But not all in the one interval of light, of course. In case the record may seem ambiguous to the captious critic, I state specifically that the second demonstration which it mentions was a success; Miss Pierce picked up the box freely and it did not ring at all.—J. M. B.

[2] The sitter is always instructed to give his request only after the red light has come on, and it is met in this same interval of light. I think the point a somewhat strained one; but the obvious idea is to prevent tampering with the box after the order has been voiced.—J. M. B.

removed his force, to show that it did not always ring when picked up.[3]

On April 25th and 28th, the teleplasmic hand was seen in red light ringing the SAB; details are given on pp. 36–39. On May 8th, Walter acted as his own critic, as he so often does:

> In red light, under instructions, Edwards picked up the SAB, which then in the air rang intermittently while Edwards turned a full circle. The success of this was not entirely satisfactory to Walter, so he repeated the same thing twice, the box being once lifted by Lawrence and once by Edwards again.

On May 13th, Kwaran and Lupton engineered the box; on the 18th, Dennett and Stratton; on the 30th, Clement; on June 2d, Griscom; on the 8th, some sitter unnamed; on the 11th, Day. On the latter date, "Walter immediately after told Day to pick it up again and it did not ring."

The very admirable performance with the bell-box during my formal sittings of June 18th, 19th and 20th is given in detail in the full records of these sittings, in Chapter XIII. Especially on the first of these dates the record adds something to the preëxisting structure.

During the period covered by the above excerpts, the Dingwall model, mechanical bell-box (DB) was being used more or less as a routine instrument for telekinesis and luminous silhouetting. For the former purpose it was ridiculously inferior to the SAB, of course; for the latter purpose it was available and the SAB was not, since the one has a luminous platform and the other has not. The telekinesis of this box is seldom of sufficient interest to be described, falling rather under the dates[4] on which routine telekinesis is read into the record by title; its use as a background for silhouette is described in Chapter V. This is obviously of such fundamentally distinct nature that it need not be covered in detail in the same chapter with the electrical bell-box.

---

[3] Of course, under the oblique hypothesis, this means merely that the spring has been restored to full tension in the intervening darkness.—J. M. B.

[4] See page 60.

CHAPTER XI

The Curious History of the "Hole Bell-Box"

By the Editor

Through their routine use during the first half of 1925, the two bell-boxes which I have described and whose performances I have chronicled in the preceding chapter came under the frequent observation of Messrs. Code, Hoagland and Co. These observers, although they built a new and improved DB as stated on page 86, were not greatly interested in this model, for the reason that I have advanced: that it could not be used for continuous peals enabling it to be examined while in action. And to the design of the SAB, which would permit this examination, they advanced what they regarded as a critical objection. The contacts and portions of the wires were exposed, in the open; and this should not be. The entire outfit, including especially all portions of the electrical circuit, should be enclosed. In principle this is simple enough; all one need do is take the entire SAB unit and enclose it within another, outer box, with a hole or holes through which Walter may project his forces or his terminals to depress the flapper; or through which a material striker similar to that on the DB may pass, to be worked upon by Walter in the open. Both these principles were employed in the construction of a series of bell-boxes manufactured by the Harvard group, and used in the séances of the late spring and early summer over which they had supervision. With this super-critical insulation of the working parts of the bell-box against fraud one may sympathize, even though one be at a loss to picture in precise terms what fraud might be committed on the external wiring of the SAB.

The Harvard group, first and last, constructed several bell-boxes of different design, all aimed in the direction indicated by the above remarks. One of them was got, in effect, by duplicating the SAB and putting it inside a bigger box, with means for access through the top of this to the hinged flapper within. This came to be known as the Code bell-box, and we may so denominate it herein. Their much more complicated ultimate masterpiece of bell-box design was different from this,

and far more ingenious. The initial idea behind its construction was the desire to learn more of Walter's terminals. So a long, narrow outer shell was contemplated for the box, with a row of holes in its top of different sizes. As reduced to practice there were six of these holes, and their diameters ran from a full inch down to a sixteenth. Each hole was surrounded by a quarter-inch-wide ring of luminous paint. They were arranged along the top of the box in line and in order of size, so that there would be a minimum of difficulty in associating any observed silhouetting with the diameter of the hole at which it occurred.

In view of the fact that pressure might thus be exerted upon the contact member inside the box over quite a wide range of its surface, it was now deemed advisable not to have this hinged, as in the SAB; for if it were so hinged, more pressure would be needed to ring the bell through one hole than through another. The contact member was therefore hung in an ingeniously devised rubber cradle; and the contact members, instead of being small bits of sheet metal as in the SAB, were sheets of copper substantially the full cross-sectional size of the box. The net result was that a uniform pressure would depress the wooden and rubber intermediaries and bring about contact at some portion of these copper sheets, regardless of what point on the wooden member received this pressure. To open the box for examination or for renewal of the batteries, one of the long faces was hinged; and this was not the top, as in previous bell-boxes, but one of the vertical faces. This face was hinged at the bottom and padlocked at the top. When unlocked, it of course would fall open away from the box. And being locked by staple and padlock, it of course did not stand snugly in position; it rather had a play of something like a thirty-second of an inch, and as the box stood on the séance-room table there would be always a crack of that width along one entire side of the top. This could have been avoided if the top piece had lapped over the sides; instead of that, the sides came up flush with the top. The drawing (page 120) is intended to exhibit the critical features of this box as the story will bring them out, without complicating the issue with any superfluous lines. By way of further illustrating the mechanical action involved in the ringing of this bell-box, a pencil is shown inserted into one of the holes and about to depress the upper board into contact position.

One further feature remains to be mentioned. Upon the upper face of the wooden contact member inside the box there could be fastened carbon paper, clay, or any other substance designed to take

an impression of some sort from the terminal used in ringing the bell. Such terminal would have to enter the box to a depth of about one and one-half inch in order to depress the wooden member to the contact point. Code et al claim that all the marks ever got on the carbon (see pp. 90, extreme top; 125, June 25th record; 137–9) were very evidently made by use of a pencil as "terminal."

This piece of apparatus was dubbed the "Hole bell-box" by the Crandons, and we shall so call it, designating it as HB for short. Code brought it with him to the Lime Street séance of June 25th, the record for which tells us:

> The new bell-box was put on the table and Walter's hand could be seen almost at once. He penetrated the three biggest holes with a stiff enough terminal to be able, as we found later, to scratch the carbon papers clearly. There was not enough stiffness in the terminal, however, to ring the bell; a pressure of about nine pounds was required. Each hole that he penetrated seemed to be completely filled by the entering terminal. Walter said that if the spring could be made less stiff[1] he could ring the bell without difficulty through the three biggest holes at least.

Code took the HB away with him when he left Lime Street that night. It was presumably present at the Harvard sittings on the 29th and 30th, but did not come into use; the records printed in *M. H. V.* indicate the extent to which other models of bell-box were used by the Harvard group and rung by Walter; into this I need not here go. Then, following the promulgation of Hypothesis H,[2] and while there still existed a friendly feeling between the Crandons and some at least of these investigators, the Doctor asked Code whether they would not turn over to him, for subsequent use in the Lime Street séances, such of their apparatus as they felt they had no more use for. I do not see just how Code could consistently meet this request, since he was as emphatic as it is humanly possible to be in behalf of the proposition that the mediumship must be dropped to avoid disastrous psychological reactions on the medium and her husband. Nevertheless, he did meet it; and the HB was among the apparatus thus turned over.

Its first performance in Lime Street came when it was employed to considerable degree and with surprising effect in my "official"

---

[1] He was talking in terms of previous experience; this box has no spring. The spring effect is got from the rubber suspension.—J. M. B.

[2] *Journal, A.S.P.R.*, Dec., 1925, pp. 718–9; and above, p. 94.

séances of July 16th-18th, the records of which will be found in full in Chapter XIV. For the immediate present purposes, however, it may be well to summarize the facts with reference to the HB from these séances. Walter rang it with all six of the holes sealed up in thoroughly effective fashion; and my theory that he was gaining entry to the box by the crack along the upper front edge was met when he permitted us to seal this, too, and continued to ring the box as merrily and with as complete command of its action as ever.

I did not happen to see Code during my July visits; but when I was in Boston for my sittings of August I saw a lot of him, in connection with a project involving his assisting me in another investigation. Following this, I drew up a statement on August 15th which in some measure duplicates what I have already set down herein; but the general desirability of citing contemporaneous documents impels me to give it in full, despite the repetition:

> It will be recalled that on several occasions in July, the HB was rung by Walter when the holes and the orifice along the lid were both sealed. At this time it was Crandon's impression that he had not the key to the box; so I postponed any careful examination until I might get access to the interior without forcing the lock.
>
> On the morning and afternoon of Saturday, August 15th, I had long conferences with Code. I described to him the way this box had been rung with a seal over all the openings I had been able to find through which it could be rung. Code stated that he himself could ring the box under the same conditions. I asked him whether it was intentionally in a condition permitting this; he said it was, and gave the following history:
>
> As originally designed and constructed, there was no "gimmick" about the box. It could be rung through the holes and, though that was not the intent, doubtless through the crack. But following the séances of June 29th and 30th Code began to sit in his apartment, for test purposes, in exploration of the possibilities of fraud, and with his colleagues as "sitters." At this time and in this connection, he rebuilt the box, incorporating in it means whereby it might be rung in some fashion other than provided for in its original design. He did not state what the gimmick was, though I gave him opportunity to do so; I did not ask him outright, since it became evident that he did not wish to tell me. He did not state what the motive was, either, though equally I gave him opportunity here. While he was using the "gimmicked" box for their mystification, he did not inform his colleagues that it was

in a different condition from that in which it had been presented to Walter; whether he ever told them this, he did not indicate.

As regards motive, I must comment unfavorably. The criticism advanced against the original SAB was that part of the electrical system was external to the box. The argument was made that the entire electrical mechanism, and particularly the means for making and breaking the circuit, should be housed within the locked shell. The Code bell-box[3] was designed to meet this argument, and after it the HB was put out as a further improvement. It involves a fundamental contradiction, and a reflection upon the good faith of the whole argument, when we find a gimmick incorporated into the HB which permits the bell to be rung by a manipulation outside the box, such as we shall see to be the case here.

Code did not indicate whether the gimmicked box had been used in the Harvard sittings.[4] But when Crandon asked, as a favor, the delivery to him of the apparatus made by the Harvard boys for which they had no further use, there was turned over to him, among other things, the HB. Code stated that he meant to restore it to its original condition but had no opportunity to do this; that failing this, he meant to notify Margery of its gimmicked condition. He stated that he delivered the box to Lime Street in person, finding the Crandons out; that he made several subsequent efforts to notify them by telephone; but that he had succeeded only in informing Margery that he had had the bell-box ring for him in white light in his room. It was not at all clear to me why he was dependent upon the telephone; or why, if he was able to tell her half the story, he could not tell her all of it.[5] It is a fact that Margery knows of Code's claim to have heard the bell ring in his room in daylight; but she puts it in just those words, and does not in the least understand that this involved a gimmick. She knew that Code had told his colleagues about this white light ringing in his room, and suggested that he'd best have a care, or they would think he was crazy. She displayed bewilderment as to just how Code reconciled his claims against her and against mediumship in general with this story of the bell's ringing for him. I am altogether inclined to believe that this represents her true state of knowledge and belief and her true reaction. If she understood that there was a gimmick in the box, under the hypo-

[3] See p. 123.

[4] At this time I had not access to the records which would have shown that it was not. This makes another very cogent reason for not using it at all, either gimmicked or in its original state, in Code's experimental sittings.—J. M. B.

[5] This seems to comport well with the atmosphere of mystery and melodrama surrounding his letter to me which I quote on p. 91.—J. M. B.

thesis of fraud she would keep quiet about it and try to find it for her own use, while under that of validity she would seek my aid in finding and eliminating it.

The net result is that I must be acutely suspicious of the whole episode. Why attach a gimmick to this box at all? Why turn it over to Crandon in gimmicked condition? Why fail to inform Crandon and Margery of the presence of the gimmick? Why attempt to notify her, rather than Crandon? Why make such an ineffectual attempt at this notification?

Code told me that the gimmick was of such character that examination of the *inside* of the box would not reveal it. This suggested a short-circuit, so cleverly concealed that the wood-work of the box would have to be torn apart to find it. I went back to Lime Street to look for the gimmick, and as the obvious attack I looked for external means of short-circuit. The outside of the box carries an extreme number of metal parts; two hinges, a padlock with plate and staple, and an enormous array of screws. Operating with a length of wire, I tried the effect of setting up connection between all possible pairs of these members. After some fifty failures, I succeeded. Either of two screws holding one end of the box in place constitutes the one terminal; either of three screws serving a similar purpose at the other end of the box serves as the other. In addition, it is evident that the wire carrying this trick circuit runs along the woodwork of the side of the box; for a certain particular screw along that side can also be used as a terminal for the short-circuiting. This screw accidentally taps the shorting wire; by screwing it out to the extent of about 3/32 inch, this tapping is relieved, and then one can set up the short-circuit only by using the terminals at the opposite ends of the box.[6]

Crandon was able, this time, to produce the key; so I examined the interior of the box. Midway between top and bottom, a shelf corresponding in length and width to the box itself divides the interior into two closed compartments. The large number of screws seen in the outside surface of the box arises in good part out of the necessity for having a row of screws clear around the box to hold this shelf. In the lower compartment are mounted the batteries and bell. On the upper face of the partition is fastened an extensive copper sheet. A second board, of approximately the same dimensions, is suspended above this shelf by four strips of rubber, one at its each corner. These strips are tacked to the board in question, and to the ends of the box just under

[6] Code subsequently verified these inferences as to the intent of the gimmick, and the accidental character of the role played by the screw at the side.—J. M. B.

the top. Pressure on the suspended board elongates these rubbers and permits the board to descend. On its lower face is a second copper sheet corresponding in size and position to the one on the upper face of the shelf. Wires from battery and bell run visibly, one to one of these sheets and one to the other. Without destroying the box it is impossible to learn whether other connections exist; for the interior of the box is crammed full of boards, etc.

The apparent complexity of the ensemble is increased by a third board. When the suspended contact board hangs at rest, there is space between it and the top of the box; this space has been largely filled by the insertion of an absolutely floating board, which can be removed at will when the box is unlocked. It is against this floating board that any object thrust through one of the holes in the box-top bears; pressure is then transmitted through the floating board to the suspended one, carrying this down. The clever result is that pressure at any point on the floating board will ring the bell, as effectively as pressure at its center. This is why the bell can be rung through the crack at the extreme side of the box.

Another purpose of the floating board is obviously to facilitate the insertion and removal of carbon paper or other means of getting impressions of the object that enters the holes. Such paper is tacked lightly to the surface of the floating board, and may then be inserted or removed at will by inserting or removing that board. Changing the paper is thus made easy.

The screws at either end of the box that provide terminals for the gimmick circuit really do serve to hold the box together. But a channel has been chiseled out in the junction between the side and end boards, and in this channel has been inserted a narrow metal plate, running up and down, and pierced by the screws. From these plates wires must run through concealed ducts in the wooden faces of the box, one to one of the copper contact sheets and one to the other. It is one of these concealed wires that is accidentally tapped by the screw in the side of the box. Completing the circuit between copper sheets by means of an external wire running from one screw-head terminal to the other obviously rings the bell, just as effectively as does contact between the two plates.

The scheme for Code to assist me in another investigation went through successfully, and I was in his company for much of the latter two weeks of August. We talked a great deal about the Margery case. Code made every effort to convince me that Hypothesis H would

hold water as a complete solution to the case. I made no attempt to convince him of anything; I merely asked questions and in every way encouraged him to talk. He verified all my conclusions with regard to the gimmick, and seemed a bit chagrinned that it had yielded so readily to search. He expanded greatly on the story of his use of the box in fake séances, his attempts to notify Margery about it, etc., etc. I told him point blank that many people would have difficulty in crediting his story or in believing that he had acted in good faith, and I told him with equal bluntness that I thought he had played the part of a consummate ass. He agreed with me, without reservation of any sort. To my query as to the position in which the Crandons would have been placed had the discovery of a gimmicked bell-box in routine use in their séance room been made by a skeptic of the Houdini breed, rather than by myself—well, he smiled a sickly smile and had no adequate answer. I am by no means satisfied that this was not the motive behind the whole incident. If I am correct in this hazard, a decent interval would have been allowed to elapse, in order that the HB with its Harvard origin might have been in Crandon's hands long enough to lend plausibility to the notion that he had tampered with it. Then a hostile observer could have been "planted" in one of the séances, to make the damning discovery. People who do not wish to be suspected of such a plot as this should take pains to make their behavior less of an invitation to the charge.

If this really were the purpose, a good start had been made toward putting the scheme into execution. On July 20th:

> The HB was then called for. The luminous holes were covered with a strip of cardboard, tacked on so that if it were lifted as much as 1/16 inch the luminosity would show. The crack through which it had been discovered that the bell could be rung with a knife was covered with surgeon's tape, which was doubled over on the ends and under the box. There remained then no normal way that we could think of whereby the box could be rung. Trance came on, and Walter rang the bell with great vigor, long and short peals and the number of times requested by Hill and Litzelmann successively. During this ringing Hill had the Psychic's left hand and knee, and her head-band could be seen in its proper place in the room. Litzelman held the Psychic's right hand and Crandon's two hands, and Crandon's chin rested on Litzelmann's hand. The Psychic's two ankles could be seen, and her feet rested on Litzelmann's feet.

It is unfortunate that Crandon tends to permit extreme control, such as is instanced above, only by sitters with whom he is most closely acquainted, and against whom the allegation of confederacy is therefore somewhat less absurd than in the general case. Nevertheless, one can appreciate how *Crandon's* confidence in the *sitter* is necessary before the sitter can be given a post of extreme responsibility, from which he may either lie about his control or make unauthorized moves that Crandon regards as detrimental to the Psychic's well-being. It is such considerations as this that drive Crandon to mechanical control.

In connection with all this confession stuff from Code, I demanded that he write to the Crandons, giving them a statement of the gimmicked condition of the box and pleading guilty to having gimmicked it himself. This seemed necessary, to protect them against any possible charge of having done it, *themselves*. He met this request, with a letter written and mailed at some date in September or possibly later; *but he post-dated it back to July 11th*, the date on which he delivered the apparatus to Lime Street. This seems final proof of his bad faith: his letter written to exculpate the Crandons of knowledge of the condition of the box was calculated, if they ever produced it, to make it appear that this knowledge had been theirs throughout the period of its use in their séance room!

CHAPTER XII

The Serious Side of the Harvard Case

By the Editor

To this point, the Harvard case against Margery has been discussed only in so far as it rests on Code's testimony and Code's activities in general. That his conduct was so devious as to isolate him from every benefit of the presumption of good faith which ordinarily attaches to a normal person seems to me inescapably clear from the narrative of Chapters IX and XI. On the face of this record, his good faith would have to be very specifically demonstrated rather than assumed, and the demonstration would have to overcome a notable weight of adverse evidence. So far, then, as the Harvard case against Margery is based upon evidence in which Code is in any way involved, it is unworthy of serious attention.

To what degree and on what grounds did it, despite this, get the attention of Code's immediate colleagues, and of the other faculty members who came in any way into the picture? What evidence against Margery, independent of Code's contributions, have they to present in support of their published negation of the mediumship? These questions—particularly the last one—must receive the serious consideration of any critic who wishes to be free from the appearance of one-sidedness.

Of course in the very nature of things, we should not look for complete uniformity of conviction from so many persons; and in point of fact, there appears neither uniformity of conviction nor a uniform degree of enthusiastic continued prosecution of the case. Code and Hoagland shine in both these respects, followed quite closely in at least the former regard by Shapley. As regards the entire group, however, it is distinctly in order for us to consider the rather complex reasons why the very large doubts thrown upon the case for the prosecution by the present narrative have not been given more weight.

All human motives are mixed; those with which we deal here seem to me more than ordinarily so. In some part, as I have suggested on page 106, whatever degree of varied individual acceptance the members of the Harvard group gave to Code's story was due to their lack of

full information covering all the facts of his connection with the case. One naturally gives a considerable degree of automatic credence to one's friend and colleague, and one has naturally to be more or less forced by circumstances and against one's will or inclinations into a consideration of the possibility that such a person is not to be credited. When we see how even those in charge of the policies of the London S.P.R. have allowed Code's apparent academic respectability to put them more or less in the position of automatically accepting his word as a gentleman, against Margery's as a mere defendant, we must realize that it would have been far too much of a wrench to expect his immediate colleagues and close friends to do anything different.

This is the more the case, in view of various general considerations, no one of which was operative to its full possibilities in any of the Harvard minds, but all of which must have been consciously or unconsciously present to some extent in all these minds, and all of which constitute more or less of an urge toward negative findings. Leaving quite out of the question their prior contact with Margery, it is fair to point out that all these academic gentlemen must have had some degree of predisposition against the general notion of the validity of psychical phenomena; and that in so far as their experience with this particular case had led to their formation of tentatively favorable judgments, these judgments must have been more than ordinarily open to reversal on that account. The general attitude of aprioristic negation was most evident with Shapley and the members of the Medical School faculty who came into the case; that any member of the entire group could have been wholly free therefrom is ridiculous to suppose.

I pass over very lightly the allegation, rather freely made by Margery's partisans, that a direct and irresistible academic pressure was exerted upon the entire membership of the group. Richardson states that one of them so admitted privately to him; Hill states that practically all of them were quoted in this admission by a newspaper man who interviewed them and him at the time when the case broke into the front-page headlines of the local press. But it is vigorously denied by all of them, and there does not seem to me to be enough evidence to justify insistence upon the point. What is however amply clear is that in so far as the members of the immediately responsible group—Hoagland, Code, Damon, Hillyer and Marshall—had any degree of conviction that the phenomena were or might be valid, they must all have had the distinct realization that the more conservative

and the more academically respectable course lay in the direction of negation. Their duty to scientific truth would hardly permit them to ignore large obvious facts, nor to refuse such open-minded investigation as they might be capable of. The factor mentioned would however give them some distortion of viewpoint toward the ambiguous factors which enter so largely into psychical research; and in some of their minds at least there must have been a distinct feeling of relief when it became clear that their findings might with some show of plausibility fall in with the majority opinion of the academic world.

The presence of McDougall in Cambridge and his immediate responsibility for the work of Hoagland with the case cannot be ignored or minimized in this connection. Hoagland had an oral agreement with McDougall, approving of the Committee's project, of their use of University premises and facilities, and, *if the outcome warranted this*, of Hoagland's using the results of the investigation for his doctor's thesis. This agreement was made at a time when Hoagland expressed confidence that their final results would be favorable to the hypothesis of validity. But even when we know this, it does not in the least take the curse off the sinister presence of McDougall behind Hoagland's contact with the case. McDougall could very safely agree that Hoagland might have a doctorate in exchange for *proof of validity that would satisfy McDougall!* We are told that McDougall had no contact with other members of the group until after the denouement but it is evident that he could influence them through Hoagland, with whom he must in the nature of the case have kept in contact. Are we to suppose that he was any more moderate in talking about the case to Hoagland than to Tillyard, Schiller, Miss Walker, etc.?[1] And are we never to have an unfavorable verdict upon the case that is free from all suspicion of having been dictated or influenced by this obstinate Scotchman?

These factors are quite adequate to explain any tendency toward a negative verdict which the members of the Harvard group, or the group as a whole, might have displayed. For the verdict itself, aside from the mere tendency, something a little more definite would be required. Something must have been afforded them which, in the presence of the tendencies just now described, would appeal to them as direct evidence against Margery, independent of Code's share in the case. Without this, even in the presence of the influences which I have

[1] See pages 479–82.

shown to be active, it would hardly have been possible for them to swallow Code's evidence so completely or to incorporate it so thoroughgoingly into their case.

In point of fact there were several categories of observations and deductions, made independently of Code and carrying sufficient importance to require that they be explained away before the case for the medium could be regarded as cleared up. Most of them *may be* explained away with sufficient ease, on the general grounds that what is presented by these critics as indicative of fraud might equally well be an aspect of valid mediumship; and that the negative viewpoint toward these items is forced upon these criticis by ths general factors which we have enumerated as pushing them in that direction.

For instance: after the hypothesis of fraud had been formulated, Hoagland and others were able to look back over the previous sittings, and to see where the silhouetted objects which at the time had gone into the records as caused by teleplasmic terminals could now be interpreted in terms of the psychic's feet, hands or legs; of artificial arm-like objects; etc., etc. Assuming that the records are honestly made in the first place, it is wholly proper thus to examine into the propriety of their reinterpretation in the light of new knowledge. It is of course very necessary in this connection to guard against a *restatement of the facts* which shall be of no merit other than as it serves to make the facts more amenable to the new interpretation—against a revision of the record in the interests of the oblique hypothesis. This revision seems to me to have been undertaken in some slight degree by the Harvard addenda to which Crandon has objected; but otherwise the Harvard group are innocent of any tampering with the documents. They have not, however, in my judgment, given sufficient attention to the question: If two opposed interpretations of a given series of facts are offered, how shall we choose between them? They have, it seems to me, chosen merely the one which they like best. Given observers who have suddenly become more willing than they were to interpret in the sense of fraud observations such as the silhouettings, touches, trance restlessness, etc., etc., etc., occurring in a mediumship of this type, it would certainly be most extraordinary if they found nothing which could be forced into the figure of such interpretation. All their evidence in these categories seems to me quite easily reconcilable with the hypothesis of validity—as easily so as with that of fraud.

Much more serious, however, is another aspect of their case: that

arising out of their efforts to obtain imprints from the teleplasmic terminals. Indeed, of all their facts and allegations, I rate this as most difficult of reconciliation with a favorable interpretation of the case. Inasmuch as it is at the same time one of the aspects of the case which has not been completely covered in print, I can here kill two birds with one stone: making good the deficiency in the existing printed records while also making it clear that I am not at all disposed to dodge issues or ignore unfavorable evidence.

The history of this matter is touched upon in *H. A.*,[2] and in so far as a defence was at that time offered, I have indicated in *B. vs. H.*[3] what this was. Naturally the Harvard group denied these countercharges; and a more or less complete statement was drawn up by Hoagland, setting forth their side of the controversy. This carries the date December 18th, 1925, and came into my hands under circumstances guaranteeing its contemporaneous character. I have already criticized[4] the failure to show in the detailed records of the séances the very pertinent facts (I ignore Crandon's denial, and attach that term to them as a mere matter of tentative convenience, much as in the séance-room we call Walter by his name) of this statement. If further criticism were attempted on the basis that these facts should have appeared in the *Atlantic*, the pressure of space would be a satisfactory answer, save in so far as Hoagland's use of such an improper medium makes him responsible for all the infelicities arising from its use. The statement in question is as follows:

> The first medium used to obtain prints of the teleplasm was warm paraffin on plates. Dr. Wolbach, Professor of Pathology at the Harvard Medical School, took charge of the prints made at this time. Paraffin was ladled on to a plate and the plate then placed on the table into which the medium thrust her leg.[5] This plate was then put aside in a box by Professor Wolbach and covered with paper and carried to the Medical School where he examined it. It distinctly showed coarse skin marks, identical with those of the human foot. It apparently had been marked

[2] See pages 673, 676.
[3] Pages 725–6.
[4] *B. vs. H.*, page 726.
[5] Inasmuch as I am giving an original document, I refrain from any textual revision. I assume that "plate" rather than "table" is intended to be the antecedent of "which"; and I infer that the action so baldly attributed to the medium's leg must at the time have been represented and accepted as that of a teleplasmic terminal. See open reference No. 32 in Vol. 2.—J. M. B.

by the ball of the foot and there was a mark nearby which could readily have been made with the great toe.

In the next sitting paraffin was again used in a similar way. On this same occasion plasticine was introduced. This plasticine was examined beforehand for its purity by the naked eye. It was put upon glass plates and during the séance set in front of Walter for impression. The teleplasm made impressions of a blurred sort on one of these plates of plasticine. A ball of plasticine was also put on the table and this was stamped vigorously leaving an impression lined with skin marks as of a human heel or the ball of the foot. It was in the plasticine of this evening that the lint was clearly found. It was visible to the naked eye as lint and under the microscope was identified by Dr. Wolbach with the lint of the slipper in our possession. There was no lint on the plasticine where it had not been touched by the impressing body. This plasticine was set aside with greatest care on a table. At the conclusion of the séance it was marked in the presence of Dr. Hilbert Day, Professor Shapley, Code, Damon, Dr. and Mrs. Crandon and myself. They[6] were then carefully placed in tin boxes, no cloth or even paper touching them. On the following morning I carried them with the greatest care to the Harvard Medical School. Impressions of Mrs. Crandon's feet and hands were also taken on the same evening and these were marked by writing in the plasticine near the impression with a point. The labelling and sorting of these impressions can be verified by Dr. Day, Dr. Shapley, or by Prof. Wolbach at the sitting which he attended, to say nothing of Code, Damon and myself. The claim that they were thrown into a bag together is absolutely untrue. The lint, the skeleton of an insect, and the particles of silica were unmistakable.

It is interesting to note that the lint fibers appeared black to the naked eye but that under the microscope there were a number of short red fibers. These short red fibers appeared both in the lint of the slipper and in the lint of the plasticine. There was no question either in point of view of the material, length of fiber, or color but what the lints were identical in every respect. Dr. Wolbach kept the impressions in cold storage at the Harvard Medical School all summer. They are now in my possession and may be examined at any time along with the slipper.

The impressions of the plasticine were blurred to some extent,

[6] *I.e.*, the several plasticine blanks carrying prints of any character whatever, whether admittedly normal or allegedly supernormal.—J. M. B.

as stated in the Atlantic, rendering identification with the prints of the medium's foot extremely difficult. We have since found however that the greatest difficlty, since the writing of the Atlantic article, appears to be the fact that the impression of Mrs. Crandon's right foot was poorly taken, because of our lack of technical knowledge of these matters. A shallow impression of Mrs. Crandon's right heel is all that was taken on this occasion; no impression was taken of the ball of the foot.

A prominent expert on these matters has since informed me, from examination of the plasticine, that he believes that the impressions were made with the ball of the foot rather than with the heel and since we have no record of the ball of Mrs. Crandon's foot we have not been able to make any direct identification. This same person told me that he was sure he could make an identification if adequate impressions of the medium's right foot were taken. If Mrs. Crandon cares to have such a record taken in the presence of satisfactory witnesses this aspect of the case might still prove interesting. However, though no direction identification was made between the foot print and the teleplasm print it was clear that the teleplasm print was that of a human foot, that it carried lint from the medium's slipper, sand, and an insect skeleton. And it is also a fact which can easily be verified that these impressions were adequately classified and handled with the greatest care.

The above record is much fuller than anything we have heretofore had from the Harvard group on this subject, though it still leaves unmentioned some points of more or less importance. It appears that impressions were got on three dates. On June 24th, three paraffin plates were secured, one on china and two on paper; and on the 29th and 30th, one plasticine imprint for each date. This of course has to do exclusively with séance prints of alleged supernormal origin; normally made prints of Margery's own feet were taken at least once, in plasticine, for comparison. The séance record is ambiguous where it[7] attempts to define the procedure with the plasticine balls; they were in fact kept in a group on a side table or board and placed one at a time on the séance table for Walter's attention. But this constitutional inability to produce an adequate record is characteristic.

Another point upon which oral interrogation (not by me, but by one who reports to me) of Hoagland has resulted in amplification of the documents has to do with the details of the incriminating prints.

[7] *M. H. V.*, page 79.

The statement is made that the silica, the insect skeleton and the lint whose presence in one of the teleplasmic prints leads to all the controversy were, all three of them, in the actual impression and firmly ground down thereinto, thus becoming part thereof. Accordingly, they must have been laid down off the imprinting object or have been priorly present on the surface of the plasticine ball. Hoagland under oral interrogation recognizes that this latter suggestion is one which the defense may well take up, in view of the recorded fact that on June 30th, plasticine balls (which led on this date to no impression but which were present for use if wanted) were allowed to fall to the floor, and were apparently picked up therefrom and returned to a position of potential use in the séance. By way of meeting the obvious rejoinder which might be built up out of this circumstance plus the grossly inadequate character of their own records, the statement is now made in behalf of the Harvard group that in the sittings from which imprints actually resulted, nothing of this sort occurred. Once the records are found so incomplete, of course, *ex post facto* supplementary statements like this, representing the best memory of the investigators, despite their obviously unsatisfactory character are the best attempt that can be made at answering any questions that arise.

I have no space or purpose to go into any long argument or analysis on any such inadequate or *ex post facto* basis as is here afforded. Obviously in addition to the general factors involved in any such discussion which one might make, there would be the accumulation of individual observations, the sum total of each observer's experience in the séance rooms; experience originally interpreted in teleplasmic terms, but now fitted into the theory of fraud and more or less satisfactorily reinforcing the individual's adherence to that theory. Such items were doubtless of much weight in the individual minds but I have sufficiently indicated the weight which they ought to have in view of their essentially ambiguous character. And I have no doubt that persons adversely disposed toward the mediumship, as well as those whose minds are open in both directions, will regard the whole situation revolving about the paraffin and plasticine impressions as the strongest evidence presented in support of the Harvard conclusions. One can deny it *in toto* as Crandon tends to do[8] and when one does this it is true that no clean-cut proof can be offered in its behalf. Nevertheless no clean-cut proof can in the nature of the case be offered

[8] See *B. vs. H.*, page 726, top.

against it—this would be true, even in the extreme case where such evidence as this had been deliberately fabricated in support of a deliberately fraudulent exposure. The physical evidence of the print is in existence and gives to this part of the case against Margery a standing—speciously if you insist, but none the less a standing—which can never be enjoyed by mere squabbles about what happened in a given séance or what interpretation is to be put on something admitted to have happened. Nobody can well escape the conclusion that here lies the gravest part of the entire Harvard case against Margery; and any person who holds a favorable viewpoint toward the case as a whole may well be asked, pointedly, how he proposes to get away from it. I do not know that *my* answer to this query will particularly impress any adverse critic; but for whatever it may seem worth to such critics, here it is:

The hostile critic, confronted by a well-drawn record of an active séance and asked how he explains *these* phenomena, will be able to show how, in his judgment, most of the recorded action could have been fraudulently produced, under the recorded conditions. With respect to other items he will have plausible suggestions to make, indicating what errors may have occurred in the reporting of the phenomena or of the conditions; and how, after the correction of these errors, the picture of fraud may be preserved. But with respect to a minority of the phenomena he will be more or less bankrupt; and of these he can only say:

"I have shown how most of the phenomena of this séance could have been done artificially. I am not omniscient; I have no doubt that for these few residual phenomena there are equally good explanations on the ground of fraud; but what these may be I cannot say. Nevertheless, I have shown so heavy a percentage of the phenomena to be absolutely or possibly fraudulent, that I have discharged my duty. I cannot be held responsible for a hundred per cent explanation of everything that occurs."

Now it may be a new idea to hold that the hypothesis of validity may enjoy this same privilege of laying certain things on the table for future discussion; that the critic upholding the validity of a mediumship is not obligated to give a complete resolution of the character and motives of *all* unfavorable critics and a complete disposition of *every single fact or observation* which has ever been advanced as evidence for an unfavorable verdict. But if this is a new idea it is

none the less one that ought to have standing. If ninety-five per cent (say) of the phenomena occurring in a given séance or a given mediumship are open to no conceivable attack, and if the remaining five per cent carry with them observations suggesting a fraudulent origin, it is certainly not a violation of logic to insist that the preponderance of evidence is in behalf of the theory of validity; that some of the apparently adverse factors can be explained away, thus and so; but that others must be left open for the time, awaiting explanation. The thing is done so in every branch of science; we do not, for instance, attack the validity of the law of gravitation because we have never been able to reduce Mercury's behavior to complete agreement therewith. The only conceivable question, it seems to me, would be one of fact rather than one of principle: namely, is the favorable presumption strong enough to subsist in the face of whatever *unexplained* unfavorable evidence we may have left on our hands. In the present case, the presumption of validity introduced by the generalities of the Margery history seems to me so strong, and the percentage of unfavorable observations and verdicts which *can* be completely explained away as product of the exposer's psychology seems to me so very large indeed, that there can be no question as to the proper attitude toward items like the present one which we are not at this moment able to explain away. They should be regarded as anomalies instead of being put forward as evidence that the ninety-five per cent (more or less) of favorable observation and verdict is wrong.

I take this attitude in deliberate preference to the attempt to explain them away in the one way that seems immediately available. The notion is strongly current, especially in credulous hyper-spiritistic circles, that genuine phenomena possess an inherent characteristic of parallelism with fraudulent ones. When this philosophy is carried to its limits it becomes impossible to get any evidence of fraud. Is the light turned on to show the "entranced" medium's hands and feet being used in the normal production of phenomena? Then it must be that the forces were weak and the operators chose this way of doing things in preference to a blank sitting. Do the impressions made by the teleplasmic terminal show the medium's fingerprints? Then it must be that this terminal constituted a psychic projection of the unfortunate medium's hands, prints and all. Does the sticky black mess which was smeared on the trumpet appear, at the end of the sitting, in a betraying ring around the medium's mouth? How inter-

esting; it must have come off on the teleplasm, and been deposited in this place as the latter was being reabsorbed into the medium's organism. Is the message on the slate obviously in the medium's hand? Evidently, in the process by which the spirit functions through the medium, so much of the medium's manner has been taken over by the spirit. Are the cards on which the spirit writing appears different from those supplied for use that day—different in thickness, in over-all dimensions, in color, in texture and in weight?[9] Then it must be that the occult process through which the writing is precipitated upon the cards has upon these reactions which we do not understand, and which produce all these changes.

The plea which I have caricatured and shown in its vicious extremes in the above paragraph is one with which I have no patience. Much preferable I think is the open admission that here is an anomaly which we do not understand, which is on its face no better reconcilable with the theory of validity than is Mercury's behavior with the classical theory of gravitation, and which we therefore leave open to interpretation at some later date, when we shall be able to promulgate a theory, in some degree different from present ones or going beyond present ones, and under which *all* observations made of the mediumship may be coördinated into a single generalization.

In presenting this picture, which at first glance seems such a brazen one, I emphasize that I am really on better ground than the opposition; since I have far less residual observations to hold out awaiting explanation than has any adverse critic of the mediumship. For the fact that this viewpoint enables me to present fully and honestly any apparently adverse factors—such as the present one—I claim no credit; and similarly I will not submit to the implication that in this circumstance lies a specious and unfair advantage of the viewpoint in question. It cannot be specious and unfair to apply here a general principle that is accepted without question everywhere else in scientific research.

---

[9] See *Scientific American*, Dec., 1923, page 390; and *Light*, Dec. 22, 1923, Feb. 2, 1924, for the details of a case where this plea was actually advanced under the circumstances outlined.—J. M. B.

CHAPTER XIII

The A.S.P.R. Project: Séances of June, 1925

Séance Records and Comment

By the Editor

To this date, there had been a lot of more or less serious and formal study of the Margery mediumship by more or less accredited investigators of one sort or another. But while these gentlemen had often been, individually, members or even officials of the American Society for Psychical Research, the Society itself, as a Society, had had no contact with the case at all. Indeed, so long as Prince was its Research Officer it was hardly to be expected that this would be otherwise; for aside from his brilliant success in making himself obnoxious to the Crandons, he had demonstrated more conclusively in this than in any preceding case his weaknesses of temperament and procedure.[1] But when I became Research Officer of the Society in the physical field almost at the very moment that Dingwall's examination of the case was petering out into nothing, it became evident that a move was in order to seek a study of the case by and for the Society.

There was a certain amount of negotiation with Crandon, who naturally wanted to know what I proposed to do and how I proposed to do it. I drew up a tentative program, indicating the type of phenomena which I meant to pursue, and the issue to which it might be hoped that my pursuit of them would come. This program revolved entirely about the telekinetic phenomena; for reasons which will be made clear as the present and immediately succeeding chapters roll along, I regarded these as the most hopeful, alike for the attempt at rigorous demonstration of the validity or otherwise of the phenomena, and for fruitful inquiry into the collateral questions of modus operandi. Although my personal opinion was entirely favorable and I was on record to this effect, there seemed no reason why I could not give the hypothesis of fraud as good a part in a serious study of the case, as a more skeptical person could give to the hypothesis of validity.

[1] *M. M.*, Chapter L. Of course Prince insists that he is grossly libelled here; and equally that his inability to get on with the Crandons is entirely their fault.

One's personal opinions need not interfere with the rigor of one's scientific procedure and deductions.

It was my intent to record the sittings dictaphonically. This had not been attempted since Comstock had made such a hash of it for the Scientific American Committee. I thought I knew what was wrong there. In the first place there was unskillful dictation. And in the second place there ruled the old-fashioned convention that the words fed into the dictaphone were complete and final, that they must not be altered one jot or tittle.

This convention I believe to be a great mistake. If the phenomena are occurring on any other basis than that of an infinitesimal piece of action every ten minutes, it is impossible to put into the machine a complete record of the manifestations and the accompanying conditions. It is easy, however, to get into the record enough to serve as a complete jog to subsequent memory. Transcription of the dictated record should therefore be accompanied by elaboration. The responsibility for this of course must be clean-cut, and the portions of the record which are thus added must be so arranged as to be easily identifiable, and must be checked by all the sitters as carefully as they would check the dictation itself. I offer the records of my twelve séances of June, July and August as a demonstration of séance-recording technique. The dictaphone, I would remark, is superior to the stenographer because it doesn't talk back and ask questions; because it involves less noise by the dictator; and above all because conditions of illumination are immaterial to it. And if the dictator follow my procedure of transcribing the wax notes himself, there will be less of unintelligibility than with shorthand notes; while the interpolation will be made easier.

It may not be immediately obvious that what I here propose to do, and what the subsequent records show me as doing on an extremely liberal scale, possesses any fundamental distinction from the Harvard practice of supplying addenda to the records, against which Crandon has so strongly objected, with such strong support from me.[2] The fact of course is that the Harvard records were supposed to be complete in themselves and mine were not supposed to be complete until after the amplification had been effected; that my dictation was purposely done with the view to this subsequent amplification; and most important of all, that all sitters understood the intent to amplify and that a recognized orderly procedure existed for supplying the added

[2] See pages 112–3.

matter and for insuring that it had the assent of all sitters. The circumstances are therefore not in the least degree parallel. In these present records what we have is an orderly and systematic series of interpolations by the entire group of sitters under my responsibility, aimed solely at meeting the impossibility of dictating everything one would like to dictate during an active séance. In the Harvard records we had not this, but rather a set of arbitrary addenda by part of the sitters, against the belief and over the protests of the others. Moreover, my addenda are always confined to matters of fact while the Harvard addenda seek to incorporate into the records the interpretations which some of the sitters give to the facts after due (or undue) reflection—matter proper enough for a published discussion but not for an original record. I think there will be no difficulty on the part of the unprejudiced reader in appreciating the distinction, and with it the propriety of making the records as I have here made them.

My project got under way in the middle of June, at a time when the Harvard investigation of Chapter IX was still under way and still apparently pointed toward a favorable verdict. It was agreed between myself, Crandon, and the young men of the Harvard group, that some of them would comprise part of my circle. For the rest, Crandon was to be present save on such single occasions as I might request his absence; and Richardson likewise. Had my initial program gone through as the work of the first three sittings suggested it would, I should rather early have come to the time when such request was in order. As things turned out, there was never an occasion when the absence of either of these two sitters would have been at all critical, so I never requested either of them to stay away. Social sitters, however, were to be excluded with considerable rigor; and in all questions which Crandon did not reserve for himself as of critical importance to the Psychic's well-being, I was to have complete determination.

Aside from this, the personnel of my investigation was unsettled when the first sittings were held. It had been hoped to find competent assistants for me in the academic field; but none had materialized. Rather than postpone the undertaking indefinitely, it was decided to go ahead with what personnel could be mustered for each séance. If no worth-while progress was made, personnel didn't matter; if we found that we were getting toward proof of anything, the summer sittings would have afforded valuable preliminary work, and with the reopening of the universities in the fall we could attack anew the problem of getting a commission of permanent membership who would not be

afraid to attest what they might see and whose attestation might mean something. So the project started on the basis indicated in the first records, which I annex:

Séance of June 18th, 1925: 10 Lime Street, Boston. Dictaphonic record, transcribed verbatim, with parenthetic elaboration by Bird. Original dictation by Bird, with assistance of other sitters [as indicated in text]. Circle formed at 9:17 [and seance held in total darkness throughout]. Order of circle, clockwise: Psychic, Richardson, Hoagland, De Wyckoff, Bird, Crandon, Psychic again. Outside [circle, on the sofa, in its usual location at the northeast corner of the room]: Laura Crandon, Charles M. Toll [Instructor in Philosophy and Psychology, Amherst College; and on a chair immediately west of sofa], Mrs. Richardson. Damon at the dictaphone [outside the circle, seated in front of the victrola, facing north]. Luminous controls on the Psychic's wrists, ankles and forehead. [Continuous victrola throughout the sitting; record "Out of the Dusk to You." Dictaphone connected into top center socket of the lamp stand, and hence independent of the red lamp and victrola.]

[Apparatus present:

SAB: Electric bell-box, Scientific American model; initially on east end of table.

D: Luminous doughnut. Plane toric section, popularly known as ring, of rough yellow paper, luminously painted on one side. Thickness without paint, 0.007 inch. Initially on floor, outside and east of cabinet.

LM: Luminous megaphone, luminously painted around both ends. Large end 33 inches circumference, small end 7 inches length 20½ inches along slant surface. Initially on floor beside D.

T: Table, the regular Lime Street model.

C: Cabinet, the regular Lime Street model.

DB: The Dingwall model mechanical bell-box, with luminous platform, was also on the floor with D and LM, but did not come into use and remained *in situ* throughout the séance.]

[The Psychic was clothed in robe and stockings, as usual. She undressed and assumed this costume under supervision of Mrs. Richardson, as usual; Bird attempted no control of the process. The Psychic gives it to be understood that under cover of the séance darkness she throws the robe more or less open, with the theory that this facilitates the necessary projections from her body into the theater of action.]

I interrupt the record here for the purpose of remarking that this is one of the points picked out for severe criticism by a gentleman who has read the proofs with a mildly hostile attitude toward the mediumship. He seems to feel that this claim ought to run throughout the history of the case if it is to be advanced at all; and also that under the control supposed to be in effect at the present séance, the action pictured would be impossible for the Psychic to execute. The latter point is certainly not a valid one, in view of the ease with which the robe could be displaced by movements of the shoulders and body. The former I think is best met by observing that Margery and Crandon display an extreme volatility in their outlook upon the theoretic aspects of the mediumship. This is not so much a matter of believing one thing today and another tomorrow; they would, for instance, at any time in the period covered by this book, have placed importance upon conditions making teleplasmic extrusion easy. It is rather that for short periods their attention is strongly concentrated upon this, that, or the other theoretical point. This week they may be strongly conscious of the viewpoint that Walter is no miracle-worker, and that if you prevent him from bringing his teleplasm into play you prevent him from working. Next week, while still believing this, it has suffered recession to a minor position in their consciousness while they are strongly conscious of some other factor—the music, say; or the illumination; or the provision of an identical circle for several evenings running; or the importance of placing mediumistic sitters in certain relations with Margery; or the necessity for strict obedience to Walter's wishes in touching the teleplasm; etc., etc. Quite aside from the fact that this volatility seems characteristic of the mediumistic disposition in the general case, I think it is rather more suggestive of validity than of fraud; for under any theory of fraud, it seems to me that a constant attitude and procedure in such matters as this would be of more importance than under a theory of genuineness. If the inconsistencies which any critic can easily find in the conduct of any human being are definitely aimed at an oblique end, the subject must present these inconsistencies consistently; whereas if they are merely evidence of his human fallibility and inconsistency, he can be as inconsistently inconsistent as he pleases without any inconvenience whatever. But I do not know that in connection with the present point all this discussion is particularly worth while; so we may get on with the record:

9:19. Darkness.

9:21. Walter's voice heard.

9:23. Red light while Crandon and De Wyckoff exchange seats, at Walter's instruction.

9:26. In darkness, Bird and De Wyckoff [now] exchange seats, at Walter's instruction. [In effecting this change, De Wyckoff held the Psychic's hand until Bird gained possession thereof, after which Bird verified the continuity of the hand which he now held, with the illuminated wrist. A similar continuity of control over Crandon was not maintained during the shift; but after taking the hand at his right De Wyckoff verified its identity as Crandon's left. The necessity for continuity of control did not arise during the preceding shift of seats because the red light was then on. After the second shift, the circle ran, clockwise: Psychic, Richardson, Hoagland, Crandon, De Wyckoff, Bird, Psychic again. There were no victrola stoppages and no telephone calls at any time during the sitting; so Crandon remained, undisturbed, for the balance of sitting, in a seat remote from the Psychic and controlled by Hoagland and De Wyckoff.]

9:29. [At Walter's instruction] D was placed on T, dim side up, without sacrificing control. [Bird put the Psychic's hand on his knee, reached down with his free left hand and got D, disposed of this, and recovered the Psychic's hand from his knee, where it had remained without interruption. The luminous control lent visible certainty to this procedure, if visible certainty were regarded as adding thereto.]

9:30. SAB rang. D moved on T. Control OK. [For the present sitting, this expression means specific consciousness of integrity of every hand-link in circle, by Richardson, Hoagland, De Wyckoff and Bird. This definition was agreed upon among the sitters; and it was agreed that when Bird dictated "control OK," this should be a challenge, to which any sitter who could respond in negative or dubious terms should so respond, and should be recorded as so responding. As regards the luminous controls, the absence of automatic individual responsibility made necessary a different sort of convention. The head control was best visible to Bird, and any failure of it to be visible to him was to be recorded; throughout the present séance, it never failed to be visible to him at critical moments. Nor did he at any time observe movements, or rigidity, of this control mark, which would suggest either the use of the head or the freeing thereof from the control. De Wyckoff was best placed to observe the foot controls; he was to report on these by specifically acceding to Bird's words "Control

OK"; and such verification was not lacking on any occasion. The hand controls were similarly best visible to Bird and Richardson, respectively; Bird's was always visible to him when he noted "Control OK," and Richardson never failed to respond affirmatively to this challenge. Neither of these sitters observed any suspicious mobility or rigidity of these markers. In addition to the specific responsibility thus allotted, there was large general visibility of the luminous controls by other sitters during most of the séance, and no question was raised by any sitter as to their behavior while visible, or as to their prolonged invisibility. The agreements as to control responsibility and control reporting implied herewith were reached, orally, by the sitters; but it was of course not possible to put all this matter into the dictaphone, so it had to rest until the transcription.]

[9:30: dictation continued from above] SAB was put on the floor by Crandon at Walter's request. [It was put under Crandon's chair—see 9:40 dictation; and this was done] under continued control [of Crandon's hands by those next him, through his wrists].

9:31. D moved on T. X (Walter's "terminal") silhouetted against D. [Partly simultaneously with this and partly after D came to rest] T moved sharply back and forth [—so sharply that Bird inquired whether any sitter were responsible. All disclaimed it specifically]. D moved to edge of T, then fell to floor. D was picked up by Bird [and restored to place on T] without sacrifice of control [the Psychic's hand being deposited temporarily on his knee, as previously].

9:33. D was dragged to the edge of T by a visibly silhouetted X, picked up, waved about over T, and fell to the floor on the side of T remote from the Psychic. [It was recovered and] replaced on T by Hoagland. All controls OK throughout this action.

9:34. D moved about T, then was shoved off the edge upon the floor; visibly silhouetted X. D [was here] left [momentarily] on the floor, bright side up; then Bird picked it up without sacrificing control [Psychic's hand on his knee, as before], and placed it on T, dim side up.

9:35. D moved about T; visibly silhouetted X. Walter asked for coin [hereinafter indicated by Q]. Bird, De Wyckoff's hand on his knee during interval, [got half dollar from pocket and] placed half dollar on table, in the hole of the D. D moved back and forth, and Q was [distinctly] heard by Bird, scraping on T; then was heard by all dropping on T. [This act was] repeated. All controls OK. Rapping on T, presumably by Q. [Whether the dropping and rapping of Q, as well as its dragging, was accom-

panied by motion of D, is not recorded; and the question was not raised until several days afterwards, when recollection of sitters could not be relied on with certainty.]

9:36. D was turned bright side up [by Walter's direction], and Hoagland's hand placed over it. [Crandon's hand, Hoagland reports subsequently, remained under control by continuous contact with Hoagland's upper arm.] An attempt was apparently made to put Q in Hoagland's hand [which lay, cupped, palm up, over D]; Q struck the side of the hand and rolled off T, Hoagland's hand being struck by X. [Speaking in terms of previous experience, De Wyckoff or Crandon used the word "thrown" to describe the attempt to put Q in hand; the contact by X would not constitute 100 per cent denial of this.] Another touch [reported by Hoagland], this time on his thumb; by request. Hoagland's hand removed from D [on what suggestion was not recorded]; and a fresh coin [half dollar again] was placed on T by De Wyckoff [in view of temporary loss of the first coin. The identity of De Wyckoff's hand was verified by Hoagland, on regaining control, through continuous contact between De Wyckoff's arm and Hoagland's hand during interval.]

9:37. Hoagland put his hand on D again [control of Crandon being maintained as during the 9:36 dictation]. Walter dropped Q so that it rested on Hoagland's hand, X touching Hoagland's finger-tips, apparently from the direction of Bird. All controls OK. X apparently passed back and forth above Hoagland's hand, eclipsing [intermittently] those portions of D otherwise visible, and touching Hoagland's hand repeatedly. Hoagland's hand was withdrawn [at what suggestion not recorded; and circular hand-control was reëstablished].

9:39. X was seen momentarily by Bird against D, which began to curl up. [After perhaps five seconds of progressive curling, the upstanding edge was approximately vertical, with the opposite side still flat on T; D then left T with the curiously smooth motion customarily described by Margery's sitters as "swimming"; and] D floated in air at the level of Bird's eyes. Repetition of this [was given, with D floating largely] edgewise; [*i.e.*, in air vertically]. X was seen in silhouette as though projecting through hole in D. All controls OK.

9:40. SAB rings on floor under Crandon's chair. Foot control of Crandon [had not existed up to this point; it was at once] established by Hoagland and De Wyckoff. The degree of certainty that each had Crandon's foot, and each a different foot, would seem rather high, in view of the small personnel and wide spacing

of the circle.] SAB continues to ring [after establishment of control over Crandon's feet; it rings] again and again and again violently. Walter said this was done by John.

9:41. D in motion on T. A scraping sound on T accompanying this [was heard by all; X, Q, or what?]. Richardson was punched in the chest; Hoagland was touched on the right leg; SAB rings freely, Bird is touched on the right ankle; SAB rings again. All controls OK, including control of Crandon's feet. [The action here was the fastest and most furious that Bird has experienced with this mediumship. It was remarkably long-sustained for activity of such high pitch. Bird is inclined to think there was simultaneity between SAB ringing and touching of Hoagland or himself, or both; but certainty was impossible. The action was so rapid that, even in the most abbreviated terms, there was considerable difficulty getting it all into the dictaphone.]

9:42. Hoagland's nose was placed in the hole of D, on T; D [being] bright side up [and Hoagland leaning forward with his head on T]. Walter then felt about on [the exposed top and back of] Hoagland's head, and pulled his hair; [during this] X eclipsed D intermittently from Bird [in addition to the partial eclipse effected by Hoagland's head]. The hair-pulling continued [by request of sitters] vigorously, eliciting pain sensation. [Presumably X is] now feeling [and fumbling] at Hoagland's knee. SAB rings. Slight motion of D on T. [There was excellent concentration of activity here, but nothing equal to that of the preceding paragraph.]

9:45. [This interval was bridged by Walter's humorous conversation, which was very free and very general; and which so successfully filled the gaps between physical episodes as to have led to the impression, taken in conjunction with the physical phenomena, of continuous contact with and action by Walter from 9:29 to 10:02.] D was removed and LM was placed horizontally on T, small end toward Bird. Hand control of the Psychic [was maintained by placing her hand] on Bird's knee while Bird did this. LM rolls back and forth, then rotates on its vertical axis [through an angle of some 135 degrees. LM rises slowly and smoothly in the air for this act, with "swimming" effect noted above; and it] floats in air toward Crandon and De Wyckoff. De Wyckoff is touched on his right hand by LM, which then goes higher, slightly above Bird's head, and "swims" about [very smoothly] in a complicated three-dimensional path. LM dances [in air following the above motion and without any intermission of rest]. LM touches Bird's hand [in similar continuity with the

preceding movements], crashes on to T, and into Hoagland's lap. Walter recovers it thence, X striking Hoagland's thumb. LM is [then] in air, floating freely and continuously for [a period recorded at the time by Bird as] about a minute; [but in retrospect, Bird feels that the estimate was influenced in some degree by the activity preceding the crash into Hoagland's lap, and that the duration of one minute is considerably too long for the action subsequent to this crash, but far too short for the total action before and after the crash. Bird also feels that this account, while as good as could be expected by any reporting technique short of motion-picture photography, distinctly fails to do justice to the spectacular character of the megaphone performance. This, of course, is not necessarily a loss.] LM replaced on T [by Walter, at the conclusion of this period of activity]. Control OK throughout action.

9:47. D was replaced on T, bright side up, at Walter's request [this was done by Bird, without sacrifice of any control]. De Wyckoff's hand was placed [palm up] on D by [Walter's] request. Q [of the whereabouts of which since it last figured in the dictation no sitter had knowledge] rolled into De Wyckoff's hand; then rolled out again [of itself], because of position of palm. There was no loss of control anywhere [during this act; specific reports were rendered to this effect, in accord with the convention agreed upon, but no report was made indicating the technique of Crandon-De Wyckoff control while De Wyckoff's hand was on T].

9:48. Walter requested the removal of D. [This was done by Bird, in the usual fashion without sacrificing any control.]

9:49. LM is lifted and floated freely, touching hands of Bird and Hoagland. It continues to float, and to rap on T. It comes to rest on the end of T . . . [A few words of the record were here lost, when it broke as Bird tried to force it far enough on to the spindle to permit transcription of the extreme end. The transcribed record therefore passes to the second cylinder, with omission of this fragment. The removal of the first cylinder and the placing of the second one on the machine was effected by Damon in the dark; and Walter obligingly slowed up his tempo until Damon was ready to resume his taking of Bird's dictation.]

9:51. Q fell [audibly upon T; no indication of whence it came or height of fall].

9:52. SAB rang. All controls OK, including control of Crandon's feet. SAB continues to ring, accompanied by intermittent sounds of snapping of the spring against the contact board. [This sentence edited on transcription, to make the sense

clearer.] SAB rings again, and [for some time] continues to ring [intermittently], and to give sound of spring vibration without ringing. [This sound can be produced by violent depression of the contact board, following which the spring reacts so strongly as to kick the board high in air and free from the spring, which then vibrates until the board falls, audibly, against it again. It can of course, also be produced by direct manipulation of the spring, treating this like a tuning-fork, while the board is deliberately held free of the spring.] SAB all this time was under Crandon's chair; all controls OK, including control of Crandon's feet.

9:54. LM was removed from T [by Bird, the Psychic's hand on his knee]. De Wyckoff was directed [by Walter] to pick up SAB. [He had some difficulty finding it, and more in getting it clear of the legs and rungs of Crandon's chair.] Before he had it off the floor [but not until after he had got hold of it and after he had moved it and struck it laterally against chair legs, etc.], it was ringing; and it kept on ringing while being lifted to a place on De Wyckoff's knee, [where it] continued to ring. [During this action De Wyckoff required both hands and was out of control]; Hoagland [reached over across Crandon, and during the time when De Wyckoff was otherwise engaged he was] in control of Crandon's left hand along with his right; Crandon foot control [during the interval] as usual. [No attempt was made to maintain control between Bird and De Wyckoff here. The state of the Richardson-Hoagland-Crandon control was not reported as] Hoagland now slowly put SAB from De Wyckoff's knee to T. All controls were then restored and reported OK.

9:55. SAB rings, on the end of T near Bird. All controls OK. Bird reports [an unusually clean-cut observation of] free motion by Psychic's head-band immediately after this ringing. [The height and lateral range of the moving spot of light seen by Bird were clearly such as to be susceptible to no other interpretation than that of motion by her head or her upraised hand. Bird made specific verification of his control of the Psychic's right hand, and at his request Richardson did the same at her left. We therefore have the strongest evidence that the head-band was in its proper place at this time.]

9:56. Hoagland picks up SAB [at Walter's instruction]; it rings as he lifts it, and also gives noise of vibrating spring, without ringing. The ringing was accompanied by a vicible spark.[3] Hoagland here [reported that he] manipulated SAB without

[3] *M. M.*, p. 288.

sacrificing control [but did not report how]. SAB rings again [presumably on T]. With the Psychic's hand on his knee, Bird [his own hands of course out of control, as always when he was called upon to use them for manipulation of the apparatus] picks up SAB in two hands, moves it very freely in all directions [up and down, sidewise, out and back, and in combination of these directions, in each instance as far as he could go without leaving his seat, and always as rapidly as he could conveniently go; making, in fact, every effort to induce ringing through motion by box: but] with no ringing and no audible vibration of the spring. Hoagland is touched [no indication whether by X or by material object]. Bird [his test of the bell's failure to ring spontaneously through mere motion of box completed] replaces SAB on T; SAB [immediately] rings.

[Time entries here were omitted for an unusually long interval, through desperate pressure of other dictation. It was all Bird and Damon could possibly do to keep pace with the physical facts of the séance.]

Bird puts SAB in the air again [in his two hands as before]; and [he] feels distinctly the pressure as Walter rings it, with visible spark. [This entire experience] is repeated. Three rings [are now] given to Bird's order, with a visible spark each time, [and with a tendency of the board not to maintain contact with absolute continuity during the entire duration of each peal. Bird was now carrying the box in one hand; and] each time [the bell rang, it did so] with pressure [on the box from Walter] sufficient to depress [through several inches] Bird's hand carrying the box. [Bird had regained control of the Psychic's right hand, and had verified the identity of this hand, immediately prior to responding to Walter's request that he indicate how many rings he wished from SAB.] All controls OK [throughout period of ringing by SAB under Bird's manipulation]. The identity of [De Wyck-off's] hand was verified by Bird on regaining control [thereof] by direct hand-clasp; [and he had been continuously conscious of its presence on his knee during ringing period]. SAB was on a level with the lower part of Bird's face while being rung [as he held it in air. He held it as nearly motionless as possible, but this turned out to be of no particular pertinence, in view of his observations of pressure during the ringing of SAB].

10:02. [After a brief pause] Walter announces no more phenomena tonight. Some conversation with Walter [almost if not entirely revolving about subsequent plans of Bird and Hoagland groups]; after which:

10:06. Walter said "Good night."

The distance from the Psychic's right shoulder to the approximate position of SAB as it rang on the floor under Crandon's chair was measured immediately after the restoration of light, and found to be 64 inches. In addition, there were obstructions to normal access in the table, and in De Wyckoff's leg, controlling Crandon's foot from a position in front of SAB. [But any allegation against the SAB ringing from this position would revolve about confederacy from the far side of the circle.]

Throughout the séance the dictaphone worked perfectly. At nine o'clock the listening side had been tried and found in order. But when Damon tried to verify that he had made an audible record, the machine would not rotate; following which, even the dictating side was inoperative. By substituting a lamp for the machine it was verified that current was present and the switch closed; but the motor of the dictaphone would not rotate. Going to Lime Street next morning, I found the dictaphone wholly operative; as soon as I closed all the switches I was able to transcribe the entire record without difficulty.

Largely because of the suggestion which this offered of parallelism with the irregularities of the victrola which had been recorded in the past,[4] no sitter was quite prepared to assign this dictaphone irregularity to natural causes, without further discussion. It persisted and got worse during the next day, so that at the séance of the 19th a complete record was not obtained. On the 19th, Walter disclaimed any connection with the phenomenon, which was in fact ultimately traced to a defective motor, which got hot enough after running for an hour or so to develop an internal resistance sufficient to prevent the passage of current.

In addition to being placed before all sitters for suggestion and approval, the record of this sitting was at a somewhat later date displayed to Code, while I was still on good terms with him, in order that he might have opportunity to check it against his theories of fraud. Among the comments which he makes, in writing, I find the statement: "Note that Walter disclaimed the bell-ringing under Crandon's chair." The record does not justify this; and it is certainly something which I would not omit from the record, if it had happened. Code's memorandum is not dated; but my recollection is that it was made en route to or in Lily Dale, in the latter part of August. Doubtless Hoagland

[4] M. M., Chapter XL.

had told him that Walter had disclaimed the interference with the orderly operation of the dictaphone, and Code had unconsciously transferred this to something to which he would rather apply it. Or Walter's statement at the top of p. 151 may have been ineptly taken as a denial of all supernormality.

Séance of June 19th, 1925: 10 Lime Street, Boston. Dictophonic record, transcribed verbatim, with parenthetic elaboration by Bird. Original dictation by Bird, with assistance of other sitters [as indicated in text].

Circle formed at 9:07 [and séance held in total darkness throughout]. Order of circle, clockwise: Psychic, Richardson, Laura Crandon, Hoagland, De Wyckoff, Bird, Crandon, Psychic again. Damon at the dictaphone [seated on the sofa in the northeast corner of the room, facing the circle]. Luminous controls on the Psychic's wrists, ankles and forehead. [Continuous victrola: record "Out of the Dusk to You." Dictaphone connected as previous night, but by a longer cord, enabling Damon to take the position noted. Psychic clothed in bathrobe and stockings only, under her own supervision and responsibility. Bird requested the place at Psychic's right to which Walter had moved him the night before. Crandon refused to grant this unless on Walter's motion, which was not made.] Psychic's weight immediately before séance [in séance costume], 140 pounds.

[Apparatus present:

SAB, D: Scientific American bell-box and luminous doughnut, as on 19th. SAB initially on S_1 (see below); D initially on floor at east of cabinet.

T, C; Table, Cabinet: regular Lime Street models.

S_1: Small platform scales, registering up to 24 pounds on circular dial with needle. The needle and the 24 integral graduations on the dial were marked with luminous paint, even pounds receiving long strokes and odd short ones. It was easy to read scale with good accuracy in dark. Net weight of S_1 unit, three pounds. Its sensitivity in the region adjacent to ten pounds (the weight of the SAB unit) was not all that might have been desired; all that could be said was that with the SAB unit on the pan of S_1 unit, the minimum pressure necessary to ring the bell would disturb the needle of the scales. Initially on T, slightly east of center, and carrying SAB.

U: Ordinary laboratory stand and clamp, supporting in vertical position a glass U-tube, ¾ inch bore and 3 inches, plus,

long in each arm. The base plate, the top of the metal upright, and the top of each arm of the tube carried spots of luminous paint; the apparatus could not be displaced or dismantled without instant detection. In the bottom of the U-tube, a luminous-painted marble; it was the hope that Walter would displace this vertically without displacement of the U apparatus as a whole. Initially on T, at northeast corner.

DM: Dark megaphone, smaller size, 11 inches long slant height, 22 inches circumference, large end. Initially on the floor at the east of the cabinet, as almost always in Margery séances.]

9:10. Walter voice heard. Walter called attention to the fact that Hoagland's luminous watch was visible through his pocket, and requested that it be turned around. [There was no supernormal cognition here. Walter was merely the first to note normal visibility.]

9:15. Walter displayed knowledge of the fact [confirmed by Hoagland] that Hoagland's face was unusually serious at the moment. [Here we *have* apparent supernormal cognition, recalling an identical experience by Bird months before. The theory has been hazarded, and apparently accepted by Walter, that he is more apt to sense the sitter's movements or expressions corresponding to a state of mind, than those of purely physical context.]

9:18. SAB rang. It gave a prolonged peal; the scales travelled from the normal reading of 10 pounds plus clear up to the 24-pound limit [striking the top with a bang]. A moment later this maximum travel of the S_1 pointer occurs again, [but] without ringing of SAB. Control OK [defined for this night below; see dictation for 9:21]. S_1 again travels to its limit without ringing SAB. Controls OK here, plus extra control by Bird, across Crandon, of the Psychic's right hand; [for definition and discussion, see dictation for 9:21. The convention that "Control OK" for the present evening includes this extra hand control was not in effect until 9:21; hence this extra control is here specifically mentioned, and in the episode immediately preceding it was absent.] SAB rings again, pointer going to limit [of travel].

9:20. Walter instructs that S_1 be turned around. [The dial had been facing Crandon and Bird, so that only they could see it. In its new position, the entire S_1 unit, with the SAB unit on it, was rotated counter-clockwise through an angle somewhere between 45 and 90 degrees,] so that the other sitters could [now] see it work.

9:21. SAB rang in its new position, the scales travelling to their limit. Control OK, with extra control by Bird of the Psy-

chic's right [and Crandon's left] hand. [It is here agreed that] for tonight "Control OK" includes: normal hand contact all around the circle; foot control all around save with respect to the Psychic's two feet and the two [one of Richardson and one of Crandon] immediately adjoining her at either side; visibility of the luminous controls on the Psychic's two wrists, two ankles and forehead, [responsibility for this visibility being approximately as on preceding night, with Crandon substituted for Bird so far as constant observation of the right wrist is concerned]; and control by Bird, reaching across Crandon, of the Psychic's right hand and Crandon's left [in addition to his normal control of Crandon's right. The forehead control is well visible to Bird, so Crandon does not have to take this over. The detailed convention for challenge of the control by Bird at critical instants, and for response by the sitters, was as on the preceding night. For the additional control of the Psychic-Crandon hand-junction, Bird's left hand, carrying Crandon's right with it, is brought across in front of Crandon to a position of contact with the clasped hands between Crandon and the Psychic. Bird either grasps one of these hands, and lets the other two contact his from above and below respectively, or else slips Crandon's right up to his wrist, leaving his own left free to grasp the clasped hands of Crandon and the Psychic. In either event, he always satisfies himself that both these hands are attached to appropriate wrists and arms, or that both are living and mobile hands. Inasmuch as there is no free living hand in the room to be used in substitution, the second procedure is as valid as the first; and only after putting one or the other of these procedures into effect does Bird announce the extra control, or announce "Control OK" when this announcement includes the extra control. Following the announcement of "Control OK,"] SAB rings again with registration of the full 24-pound limit.

9:22. Walter stated that he would now ring SAB without exerting this maximum pressure. SAB [at once] gave a short peal, S_1 reading increasing less than half a pound.

9:23. Registration of four-pound pressure when SAB rang [*i.e.*, S_1 reading increased four pounds]. Walter called attention to the fact that SAB was in danger of falling off the pan of S_1. [It was] verified by Bird [that this was the case] and [SAB was] restored to central position on pan. [Control of the Psychic and Crandon involving their three hands unbroken during this; control of De Wyckoff continued during the interval, his hand being placed on Bird's knee while Bird's right hand, unaided, adjusted SAB on S_1.]

9:24. Crandon reports a touch on his leg. Bird gets this, repeated three times, on his left leg. Control OK.

9:25. SAB rings, giving registration of the full 24-pound limit; then immediately again giving an increase of barely one pound over the normal weight of SAB.

9:26. SAB rings twice [in rapid succession], the first time with minimum increase in scale reading, the second with maximum. [Walter at one stage of the conversation stated that he could press far harder than the 24 pounds to which the present readings were limited; and it was the distinct opinion of all sitters that the limit readings, on this evening, often corresponded to pressures materially higher than 24 pounds. See the first interpolation under 9:18, *e.g.*] Walter seized the U assembly and waved it about. At Walter's direction, Bird placed SAB on the floor between De Wyckoff and Hoagland. [Bird's hands were out of control during this operation; Crandon's right and De Wyckoff's left hands were on Bird's knees; the Crandon-Psychic link was without external control.] While Bird was thus disposing of SAB, the scales [freed of all normal load and hence able to show no normal reading above zero] stood momentarily at 2 pounds, shot around to 24, then oscillated rapidly between 2 and 10, approximately.

9:28. Scales pointer [continues to dance wildly] all over the dial, while Walter whistles in time with its action. Control OK, including additional control of Crandon's head on Bird's upper arm. The scales again oscillate violently, approximately between 2 and 16 pounds.

9:30. A violent blow on the pan of S_1, twice repeated. The pointer [then] stands motionless at 4½ pounds, presumably out of order. [This presumption is verified when] Walter strikes repeated violent blows upon the pan without affecting the pointer; then [himself] turns scales around to face Richardson. S_1 [unit entire is now] waved in air, the motion being mainly up and down; then dropped [not laid] on T at Crandon's (east) end. [It is thought that this may be the heaviest object yet levitated freely by Walter, as distinguished from mere pushing about or mauling, as of cabinet, table, etc.]

9:31. S_1 again goes in air, above Bird's head, returning to T. [The record fails to specify control OK; the judgment of the sitters when subsequently consulted was that this was wholly a matter of Bird's having no opportunity to interrogate them; all remembered the episode and all were under the impression that they had been conscious of continuity of controls. If this is correct, the incident is an outstanding one by virtue of the combined horizontal

and vertical range, and the weight of levitated object.] Several gentle blows upon . . . [the record is here undecipherable, and no sitter recollects the apparent locus of the blows. The scale pan seems to present the greatest probability. The failure to remember here is of considerable negative weight in connection with the preceding episode and the parenthetical remarks thereon.]

At this point it is again necessary to yield the floor to the adverse critic who has read the proofs. He feels that the situation here existing lends a very strong presumption that the record usually covers a large degree of unconscious absence of observation by the sitters. I would point out however that the failure to remember is of the next day, and obviously cannot affect the credibility or even the completeness of the actual dictation. Further, it has to do with a point which was completely covered by the running dictation, and which no sitter could therefore anticipate being called upon to remember next day. Accordingly, it seems to me to reflect little if any discredit upon the observations and record, save as indicated in the interpolated remark. Indeed, the very reason we make séance records during a séance is because we know that in this way we escape the necessity for trying to remember such minor points as this.

9:32. With Bird maintaining control of right hands of the Psychic and Crandon [Crandon's left being momentarily free for the purpose indicated], D was placed [by Crandon] on the pan of S_1 [at Walter's request], bright side up. As Crandon thus placed D on the pan, Walter announced that he had [possession of] part of the scales. [No sitter had yet missed anything from the S_1 assembly.] X was silhouetted against D, and the luminous needle from S_1 [was then] laid down [by Walter] over D. [Walter stated that he had recovered the needle from the floor behind Bird's chair; this would imply that it had dropped off during the levitation of 9:31.] Hoagland's hand was laid over D [at Walter's request, and without sacrificing control, the adjacent hand going with it]. Walter stroked Hoagland's hand [presumably with X], then joggled S_1 up and down [under the cupped hand and the D]. Walter put something [material momentarily] in [or on] Hoagland's hand—apparently the U apparatus. [The dictated notes do not indicate any reason why it was necessary to indulge in speculation about the whereabouts of an object so liberally marked, and recollection of the sitters is equally at fault.]

9:34. DM [presumably] heard scraping on floor; [it was then] lifted and dropped [exact locus not indicated]; all controls OK.

At this point, about three-quarters through the first record, the dictaphone became inoperative. It continued to rotate and to advance, so that Damon, unaware of anything wrong, continued talking into the receiver; and it in due time came to the end of the record. But it made no impress upon the wax. When the record came to an end, and after Damon had placed the second record on the carriage, either the motor or the clutch failed to go into effect again, so that Damon now observed the machine's inoperativeness. Walter at one stage of the séance denied having caused the irregularity at the end of the preceding session. He stated that the wrong chain (referring presumably to the pull-switches on the lamp-stand) had been pulled. This it was difficult to credit, since all hands had worked over the machine on the preceding night. Code, however, reports to me: "Subsequent to Damon's failure to read record, I called on the Crandons with Damon and tested the dictaphone with Damon, discovering that Damon did not understand some necessary function of the machine." The indefiniteness of this statement is doubtless due (see page 155) to the time which elapsed between the observation and the report. It is a fact that at the end of the present séance, after light was given, Damon worked for some time over the machine, but could not make it go; and that I then went to it after a further interval of some five or ten minutes, and made it run at a touch of the switch, without any trouble at all. It is also a fact that after this machine was returned to New York, it was found to be liable to erratic stoppage after running for any considerable time; see page 155.

The above paragraph was compiled, in its present form, some weeks after the séance. During the period when it was supposed, erroneously, that a record was being produced, séance action was intense. De Wyckoff, Laura Crandon and the Psychic collaborated with me, next morning, in listing the episodes of this period. The balance of the record for this date consists of this listing, as edited by me on that same day, and with no subsequent alteration. Inasmuch as this was the only means of obtaining a record after the failure of the dictaphone, the brackets are omitted from the moment when the failure occurred. It is believed that the following account is substantially complete. I relied upon the list and upon the memories of the other sitters only for the episodes by title; for the details I was able in every instance to fall back upon vivid recollection of the terms of my lost dictation of the preceding evening. No attempt is here made to preserve the sequence of events.

Luminous needle from S_1: This moved about freely on T, and dropped to the floor and was recovered by Walter at least once and probably several times. It was inserted in the end of the U-tube as though in an attempt to move the marble with it, but it was not nearly long enough for this. A long and complicated series of manipulations occurred, similar to the "scientific research," so called by Walter.[5] The needle would appear in air, before and close to the face of a sitter, usually Bird or Hoagland; this sitter would so report; the needle would then be withdrawn with extreme rapidity and brought to a similar position with reference to another sitter. The transfer was always visible, over a definite path in the room;[6] but the rapidity and accuracy of execution were extreme.[7]

DM: More or less action throughout, which cannot be recalled in any great detail. One important episode consisted of a tug-of-war between Hoagland and Walter. Hoagland hung on more successfully than is usual in these affrays; but Walter, as usual, finally twisted rather than pulled DM out of his grasp. Hoagland estimated the force exerted here as 30–40 pounds, at least. In the final jerk out of his grasp, DM flew in the direction of the space between Bird and Crandon. At the moment when the dictaphone stoppage was discovered, the stage had just been set for an apparent tug-of-war with Bird, but Walter suspended the séance on Damon's announcement of the inoperative dictaphone.

U: Picked up bodily many times and waved in air; numerous sitters touched with this, as with DM; taken into cabinet or outside cabinet, at Psychic's right, and rapped smartly against cabinet walls; finally turned upside down, spilling marble out on floor. We have here an excellent example of Walter's refusal to abide by rules which we may make governing what he is to do and how he is to do it. The apparatus was restored to initial position on T and there found at the end of the séance, minus the marble, which was recovered from the floor next day.

D: Extreme freedom of motion, horizontally and in tilting sense, as it lay on T or in pan of S_1, with or without Hoagland's hand over or on it, and with or without luminous needle on it. Much of this occurred with visible silhouetting; and on one such occasion Bird saw distinctly an outline as of claw, the effect being quite that of the superfluous claw part way up a dog's leg, or the long, claw-like finger-nails affected by some persons. A long and elaborate episode occurred in the space between T, Bird and De Wyckoff,

[5] *M. M.*, pp. 199–200.
[6] Excluding any thought of apports, four-dimensional work, etc.—J. M. B.
[7] *M. M.*, pp. 212–214.

quite inaccessible for normal activity by Psychic or Crandon. D moved up and down repeatedly, from a position sometimes apparently on the floor, sometimes apparently on SAB beside De Wyckoff, to a position in the air level with the top of T. In vertical travel, D usually stood more or less on edge; at rest, usually horizontal, though sometimes on edge or curled. Repeatedly as it descended on or near SAB the latter would ring. The visual impression of course was that D had been used to ring SAB; but D is not stiff enough for this, so it can apparently only have been carried in the same X employed to depress the SAB contact. With the possible exception of the needle manipulation, this elaborate motion of D was the most brilliant of the unrecorded portion of the séance. The distance from the Psychic's right shoulder to the region in which it occurred was found to be about 60 inches.

SAB: Rung early in the "lost" portion of the séance, independently of D. Walter announced that the spring needed adjustment. Bird on investigation in the dark was inclined to agree with him that while the bell rang as usual, the board did not return to position with its usual snappiness, indicating need for spring adjustment. A little later Walter stated that he had thrown the contact board clear over backward, wide open and free of the spring; Bird and Hoagland investigated in the dark and found this correct.

Cabinet: Suffered numerous violent shocks at one stage. Bird is inclined to think it was shaken without material displacement or deformation; the Psychic next morning expressed feeling that it had closed in on her more or less.

Experiment immediately after the séance indicated that the Psychic could not, with her feet, reach SAB in its place near De Wyckoff.

At one point (Bird believes while DM was being moved about near the floor and occasionally touching him) Bird and Crandon reported what, in Bird's case at least, certainly was not contact by any material object known to be present. This came under Bird's left knee, and was sufficiently vigorous to give a definite impression through his clothing. Bird can best describe it as similar to a large, stiff, rough brush. As usual, this is merely the nearest one can come to a description in terms of known objects, and is not to be taken as completely descriptive. This particular contact was the most difficult to characterize that Bird had at this date experienced through this mediumship.

At the end of the sitting the Psychic registered 143 pounds on the same scales used initially. Bird suspects error in making the

initial reading; this the Psychic strongly doubts. Walter suggests that she stood off-center on the scales first time; and in fact 140 pounds is the lightest weight ever got for her to this date by Bird, supporting one or the other of these assumptions.

There was frequent verification and reporting of "Controls OK" during the "lost" portion of the sitting, but of course these reports cannot now be directly associated with the accompanying phenomena. Bird feels that there was no pertinent lapse in control.

Séance of June 20th, 1925; 10 Lime Street, Boston, Mass. The old dictaphone was now replaced by a new instrument, received only this day from the manufacturers. There were in the house, as a measure of economy and of safety against shortage, several cylinders carrying a few turns of record from old Harvard sittings; and it was agreed to use up one of these first. Damon employed the listening side of the machine to verify that he was starting beyond the point where the previous dictation stopped. It is suspected that he forgot to turn the machine back to the talking side; for though the first record was fed properly through to its end, it turned out to be totally blank. The second record was OK. The discovery of deficient recording was not made until the afternoon of the 22nd, when Bird had his first opportunity to transcribe the records. It was then too late to supplement the missing portion of the record from memory as successfully as had been done for the sitting of the 19th. The account of the starting arrangements and the apparatus present is of course complete; following that, we have, however, only a very sketchy outline of the first portion of the séance action. In view of the character of the record, brackets are omitted from the present text until the dictated portion is reached. No material alteration has been made in the text for the earlier portion, as prepared on June 22nd, 1925.

Circle formed at 9:35, the delay being caused by a thunderstorm; and séance held in total darkness. Order of circle, clockwise: Psychic, Richardson, Code, Hoagland, De Wyckoff, Bird, Crandon, Psychic again. Damon at the dictaphone, outside the circle on the sofa as on the 19th. Also on this sofa were Laura Crandon and Mrs. Richardson. Luminous controls of Psychic's wrists, ankles and forehead. Continuous victrola: record "Out of the Dusk to You." Psychic clothed in robe and slippers (*not* stockings) only, under Mrs. Richardson's supervision and responsibility. Nothing was said about the change from stockings to slippers, or the reason therefor; it was doubtless a reflection of the procedure used at the Harvard sittings, now going on.

Apparatus present:

S_2: Larger and heavier platform scales than those of preceding evening; it was, in fact, Margery's bath-room scales, of very sturdy construction and giving readings up to 200 pounds. The dial is horizontal, behind the pan, rather than vertical, in front of it, as was the case with the postal scales (S_1) used on the 19th. The needle was marked with luminous paint, and 10-pound multiples were similarly marked around the dial, the even 50's being given longer strokes to aid in rapid reading. The S_2 unit was initially on the east end of the table.

T, C: The usual Lime Street séance table and cabinet.

SAB: Scientific American electrical bell-box; initially in pan of S_2.

DB: Brass dinner-bell, ordinary clapper type, suspended from the ceiling light-fixture, and hence located, in a horizontal sense, at the center of the room, somewhat beyond the northwest corner of T. It hung very high. Initially there was attached to it a short cord, at the end of which, high enough to be out of reach of any person present while seated, there was tied:

CP: Clothespin carrying a daub of luminous paint. After Walter spoke, he expressed dissatisfaction with his "power" for the evening, and had red light turned on while Crandon lengthened the cord and lowered CP. This process was gone through with a third time before Walter indicated ability to reach CP; and in this way some ten minutes of the sitting was used up, with no action.

D: Luminous doughnut. Initially outside cabinet (east side), on floor as usual.

LM, DM: Luminous and dark megaphones, former as on the 18th, and latter as on 19th. On floor, east of cabinet, initially.

After CP was adjusted to Walter's satisfaction, phenomena began. SAB rang several times on S_2, with varying increases in dial readings, from a vanishing minimum to something like 30 pounds. On this S_2, with its coarser graduation and heavier action, it is possible to ring the bell by pressure on the contact board without producing any visible reaction by the needle. It is believed that Walter did this at least once, but recollection is not positive.

Walter ordered SAB removed, and proceeded to work with the bare S_2. For some time he delivered pressure or blows, at his pleasure, with varying registration from zero to 40 pounds. Bird is

under the impression that once or twice a powerful blow was delivered without any effect upon the needle, indicating delivery of the blow on the frame rather than on the pan. S_2 was tilted freely in all directions, with the ostensible purpose of allowing all sitters better opportunity to read the dials. Then over a considerable period of time there occurred lifting of the S_2 unit from T and dropping back, sometimes one side or one corner only leaving T, sometimes the entire unit; likewise with this there was mingled a certain amount of free levitation in the air. The net weight of the S_2 outfit is about 20 pounds; it is to date unquestionably the heaviest object which has been lifted clearly and cleanly into the air in any of Margery's séances. Whether more force is required for its levitation than for the cabinet disruptions, etc., of 1924, would be a matter of conjecture; the answer would probably be a negative.

For a long time Walter played in one way or another with CP, not alone pulling it to ring DB, but also waving CP freely in air without attention to the bell. At one stage he had Hoagland take CP in his hand; and while he was so holding it, Hoagland reported that it was pulled and jerked up and down as well as sideways. With visible motion of CP as the apparent means, Walter rang DB in time with his whistling.

Considerable use was made of LM, and a tug-of-war with Hoagland was unusually good. Hoagland reported that as he struggled to hold LM with both hands, it was forced up and down, back and forth, and across, in all three dimensions of space, apparently at Walter's will.

In ringing SAB, which he did with considerable freedom, Walter employed the telegraph code, and twice he attempted to ring the letter of which a sitter was thinking. One of these experiments, (Hoagland collaborating) was completely successful, without complication or qualification. The second time, Code, in attempting to think of the Morse "D," had actually in mind, through error, the dot-dash sequence of the Morse "G"; and Walter rang the "G" on the bell. In neither experiment was there any vocal indication, any whispering to another sitter, etc. etc., so that there was no check upon the collaborator's admission of success; likewise there was correspondingly little play for any explanation on a basis of hyperesthesia.

Control was frequently verified and reported as OK during the part of the séance for which the dictated record is lost, but of course these reports cannot now be associated with the accompanying phenomena. "Control OK" for this evening included:

normal hand control throughout the circle; extra control of the Crandon-Psychic link by Bird, reaching across Crandon, as on 19th; foot control throughout the circle except on either side of the Psychic, as on 19th; visibility of all five luminous controls, the responsibility and the reporting technique here being substantially as on the 19th. The freedom of the Psychic's feet and legs from other than luminous controls is chargeable to Walter's general dislike for personal control at these points.

This brings us to the part of the séance recorded dictaphonically, which is transcribed verbatim, with parenthetic interpolations by Bird, as usual. Dictation mainly by Bird, with assistance from other sitters.

10:08. Hoagland and Code report cold winds on the backs of their hands during these touches [the reference is of course to the immediately preceding dictation, which is lost]. Hoagland reports that the object touching him seemed to have fine creases on its surface.

10:09. D moves with visible silhouetting of X; control OK. D moves repeatedly with visible X [silhouetted]. D continues motion on top of T, [with] silhouetting.

10:12. Wide motion of D, with silhouetting [of X]. All motion so far has been confined to [the region on and immediately over] the top of T. Bird now holding D horizontally above T; Bird's hand is touched, with visible silhouetting of X against D. Bird feels a contact on D, which is taken from his hand after considerable effort [the difficulty being in getting hold of D, not in overcoming resistance from Bird or anything of that sort], and placed upon CP held by Hoagland. [Doubtless the missing portion of the record would have made it appear that Hoagland had had one hand on CP, under adequate maintenance of control, for some time].

10:13. CP with D held close to Bird by Hoagland, at Walter's instructions. D falls on T, dim side up. Hoagland releases CP, [which swings a bit, pendulum-wise, and then slowly comes to normal rest on its suspension].

10:15. Crandon touched by DM [identification of this object by Crandon, supported by the sound made when the record continues:] which is brought out over T and dropped on its far side. SAB rings [on the floor, somewhere in the neighborhood of De Wyckoff.] Control of Crandon OK, and foot control around SAB verified. C heard to slide; Psychic reports she is [being] closed in. Control of Crandon's head on Bird's shoulder is established [and continued throughout subsequent C manipula-

tion], following which repeated violent disturbances of C are heard. Other controls all OK.

10:16. The Psychic reports continued pinching in of C. Violent noises continue from that quarter. The Psychic reports pressure from behind on C. The noises continue.

10:17. The Psychic reports that she is entirely out of C, violent motion of which is indicated by noises. Crandon and Bird report breezes from direction of C.

10:18. T moves; C appears to lunge violently, apparently over a large distance. [The very noncommittal statements about C in this dictation are the fruit of previous experience that extraordinary commotion in that area may correspond to a shockingly small displacement of C.] Crandon and Bird report more breezes from direction of C. Richardson reports [northwest] edge of C considerably moved back.

10:19. Extremely cold breezes from direction of C reported by Bird. C continues in [apparently] violent motion. Walter scratches on it at Hoagland's request. Walter volunteers to rap on C, and does so. Control OK, including Crandon's head. Scratching continues, and more straining of C.

10:20. Continued motion of C. Code reports that for a moment here, C was sufficiently far back for him to see the collection of illuminated apparatus on the floor; [ordinarily this is quite hidden from a sitter in Code's position, C intervening]. Crandon reports being pushed out of the way [of moving C] toward Bird. Bird is touched repeatedly on the [left] knee; he experienced also a scraping down the [left] calf. [The sensation here was very similar to that got from vigorous rubbing by a rubber pad with projecting rubber rods or spikes, which Bird has met as washcloth or massage pad, if not as both.] Crandon is pushed violently against Bird. Controls OK.

10:21. Code recovers LM [without sacrifice of control] and places it on T vertically. LM shifts [almost at once] into horizontal position, floats above T, passing between heads of Crandon and the Psychic without striking either. It passes [completely] out of the circle, [behind Crandon], and [comes] back [in circle] again [by passing] between Crandon and Bird. LM [is then] thrown violently, high in air, and comes down [obviously] free. LM is rattled violently around on the floor, in the space between Crandon and C; then comes up through the space between the arms of Crandon and Bird [on the one side], and T [on the other]; balances above T momentarily; shoots high in air; [then apparently] falls free. [There is no problem involved here, of the

possible penetration of matter by the terminal supporting LM; if this originated anywhere on Psychic's frontal aspect, and is sufficiently flexible to dodge the heads of Crandon and Bird by curving upward in passing them, it could handle LM as observed, without fouling any physical object in the room.]

10:23. Walter apparently recovering LM from under T. Richardson reports touch on finger as though by some object, which is now held against Psychic's hand by his ring finger.

10:24. LM continues violent motion on the floor under T, pushing SAB against Bird's [right] foot. LM rises partly from floor on side [of T] remote from the Psychic, touching several sitters. Code at Walter's instruction recovers LM and places it vertically on T [as at the beginning of the 10:21 entry]. As he took hold [of LM during or at end of its rising movement just chronicled], he could feel that Walter still had [hold of] the other end. [After Code has placed it on T], LM moves about T, first retaining vertical position, then horizontally; then floats; passes between Richardson and Psychic, and falls on the floor outside cabinet. Now 10:25, [at the end of this action].

10:29. After some conversation with Walter, lights on, C found in normal position, save for slight displacement backward. [The next entry recalls that during the "lost" part of the record, Walter had put some object in Richardson's hand, stating that this was a "present" for him. There was some talk by Walter about this present, but just how serious it was and in just what terms is not remembered. There certainly was nothing particularly evidential in connection with the character of this "present" as now determined, else this would have been retained in memory.] Richardson's "present" is found to be a piece of wire. [This was not identified as from any of the séance apparatus; its source remains permanently unknown.]

It is hardly necessary for me to comment extensively upon the above. Any reader of experience will be able to isolate numerous incidents of considerable permanent weight in the direction of validity; and of course the sittings are not free from elements which one must question keenly. Indeed, a séance without its suspicious episodes would be, *in toto*, an object of grave suspicion; for the phenomena do not occur that way. The enthusiastic advocate of validity will see much to rejoice him in the records, but, if he preserve his mental balance, nothing which he may put forward as negating the generalities of pp. 239 and 266. We are not looking for a single episode that

will validate the mediumship; and we find none. We do add a considerable breadth and depth of incident, and I think we considerably reduce the small probability that all these phenomena can be satisfactorily explained as due to fraud. To hope for more, especially out of three sittings, would be unduly ambitious. Particularly, we must not regard the dictaphonic recording as an established failure because of the rough spots remaining to be smoothed out in its operation; nor may we feel that it is justified as a permanent procedure until we have gone through a set of three sittings without accident. We have got, as a result of these three séances, just where any rational prophet would have expected us to get.

Following my three "official" Society sittings of June 18th–20th, I was to have resumed this study in two weeks. The excitement ensuing upon the events of June 29th and 30th,[8] however, combined with the social demands of the July Fourth holiday upon the Crandons, made it expedient to skip this period; so I found myself again in the Lime Street séance room after four weeks rather than after two.

---

[8] See Chapter IX.

CHAPTER XIV

A.S.P.R. Séances: Second Series

Séance Records and Comment

By the Editor

The series of sittings starting July 16th, 1925, followed very closely on the promulgation of the major hypothesis of hypnotic fraud by the Code-Hoagland group. Code, at least, was willing to go on sitting for me in the face of this hypothesis. I found the expediencies to be against the inclusion of him or Hoagland, and I was left with no time to take up seriously the problem of replacing them —the emergency burst at the last moment. Mr. and Mrs. Willett Hubbs, of Niagara Falls, were available, together with Dr. Richardson, to make up a circle of five sitters plus one dictaphone operator. In spite of the fact that Hubbs is Margery's nephew, this seemed the best procedure at my disposal. He is Secretary of the Niagara Falls Trust Co.

A further complication lay in Walter's expressed desire to bring the phenomena into red light to a greater degree than had heretofore been done, and in Margery's pronounced endorsement of such program as a means of silencing further criticism and controversy. It was my own impression that this would probably involve a good deal of preliminary sitting in darkness or partially in darkness, under a procedure in the main similar to that formerly termed "incubation" by Comstock. Anticipating that on this account no final results would be attained in any direction in this particular series of sittings, the opportunity seemed a favorable one to impose upon Walter the identically same circle for several consecutive evenings. This is something for which he continually asks and which he hardly ever gets.

As it turned out, there was total darkness and continuous trance throughout the three sittings of this series, and the phenomena turned, from the telekinetic ones got by me on my previous visit, somewhat in the direction of the teleplastics presented to Dingwall in January, 1925; though with teleplasm of a type sharply divergent from that shown to Dingwall. Walter was so pleased with his own progress in this direction that he looked definitely forward to more of the same

sort of thing, certainly with photography and probably with a good deal of red light, on my next visit. He consented to the presence of melted paraffin in the séance room each night of the present series, and several times he seemed to indicate that only the oppressive heat kept him from working with it. Weather Bureau records show temperatures of 74, 78 and 70 degrees at ten[1] o'clock on the three evenings. The séance-room thermometer was broken and I found no opportunity to replace it, but the room temperature was each night in the neighborhood of 90 degrees, with considerable humidity. Walter at one point stated that his recourse to trance was not through choice or through the inherent necessities of the phenomena, but arose out of his efforts to deal with the hot sticky weather. That the trance as well as the shift in the character of the phenomena was his own motion rather than mine I need not emphasize. I have a slight preference, in this mediumship, for the tranceless sitting, since I believe the medium's conscious observation of the phenomena to be a factor tending to her better morale and better physical condition. And inasmuch as I was engaged primarily in an attempt to strengthen the presumption of validity, I had a very heavy preference, at this time and place, for the telekinetic phenomena. I would not at all underestimate the significance of the teleplasmics or the necessity for a long and careful study of that side of the mediumship; but in precipitating me into such study at this time, Walter was in my judgment getting the cart before the horse. But I did not then and do not yet know any feasible method for holding Walter upon a given task when his inclinations lean toward another.

Throughout the present three evenings, I was driven to constant rubbing and scratching of my face by a sensation different from anything I have ever experienced through meteorological conditions alone; this I thought might correspond to Margery's "cobwebs."[1a]

The program was to have Hubbs at the dictaphone. While instructing him in its operation prior to the séance, I accidentally upset the machine. Carelessness in inspecting it after restoring it to even keel opened the way to its unobserved inoperativeness during the séance. The electrical circuits were intact, so that the cylinder fed through as it should; but the mechanical connection between mouthpiece and microphone was interrupted, so that there was no

[1] Daylight saving time; nine o'clock standard time.
[1a] *M. M.*, p. 193.

recording of the dictation spoken into the former. It is to be emphasized that failure of the dictaphone on this evening was due to causes that were definitely known, and definitely known to be normal, even though its misconduct during June was not yet wholly accounted for on normal grounds.

In the absence of the dictaphone record, I reconstructed the séance action next morning, with assistance from the other sitters. The sequence of events was slow for a Margery sitting, and I am confident that this sequence as well as the value of the major events themselves is preserved.

Séance of July 16th, 1925: 10 Lime Street. Record made from memory on morning of July 17th, by Bird with assistance of other sitters; parenthetic interpolations therefore superfluous, the material which would ordinarily be found therein comprising part of the record itself.

Circle formed at 9:15 and séance held in total darkness throughout. Order of circle, clockwise: Psychic, Richardson, Mrs. Hubbs, Bird, Crandon, Psychic again. Hubbs at dictaphone, on sofa, facing circle. Margery wore bathrobe and slippers only, being examined and put in them by Mrs. Hubbs. Five luminous controls were in use on her ankles, wrists and head. It is a matter of observation that on a hot, sweaty night, the Psychic's perspiration saturates these and, particularly in the case of the ankle bands, lowers their visibility. On the present occasion, though this happened, all five bands remained visible to some sitters throughout. For the visibility of the foot control, responsibility devolved largely upon Dr. Richardson; Bird in particular, owing to the smallness of the circle, found the table almost always between his eyes and the Psychic's feet.

Throughout the sitting and without exception, hand control at all junctions other than the Crandon-Psychic link was uninterrupted. When Bird used his right hand for manipulation of the apparatus, Mrs. Hubbs transferred her hand to his wrist and went with him. Crandon several times left his seat in search of apparatus. Usually this occurred in red light, with the Psychic's free hand visible. Several times, however, it took place in darkness. In such intervals there was no action; and the first such interval did not come until after the brilliant display of X (Walter's terminal) against D (luminous doughnut).

Repeatedly at critical moments Bird was given additional control of Crandon's two hands and Margery's right; frequently,

of Crandon's head as well. The loss of the dictaphonic record makes it impossible to connect such control with the precise phenomena accompanying it. Bird is positive that with one or two exceptions, the full additional control prevailed at every episode of moment after the conclusion of the X-D display. Taken severely on their merits, all these episodes under the extended control are not of equal value; for at some times Bird is better able than at others to verify absolutely that the two hands temporarily controlled by him have physical continuity with Crandon's and Margery's shoulders. On no occasion did he have any active fear that either hand was not what it purported to be; but absolute certainty here is a function of the time available, which in turn varies with the nature of the phenomenon of the moment.

Shortly after the light went out, Crandon reported sound as of rubbing against C walls. Not heard by anybody else, this provoked a question addressed to Walter, who replied with whistle as the first indication of his presence sensible to all. There ensued considerable whistling and talking over an interval of perhaps ten minutes. A sitter suggested that the Psychic might go into trance. She expressed unwillingness, but within a very short time Crandon reported the trance.[1a] At the instant it was not observable by the others but soon became so. The thrashing with the feet was less pronounced than in Bird's previous experience with the trance; the movements of head and body were much more free. There was unusually frequent vocalization of the petulant, almost whiny complaint: "Don't feel good, at all." Vocal effects in general were more notable than usual, save for snoring, which was almost entirely absent. There was a deal of puffing, blowing, snorting and smacking.

At one point, Bird and Mrs. Hubbs were in the act of reporting touches on their knees, when Walter spoke up to say that it was the Psychic's feet. The ankle controls were invisible to Bird and could not be brought into his field of vision because of their position relative to the table; other sitters however were able to verify Walter's statement.

So far as these particular touches went, Bird could not have made a positive verdict of normality. Later he was touched often and freely pushed by what he took to be unmistakably the feet.

[1a] It is only fair to point out the complete consistency of this chronicle with the theory that the mediumship is of hypnotic origin. Code, in reading the *M. M.* book, found its earlier chapters describing the beginnings of the mediumship, and particularly the beginnings of the trance habit, brilliantly in line with his own hypotheses.—J. M. B.

The first, and ambiguous, touches consisted in a stroking of the knee, much as is done by the teleplastic terminals; this was firm and clean-cut and seemed intentionally directed. The sensation was so little that of a human contact that Bird infers the slippers to have been on the feet. The incident strongly emphasizes that for dark-room touches, we are much more dependent upon certainty of control than upon the sensations reported. It is also worthy of note that Walter made no attempt to claim these touches, though inquiry was so couched that he could apparently have done so with no risk.

After the onset of the trance D was placed on T. There ensued some delay, with instructions from Walter several times to remove it or turn it over temporarily because of its extreme brightness. Finally there occurred a series of dark silhouettings against the bright ground, lasting perhaps twenty minutes in all.

First the outline was that of a single finger, followed immediately by that of a badly formed hand. Bird commented upon this bad formation; a change of shape at once occurred, best described by suggesting that two fingers, which had been lying together, were now separated. After this had occurred Bird still saw but three digits. On his remarking this, a fourth at once moved into the visible field, coming from off the D at Bird's side; after which a thumb moved into visibility from the side remote from Bird, and again in a way suggesting that it had been there continuously. Mrs. Hubbs and other sitters at Bird's right could see this before Bird could.

Some sitters thought the hand a miniature: Walter and others disputed this. Bird later found by experiment that one tends to underestimate the size of D itself in the dark, and with it that of the silhouetting object. The hand was doubtless of adult size. It is hereinafter referred to either as X or as H—the latter when emphasis on its hand-like appearance is desired.

Mostly this object lay motionless across the D, sometimes for minutes at a time. There were occasional changes of position; some of these gave the impression of a change in size and shape as well, but Bird is confident that all could be interpreted as changes of position. Several times, usually in response to Bird's remark calling attention to lack of mobility, H would move about carrying D with it. Such motion was totally lacking in preference for any particular sense or even any particular line. Several complete or three-quarter circles were described with all freedom, the rotation of H in these being always or almost always counter-clockwise. As climax to one such episode, D was picked up and

waved vigorously in the faces of Bird and Mrs. Hubbs, coming about as close as is possible without actual contact; then dropped on T in front of Mrs. Hubbs. Bird and Crandon both recall that at this moment the extra controls prevailed. The description of the silhouetting against D makes it plain that if this be fitted into any picture of fraud, the Psychic's own hand is needed to produce it. Nothing is remembered definitely which would operate to the categorical exclusion of the claim that at some moment during the subsequent demonstration a foot had been substituted for this hand.

During manipulation of D or at some other moment, Crandon and Richardson in rapid succession reported a passing touch from X, flicked across the tips of their fingers.

At one stage Bird was permitted to touch the teleplasmic hand with the back of his own hand, as the former lay over the D. The dominant sensations were of cold and smoothness. The first is conventional and needs no comment. On the second Bird insists strongly: this was not a skin-covered object; it gave an impression of slickness quite foreign to skin.

After the removal of D, the Dingwall mechanical bell-box (DB) with luminous striking plate[2] was placed on T. H was brilliantly silhouetted against the striking plate, in fuller outline than against D; for this plate is a full circle, five inches in diameter, luminously painted over its entire area. H was now plainly seen to be the normal size of an adult hand. Bird thought it impossible to state whether it simulated a right hand, palm down, or a left, palm up. Other sitters thought they could observe curvature of the fingers concave downwardly, calling for the former alternative. H moved visibly and audibly on its luminous ground, and several times rang the bell.

The coördinate board (CB) was next placed by the sitters on T. This consists of a luminous network of one-inch squares, ten by twelve, painted on a cardboard somewhat larger than necessary to accommodate it. H was silhouetted several times against this, giving maximum length of six inches and width of four to five. Then Bird was instructed by Walter to hold CB in the air above T. He did this, about eight inches from the table-top. H was then silhouetted against CB, moved visibly, struck CB audibly several times, and finally pushed the latter off Bird's hand, away from the Psychic.

---

[2] See page 117.

The hole bell-box (HB), of new design[3] by Code, was now introduced. With this on T, Walter asked that the luminous holes be covered. There was considerable fumbling and experiment by the sitters before this could be done satisfactorily. One arrangement that covered the entire top of the box with a large cardboard sheet, Walter rejected. The arrangement finally reached involved cutting a strip of this cardboard, laying this over the row of holes, and fastening it at either end with thumbtacks. It was inferred by the sitters at the time, and later verified by Bird, that no normal access could be got through the holes to the contact board without displacing this cardboard shield sufficiently to make the luminous paint around some of the holes visible to some of the sitters. Nevertheless, with the card in place, Walter repeatedly rang the bell without the slightest glimmer of luminosity.[4] On at least one of these episodes there prevailed the full additional control of the Psychic's right and Crandon's left hands by Bird.

Inasmuch as the Scientific American and the original Code bell-boxes were in the room, it is necessary to record that, owing mainly to the different quality of the wood, all three give different and easily recognizable notes. The ringing here was distinctly that of HB and was distinctly on T. After ten or a dozen episodes of this, Richardson and Bird were invited by Walter to put their hands on the cardboard, one at either end. The bell gave one brief peal under these conditions, stopping as though the circuit had been interrupted. Walter then reported the bell inoperative; and sounds were repeatedly heard as of the contact sheets striking, without ringing.[5] At the end of the séance Bird was about to examine HB, expecting to find a wire off a terminal; but it was now found to be wholly in order and operative.[5a]

The Psychic was weighed before and after the séance. Pains were taken to prevent the recording of any normal loss of weight, the bathrobe, which would have taken up any perspiration, going on the scales with her. Her weight was the same before and after.

At a moment when Bird's head was far forward over T, ex-

---

[3] See pp. 123–5 and 128–9.

[4] See page 128. In view of what is there told, it should be stated that no sparking was reported by any of the sitters at the present occasion. While we were of course looking for none, since we supposed the box to be rung by access in some way to its interior, I am very certain indeed that had there been a spark I should have seen it.—J. M. B.

[5] See page 124.

[5a] A paragraph discussing the construction of the HB, and speculating as to Walter's means of ringing it here, is omitted in view of the fullness with which the point is covered on pp. 123–9.—J. M. B.

amining H on D, but from one side so that it could not have obscured D from Psychic's seat, Walter made remark indicating knowledge of Bird's position. As against the idea of coincidence or inference, Bird urges that this was the one moment during the séance when his head was really out and over the table to a degree surpassing what might have been looked for from one intent on observation of the action.

During a red-light interval, while Crandon was searching for apparatus, Walter whistled sharply from C in response to Bird's remark. No sitter was watching the Psychic's lips at the moment.

The séance was terminated by unexpected emergence from trance at 10:35 followed by Walter's good-night.

Séance of July 17th, 1925; 10 Lime Street, Boston. Dictaphonic record, transcribed verbatim, with parenthetic elaboration by Bird. Original dictation by Bird, with assistance of other sitters, relayed into instrument by Hubbs.

Circle formed at 9:15 P.M. and séance held in total darkness throughout. Order of circle, clockwise: Psychic, Richardson, Mrs. Hubbs, Bird, Crandon, Psychic again. [Hubbs outside circle, on sofa in northeast corner of room, at dictaphone. Margery clothed in robe and slippers only, under supervision of Mrs. Hubbs. Crandon at his own request was "frisked" before séance by Bird, with negative result. Five luminous controls as heretofore. Continuous victrola, record "Out of the Dusk to You." Various apparatus, none new, present in space east of cabinet. Following previous night's demonstration with HB, this had been more carefully prepared, the cardboard strip having been put in place in daylight and tacked firmly down.]

9:18. Walter whistle.

9:25 [the interval having been well filled with conversation from Walter]. At Walter's request and without interrupting control, Bird removed the original Code bell-box [from its initial place on T, at side remote from Psychic, to place on the floor, between his own feet. It remained here and played no part in the séance]. HB remained on T, [where it had been initially, along the side next the Psychic. No other apparatus was on T initially].

9:26. HB turned end for end by Bird, at Walter's instructions. [No interruption of control. Box had stood with padlocked side away from Psychic, in accordance with usual conventions of this mediumship; it now stood with padlock toward her.

Bird was aware of this; Walter was asked which way HB now stood and demonstrated that he, too, knew.]

9:30. Crandon announces trance. [The other sitters were unable to verify this at the moment, but did so very soon, before any further phenomena occurred. Trance very little vocal—much less than night before. Considerable motion of feet; at times these were on Richardson's knees, or in contact with shins and knees of Bird and Mrs. Hubbs, or in sharp motion under T. The luminous foot controls were Richardson's particular responsibility. They were visible to him practically throughout, and always to Mrs. Hubbs when not to him. The whole trance effect was much more peaceful than the night before, though Walter complained several times of the excessive heat. The paraffin, melted in a pail, was in C, as the night before, through Crandon's hope of getting molds of hand; but tonight there was a bucket of ice water behind it, for Walter to use if he would, and to maintain a lower cabinet temperature. Headband visible to some sitter at all times; luminous control of right wrist not uniformly or constantly visible, so control of this hand must be specified at critical moments.]

9:30. HB rang on T; no luminosity visible anywhere [this of course refers, here and later, to luminous marks on top of box and not to luminous controls].

9:31. Two long peals from HB. Richardson, with head far in cabinet, and Bird, equally remote (and equally low) on other side of T, both fail to see any luminosity.[6]

9:32. Walter rings HB three times to Bird's order; no luminosity visible. One long peal follows, [of Walter's own motion]. Walter says he does not use the holes, that we may seal them with sealing wax next time.

9:35. In response to Bird's request, Walter rings bell three times, shorter and more closely spaced than before. No visible luminosity. HB rings four short peals; then [after brief interval, and both times on Walter's motion] six peals of varying lengths. It is suggested [by some sitter] that this is an attempt at the Richardson family signal; Walter immediately gives this in better form.

---

[6] It was of course ultimately indicated, almost to the point of absolute proof, that Walter rang the bell without use of any means of entry to the box—such entry not being necessary! Nevertheless, it seems desirable to leave the record as it was written when this was not known, rather than make any deletion of matter which now turns out to have no particular point. The references listed on p. 189 will enable the reader to trace the complete history of the blind ringing by the Hole Bell-box.—J. M. B.

9:36. One very long peal, followed by a series of seven or eight very short ones. Then two long and two short, alternating.

9:37. With Bird's forearm lying the entire length of the box, on top [no sacrifice of control], Walter gave one long peal on the bell. Bird felt [what he described at the time, for brevity's sake, as] vibrations of lid of box, immediately prior to ringing. [An accurate description would be as follows: partly through hearing and partly through feeling the jar or shock, Bird got impression as of light tapping by fingernails, which because of the muffled effect he confidently placed inside the box.] This experiment was suggested by Walter; but at a moment when Bird was revolving in his mind the possibility of making some sort of contact between his person and T or HB, for the very purpose of seeking some such experience as actually ensued.

9:40. [Over the impatient protest of Crandon, on the ground that it was "leading nowhere"], Bird's experiment of just now was repeated by Richardson; but he reported no sensation save the ringing of the bell. [Walter seemed anxious to have the matter cleared up; with his consent] Bird now placed an ear close down in the angle between T and HB, in hope of again hearing the effect; but he heard and felt only the ringing of the bell.

9:41. [Walter continued to press this matter, apparently determined to get a reconciliation of some sort.] With one hand under each end of HB [no loss of control], supporting it thus off T, Bird [experienced two episodes of bell-ringing, separated by some seconds. He] reported that the first time he sensed no effect other than the ringing. On repetition, he felt pressure [on his hands] as bell rang, [duplicating previous experience in holding other bell-boxes while Walter rang them]. But the attempt to feel vibrations [internal shock, or anything of the sort], was again a failure. Throughout all these bell-ringing episodes [certainly since 9:37 if not from an earlier moment], there was no visible luminosity; and hand control was specifically verified by all around circle [but Psychic's right hand by Crandon alone]. Psychic's headband was visible to Bird and the foot controls to Mrs. Hubbs.

[Reports of visible foot control, unless the reverse is specified, always imply that for each foot a single band is seen, and not two bands or a full circle or ellipse, as should be the case if the band were off the ankle. The sitters making this observation, of course, are seldom if ever able to judge whether the spatial relationship between the two bands is such that one foot may be thought of as covering the band that has been detached from the other; or

whether any other means of concealing such removal (as with a slipper) has been put into effect. This inability arises not out of shortage of observing time, or out of any state of mind unfavorable for observation; but out of the fact that no accurate judgment can be formed of the distances from the eye to small luminous objects visible in darkness, and hence that no verdict can be reached as to how they would appear if a normal view of them were afforded, in normal perspective.]

9:45. Bird out of control while removing HB from T [and placing it between rheostat and fireplace]. Hand control of Crandon and Mrs. Hubbs on Bird's knees here. Doughnut (D, luminous) secured by Crandon and placed on T by Bird. [In this interval Crandon's left hand out of control; no report about Psychic's right.] Walter very particular about precise location of D on T. [Commenting on this dictation, he said it didn't really make any difference; he just enjoyed making us follow precise and arbitrary instructions.]

9:47. H [Walter's "hand"] descended on D with a flop, audible to all. Extra control of Psychic's right hand and both Crandon's, by Bird, immediately following this, and control by Richardson of Psychic's left [as always], demonstrating that hand on D was none of these four. At Bird's request, Walter moved both the Psychic's feet, demonstrating that it was neither of them, [nor anything carried by one of them. Having asked for this, Bird was in position for precise observation. Both ankle bands were low down and far apart, making it out of the question for both to be on the same limb. In addition, they did not move quite simultaneously; and one came forward away from the Psychic while the other moved partly sideways]. Slight movement of hand with D [after above observations in control, and after Bird had restored his attention to table-top]. Bird was [here] permitted to touch H quite extensively with back of his hand. Sensation of smoothness duplicated that of night before. Sensation of coolness present, but Bird believes not quite so cool as night before. Walter assents to this.

9:51. Complicated series of movements [going on for several minutes before and after dictation] by individual fingers of H. Sometimes one finger moved while others remained motionless; sometimes two or even more fingers moved simultaneously but independently. Some shifting of H and D on T here.

9:55. Lateral movement of H with D.

10:00. H still silhouetted over D, and at the moment better visible to Bird than at any time since first contact. [Considerable

motion or change of shape, or possibly of both but not necessarily so, going on too slowly for observation on its merits, would be implied by this remark.] Slight movement of fingers now noted. At Walter's suggestion Bird brings his nose very close to H; he reports no odor of any description. To his best judgment, movement by H during this episode indicated that H was actually clear of D in the main, resting only upon its own finger tips [in a fashion strongly suggesting that H was in some sense alive and self-supporting. The major items leading to this conclusion were the curvature of the fingers and the relative speeds, across the luminous ground, of the forward and rear portions of the hand]. H now removed from D.

10:05. D removed by Crandon [no report of his left or Margery's right hands during the interval] and DB placed on T. No interruption of Crandon-Bird control.

10:06. DB moved sharply away from Psychic, across T. T also moved in this same sense. Walter in response to query said he did this teleplastically, and not through the Psychic's feet. These feet [had] both [been] visible to Mrs. Hubbs at the time, [and she reported that they had been at rest]. Immediately following, a hand was silhouetted against the luminous plate of DB. Then the tips of several fingers struck the plate and rang the bell several times; then the entire hand with the fingers sharply crooked [did the same]. While Bird maintains control of all three hands [one of Margery and two of Crandon] at his left, H is [again] silhouetted against the plate and rings the bell sharply several times. It withdraws, returns, and repeats the act. In response to speculation about H, Walter displays it repeatedly in whole or in part against the plate, ringing the bell incidentally. The fingers [are now] crooked so as to make it certain to all that it is a right hand, palm down. Richardson verifies Bird's impression that the fingers were decidedly gnarled and knotty.

10:10. Referring to previous reports of right hand, Walter now implies that he will show a left. A hand descends sharply on the plate, ringing the bell repeatedly and visible in various positions. [It is] distinctly a left, palm down.[7] The same knotted effect of the fingers [is observed]. Extra control by Bird of three hands

[7] If it had been the same hand as before, it would have had to be turned palm up to simulate a left. All sitters agreed that there could be no possibility of mistake; although I did not point out to them this significance of the observation. Of course, the same considerations which I have adduced in my parenthetic remarks following the 9:41 dictation might be urged here by the skeptic, as a means of meeting the present observations.—J. M. B.

throughout this; [and foot controls reported specifically visible to Richardson].

10:12. At Walter's request, Crandon removes DB and substitutes CB. This now lies on corner of T nearest Bird [at Psychic's far right]. H descends on CB with fingers wide apart, [a position quite different from any in which it has yet been seen at this seance:] it is eight inches long and about seven wide from tip to tip of outstretched thumb and finger. H moved slightly on CB; it was a left.

10:15. H again silhouetted, momentarily; Walter asks Bird to verify that it is a left. [It was.]

10:16. Right hand silhouetted against CB [still on side of T remote from Psychic], as Walter whistles in cabinet. [No observations since 10:12 as to concavity of fingers or orientation of H.]

10:18. Right hand silhouetted against CB. Bird is invited to hold CB in air, above T. He did this, with his thumb projecting toward the Psychic, from under CB. A right hand was silhouetted against CB; and Bird got a long and persistent contact against the end of his thumb from an object which, save for the cool temperature, might well have been a human hand. While this went on, Bird for some time had had all hands at his left; and Richardson specifically reported control of the Psychic's left hand [which he later stated was with him uninterruptedly throughout the sitting].

10:25. Audible flop on T. Crandon and Richardson report that this is by neither of the Psychic's hands. Audible scratching on T, by request; same report. [No showing against theory that this incident was by a foot.]

10:30. Walter said good night. In response to Crandon's urging, Walter was heard to whisper, incoherently, in red light, by Bird and Mrs. Hubbs. No one able to see the Psychic's lips. Recovery from trance was had only after red light came on, contrary to course of preceding night's recovery, when Psychic announced that she was "here" before Walter said good night.

At the séance of July 18th, I planned, if any of the bell-boxes were rung, to attempt a dictaphonic recording of this phenomenon. A hypnotic or hallucinatory theory covering the production of the phenomena in general had already been disproved photographically, as regards the visible phenomena of this mediumship. It seemed worth while to disprove it again as a generalization covering the auditory phenomena.

During the morning of the 18th, I conducted a series of experiments to determine whether positive results of any sort could be hoped for in this connection, with the equipment at hand. I found that with the unaided mouthpiece of the dictaphone, no impression was made upon the cylinder when the box was more than two feet distant during ringing. At six inches or less, a very satisfactory record was got; between six inches and two feet, a less satisfactory and less uniform one. With the bare mouthpiece, even at a distance of only an inch, the dictaphone reproduces the action of the bell not as a ringing, but as a whirring. I looked forward to attempts to improve upon this result with the use of a horn on the mouthpiece; but there was no time in connection with the present sitting to experiment with means of attaching this securely. So I decided to make the experiment, for this evening, with the bare mouthpiece.

Séance of July 18th, 1925: 10 Lime Street. Dictaphonic record, transcribed verbatim, with parenthetic elaboration by Bird. Original dictation by Bird [through Hubbs], with aid from other sitters.

Circle formed at 9:00 P.M. [the watch used during the séance was later found to be some twenty minutes slow; this affects the absolute but not the relative timing. Séance held in total darkness throughout]. Order of circle, clockwise: Psychic, Richardson, Mrs. Hubbs, Bird, Crandon, Psychic again. Hubbs at dictaphone, on chair in front of sofa. Gerke [present], outside circle, in chair, behind space between Richardson and Mrs. Hubbs. [Five luminous controls, as usual. Continuous victrola, tune "Out of the Dusk to You." Psychic in robe and slippers, under supervision of Mrs. Hubbs.]

[In arranging the seats prior to sitting down, all sitters at Bird's right were crowded further to their right than usual, making it possible for Bird's chair to be entirely at the side of the table opposite the Psychic, rather than in its more usual place on the corner at her far right. Crandon was shifted a bit to his left, and the rheostat was moved back close to the fireplace. The net result was to leave a clear path along which Hubbs, in the dark, would be able to move the dictaphone up to a position of contact with the table. This was necessary, because of the extremely limited range of the instrument, as indicated above.]

9:10. Crandon announces trance.

9:11. Walter voice.

9:12. At Walter's suggestion, Crandon leaves his seat to remove SAB from T and replace it with HB. [Sentence edited in transcription to avoid ambiguity of original dictation.] Bird took over control of Psychic's right hand [during this; Crandon out of control. Various other pieces of apparatus in reach behind Crandon's wing of the cabinet, as usual; only HB on T.]

9:15. Two long rings on HB.

9:20. HB rang twice. Trance unusually restless.

9:24. Sharp movement of T away from Psychic; attempt to verify positively the foot control failed [apparently owing mainly to the closeness of the sitters to T]. Walter [as last night] stated that he had moved T [teleplastically, rather than with the Psychic's foot]. Immediately several sharp staccato rings on HB, the last coming after Bird had established control of Psychic's right [and Crandon's left] hands.

[Walter had been told, early in the séance, of the plans for recording the bell-ringing. He assented and promised to indicate when it might be done. Twice the suggestion from a sitter to do it was met with the statement that he was not ready. At the present point he instructed that the dictaphone be brought forward. This was done; and Walter then proceeded with the experiment so rapidly that there was no time to dictate an *a priori* statement. The next thing on the record must therefore be either a blank space, corresponding to failure to record the ringing; or a series of whirring noises, corresponding to success. In the latter event, there will be pertinent spacing between the several peals occurring during the same episode of ringing; but no pertinent spacing between the two separate episodes, since during the considerable period separating them the dictaphone was not in rotation.

The record in fact carries five distinct whirrs, separated by intervals of which the first is noticeably shorter than the others. The first four whirrs are of approximately the same duration; the last one notably longer than these. Verbatim transcription is here resumed.]

9:26. The whirring sounds which it is hoped are here recorded on the dictaphone [as seen above, the hope was realized] represent ringing of HB. Walter called for Bird to assume control; Bird took the three hands at his left [both of Crandon's and the Psychic's right], as well as Crandon's head, on his shoulder. The Psychic's head-band was visible throughout to all sitters; Richardson had her left hand; Richardson, Gerke and Mrs. Hubbs all reported that they could see the foot controls. The dictaphone was now moved close to T; Bird placed left hand of Mrs. Hubbs

on his knee [for control], and operated dictating device with his right hand, which was out of control [save as the successful operation of the machine controlled it]. HB rang one long peal. [Bird was not quite ready, and did not get the dictaphone into operation until after some considerable fraction of this peal had passed.] Upon invitation from Walter, Bird then asked for four peals [making no statement as to their lengths]. These were given [the first three of moderate length and], the final one very much longer than the others.

[Hubbs, standing behind dictaphone during this episode, was apparently unable to reach the bell-box because of the position of Bird's hand with the receiver, blocking him off. At the conclusion of the episode, Hubbs wheeled the dictaphone back to its place and resumed his seat and his operation of the machine. On repetition of the experiment under similar conditions, the person in Hubbs' place will be instructed in advance to place his hands in control on Bird's shoulders, and to keep them there throughout.]

For balance of sitting, " control OK " [or " ordinary control "] includes Richardson's control of the Psychic's left hand, visibility of her foot markers to Richardson and Gerke, and of her head-band to Bird at least.

9:35. After a lot of joking by Walter as to whether he would obey Bird's request for two long rings followed by one short, HB rang differently from this. Then Bird established control of the three hands at his left and of Crandon's head [on his shoulder], and with this plus all ordinary control his request was met by HB. Walter then rang a long and complicated tempo on HB, most of this occurring after Bird had [again] established full control of three hands and Crandon's head. All ordinary controls OK. Walter here whistled in accompaniment to HB.

9:36. Bird in control of Psychic's right hand while Crandon removed HB.

9:42. Walter said he must go, and séance ended.

[As safeguard against accident to the record, before it was removed from the carriage the portion that records the HB ringing was located; and Bird, Gerke and Hubbs listened to it and verified that ringing was recorded, as above. The record was brought safely to New York, and is now at 15 Lexington Avenue.]

The hypnotic or hallucinatory theory is therefore disproved as a generalization covering the bell-ringing, if not the other auditory effects. Likewise, we have disproved as a generalization the theory that the ringing is done by some other bell than that under attention

at the given moment. For no other bell would have recorded; none other being within five feet of the receiver, unless concealed and therefore muffled in the clothing of some sitter. The dictaphone seems to have been mastered, and to provide the ideal means of séance recording; with the reservation that the proper operation of the machine in darkness is not as simple as one might suppose, so that its use in important experiments should be preceded by adequate practice and rehearsal. For the rest, we face the obvious hazard of having the phenomena of the present case diverted into a field from which we would prefer to keep them away; and the course of the next series of sittings must be watched with considerable trepidation lest this diversion be continued.

CHAPTER XV

A Reversion to Teleplasmics

Séance Records and Comment

By the Editor

Owing to pressure of other engagements by the Psychic to sit with informal friendly groups, it was found necessary to schedule the third series of A.S.P.R. sittings a week earlier than they would otherwise have been held. This brought them so close upon the series of July 16th–18th that Walter elected very pointedly to regard these sittings as a continuation of those. The implication was that the trance and the X silhouettings of the earlier series were to be continued and developed, into what Walter hoped would take the form of visible or photographable teleplasmic structural effects. The promise that he would try to produce something for us to photograph was particularly explicit.

Going into the series of July 23rd–25th, I wrote for my own reference the following memorandum:

> The problem of personnel apparently will have to be dealt with afresh for each series of Society sittings, for the present at least. Conant being out of town on vacation, Gerke's services as photographer were secured. Dr. Horace Westwood, Unitarian minister from Toledo and member of the Society, was to be in Boston on the evening of the 23rd; and he was to be accompanied by Mr. Joseph Dunipace, a Toledo business man, who would be available for all three of my evenings. I found it possible to take Mrs. Bird to Boston for this series; Dr. Richardson was available but not Mrs. Richardson; and a prominent Boston lawyer, Mr. Charles S. Hill,[1] who was at the moment keenly interested in the case through recent contact, was added to the group. It should be recorded that the group went through the three evenings without any addition of sitters; and that Walter expressed the keenest satisfaction on this point, attributing his good results largely to this factor.

In going into the first evening of this series, there was considerable uncertainty as to just what the psychic program was to be. The

[1] See page 449; also open reference No. 10, Vol. 2.

luminous control bands of course react strongly to the photographic flashlight, and for some time after a picture they are of extreme brilliance, and of course give an effect of white light. On this account, it is more or less the custom in Margery's séance room to omit them when photographs are certainly going to be attempted. But we were not certain, on the first evening of the present series, that this would be attempted; and we feared that there might be a good deal of telekinesis, luminous silhouetting, etc., which would be rendered largely worthless in the absence of hand and foot control. We therefore effected a compromise; we omitted the wrist bands as being most distracting to the psychic and most nearly dispensable through application of routine personal control, but we retained the luminous controls of ankles and forehead.

There had been considerable discussion as to the means through which Walter had rung the Hole Bell-box,[2] with the holes sealed against physical access of any sort. Examining the box with this problem in view, I had reached a working hypothesis which was entirely tenable so far as events had yet gone. The crack between the hinged side and the top of the box I found to be wide enough for insertion of a penknife blade; and using such means to get access to the interior of the box and to depress the floating contact board, the bell could be rung easily and freely. The crack, under this theory, was being used as a substitute for the holes. On the 17th, before performing with HB, Walter had had the box turned around, so that the side carrying this crack was facing the Psychic;[3] and this, despite the fact that the metal padlock was on that side, whereas he has usually requested that the SAB be placed with the padlock side away from her. This seemed good evidence pointing toward's Walter's use of the crack as a means of ringing the bell.

On the other hand, I had put this evidence before Walter during the séance of the 18th; and while he would not deny in so many words that he used the crack, he offered to bet that he could ring the HB with all holes and the entire length of the crack sealed. Accordingly, for the new series of sittings, in addition to the cardboard strip carefully tacked over the luminous holes, a long strip of surgeon's tape was carefully put over the crack, from end to end. Prior to each séance the cardboard was removed, the paint about the holes activated, and

[2] See pp. 177, 178, 179, 130; Chap. XI *in toto;* and pp. 336–7.
[3] See page 178, bottom.

the cardboard replaced; so that removal of this shield during the séance could not be effected. No luminous marking was used beneath the tape, because of its narrowness; and no marks were made across this and on to the box, because if this were done a second and a third time it was feared that confusion between the several sets of marks would result. But the folds, creases and other irregularities of attachment of the tape had my very careful attention, and these were quite adequate to insure against its removal and replacement in darkness.

For the present series of sittings Westwood made the rather ambitious suggestion that we give Walter a chance to deal with something inside a closed and sealed space. I accordingly purchased six pill-boxes of such size that they could be nested, one inside another. Certain objects known only to Westwood and myself, and one of which we believed it would be impossible to duplicate, were placed in the smallest box; all the other boxes were placed about this, in turn; and each box was carefully sealed by means of signatures or thumbprints of Westwood or myself. One might hope for either of two things: for a positive identification by Walter of the objects in this package, or for an apport of one of them out of the package. In point of fact, while this assembly (NPB: nested pill-boxes) was present more or less during the present sittings, Walter gave it no attention.[3a]

Operation of the dictaphone through an intermediary had not proved altogether satisfactory. It necessarily involved a loss of time and a doubling of vocal noise. Then the assistant did not always understand exactly what I wanted to go on the record; and he was always liable to pay undue attention to remarks by other sitters which struck me as not pertinent, or even to arguments about the record which might arise between various sitters and myself. Of course such arguments always had to be settled, in or out of the séance room, before the record could be regarded as finished and approved by the sitters. But when I dictate into a machine there is certainty that no discussion among the sitters gets recorded in an intermediate or unsettled stage, and when I dictate into a human ear this certainty is absent. Equally, when I dictate into the machine I am able, if the circumstances require, to leave the argument in a state of suspense for extra-séance discussion, the results of such discussion to go into the interpolatory matter; whereas the human agent, knowing that he must properly put in much that comes from other mouths than mine, will probably

[3a] Nor did he ever subsequently return to this apparatus.—J. M. B.

not know when or how best to hold the record in such suspense. The dictation for 9:46 on August 12th (page 219) gives a fair sample of the sort of situation that is better handled by dictation to a machine than to a human being.

Against all this, there had to be considered the fact that if I attempted to run the machine myself, while my command of the record would be absolute, and while time would be conserved and needless noise eliminated, it was not clear to what degree my ability to sit in the circle, control my neighbors and observe my control of them, and observe the phenomena themselves, would be curtailed. I decided to experiment with this direct operation of the dictaphone, during the present series, in the effort to determine how the advantages checked up against the disadvantages. I found that at times there *was* conflict between close observation and close attention to producing the best record. I found also an unanticipated drawback, in that Crandon was apt to feel that I ought to be observing at moments when I was dictating, or *vice versa;* and that failure to alter my course in accordance with his ideas led to more or less tension. On the whole, however, I found the disadvantages far outweighed by the advantages; and I definitely decided to do all my séance recording in this way until some better technique presented itself.

No break is involved in the circular control when I sit in the circle and operate the dictaphone. My right-hand neighbor takes my right wrist instead of my hand, since the latter must be free to handle the mouthpiece with its switch; his hand is then under a control as rigid as usual, while mine is fairly well controlled by his, and in addition could engage in unauthorized activity only by sacrificing the record. When I come to the end of a cylinder, it is necessary for both my hands to go completely out of control to remove the old cylinder and put on a new one; if I try to do this with hands on my wrists I am too likely to drop one of the cylinders or strike it against metal with sufficient force to break it. While I am changing the records my neighbors continue under control; for this purpose I need only place their hands on my respective knees. The dictaphone stand is placed partly between me and my right-hand neighbor (I speak now of the Margery procedure specifically, and not of the general case), partly in the space behind us. The space between us is thus widened; and were it not for the support afforded by the armchairs, we could hardly maintain our hand-contact for the hour, plus, to which these sittings run.

The above represents a subsequent editing of my rough notes of July, 1925. No material has been added, but the notes were not in such condition that they could be presented intelligibly in their original form. We come now to the séance records:

Séance of July 23rd, 1925: 10 Lime Street. Dictaphonic record, by Bird with aid of other sitters; transcribed verbatim, with parenthetic elaborations by Bird.

Circle formed at 9:00 P.M. [and séance held in total darkness save for red-light and flashlight intervals noted in record]. Order, clockwise: Psychic, Richardson, Westwood, Hill, Bird, Crandon, Psychic again. Two cameras set up [in north of room], bearing upon the Psychic and the table. Gerke in room, free, attending to these. On sofa [in northeast corner]: Mrs. Bird, Dunipace and [as guest of the evening] Mrs. Bradford Holmes [of New York; member, A.S.P.R.]. Bird operated dictaphone from his seat in circle. [Psychic in robe and stockings or slippers, apparently under her own supervision; this note supplied too long after séance to permit of certainty on these points.] Initially the Psychic had but three luminous controls, those on the wrists being omitted. [Continuous victrola, as always; no further attempt was made to keep track of the tune of the evening, so this condition may be understood to apply in future sittings, without specific mention.] On T initially, HB and NPB.

9:21 [after longest interval of waiting yet experienced in the Society sittings, and after some sitters had expressed fears of a blank]. Walter whistled in C. The voice was of unusual loudness; and, as heard from Bird's seat [seemed] unusually far out from C.

9:24. Continued loud conversation by Walter, apparently outside C. Discussing possibility of getting photos tonight, Walter expresses fear lest the flashlight dissolve his teleplasmic formations.

9:30. [There was] overlap between Walter's conversation and a sound [heard but] not identified by Bird; but stated by Crandon [Richardson and Gerke] to be the Psychic's yawn.

9:34. Prolonged whispering and whistling by Walter, louder than ever before heard by Bird. Richardson reports whistling beyond C, toward victrola. Crandon says this was right at his left ear. Richardson reports whistling now in his right ear; and from Bird's seat the effect is distinctly as though from that region. [The room temperature was such that it had been felt necessary to install a fan; it stood on the floor, approximately behind Westwood.] Westwood reports breeze opposing that from the fan;

Richardson concurs. [There had been strong suspicion several times previously that this was occurring; this was the first time anybody was willing to report it positively.]

9:35. Westwood says the whistling is now facing him, apparently far forward in [or in front of] C. For several minutes Walter has been whistling practically continuously, and in this time he has covered the entire tune ["All Alone"] being played tonight on the victrola. The whistling shifts rapidly in apparent locus [in general, not pointedly at this instant; and when it specifically did so at this instant] the Psychic's luminous head-band was visible and motionless. Extremely loud Walter whistling and whispering continued, apparently out over T. It is now 9:37. [Practically everything Walter said tonight was audible without the least difficulty to those on the sofa, who usually have had about all they can do to satisfy themselves that the whispering is present at all.]

9:38. Red light given while luminous wristbands are placed upon the Psychic, by Walter's instructions. Control then restored and light off. [At Walter's instructions,] light given again to remove NPB from T. It is now 9:39.

9:41. Crandon reports the Psychic in trance, together with some delay on his part in making the report. [She was not in trance during last red-light interval.] Crandon reports movement by the Psychic's right hand on her thigh, and fingering of his hand by hers. [Reports of this sort are rendered to Bird through duplication, by Crandon's hand on Bird's, of effect being produced by the Psychic. In this instance it was a slight stroking of finger on finger characteristic of the Psychic in the séance room, whether entranced or normal.] Richardson reports motion on considerable scale of Psychic's right hand, and Hill of her foot [the latter being observed visually].

9:44. One long peal from HB [in spite of the sealing of all orifices through which Bird has been able to ring it by normal means].

9:45. Control shifted so that Richardson has both the Psychic's hands and Bird both of Crandon's. [Here the record carries two whirring noises; fairly long, close together, fainter than those of the July 18th record, but unmistakably audible.] The mouthpiece [has just been] open while the bell gave several long and short peals; the distance is such that Bird questions whether they will record. [Apparently all did not.] Several short peals [were given] during dictation [of preceding sentence; but on the record they are not distinguishable through Bird's voice].

9:47. [Three whirrs, approximately equal in length and close

together, here occur on the record; their strength is about as before.] At Bird's request, HB rang three peals; Crandon's head was on Bird's elbow in addition to the other [usual] controls, [but time was lacking to set up extra control by Bird of the Psychic's right hand, which was therefore controlled by Crandon alone. The dictaphone was open at the same distance from HB as before; and as the above parenthesis shows,] the ringing was successfully recorded. [The record is preserved at 15 Lexington Ave.] The conventional circle was restored at the end of this episode. Crandon reports patting of the Psychic's thigh by her hand.

9:49. Bird removes HB from T at Walter's request; he was out of control while doing this, but his neighbors were controlled through their hands on his knees. While Bird was thus engaged, Westwood reported a touch inside his left knee. Hill reports having felt, about the same time, a touch inside his left knee; he failed to report it promptly, thinking it Bird's knee. Bird says it was not his knee. Hill reports the touch again during this dictation. [At the moment of contact no sitter had an eye on the luminous anklets; but immediately after, Hill reports them visible and motionless.]

9:51. Psychic's right hand [identified by Crandon] heard scratching on T. Richardson reports concurrent movement of left arm.

9:52. Richardson reports, in general, much motion by the Psychic tonight.

9:55. Walter gives the signal for Gerke to get ready and for the other sitters to get out of the camera's field. Richardson and Crandon [at Walter's instruction] remove the luminous controls from the Psychic, the circle being maintained save at their points of contact with her. [Walter stated here that the brightness of the control bands would bother him in "withdrawing."][3b]

9:58. Control restored immediately after above. [The apparent undue lapse of time was caused by the fact that Walter had ordered the luminous headband removed, as well as the wristlets; but] the Psychic in trance refused to permit Crandon to

---

[3b] Here again we have our hostile critic, with the insistence that if this measure is ever necessary it ought always to be so; and with a deadly parallel between the situation existing here, and that discussed in the textual insert of page 202, within the first paragraph of the July 25th record. The critic of favorable disposition will probably reply simply to the effect that, if the procedure of withdrawal were a fraudulent one, the objection "if ever, then always" would apply even more strongly. I have discussed the general principle here involved in a paragraph of the text inserted just before the 9:19 dictation for June 18th; see page 147, as well as page 202, referred to immediately above; and, finally, page 213.—J. M. B.

[touch her head sufficiently to] do this, and he had to be content with turning it over, bright side down. He then reported that the Psychic withdrew her right hand for a moment, and suggested that she took off this control herself. [Walter protested vigorously against the inclusion of this item in the record; Crandon seemed inclined to support both Walter in objecting to it and Bird in putting it in. The séance proceeded only after the situation had been cleared up, as recorded in next entry.]

10:00. Red light given at Walter's insistence [to remove headband and to check up against the preceding freedom of the Psychic's hand]. Crandon reports that the Psychic again fought removal of the band [but that this time he got it off]. The circle was rejoined at 10:01, after all sitters saw in red light that the T was empty.

10:01. The Psychic's head [fell forward] upon T, her right hand at the left of the head and carrying Crandon's with it. [This hand] immediately returned to its natural place at east of T.

10:03. Walter gives signal for the photo; the flashlight misses fire. Gerke is permitted [by Walter] to use his red torch to reload the flash pan. In the interval, the Psychic is in extremely deep trance, marked by snores and other vocalization.

10:06. Crandon observes and Richardson verifies [respiratory effect by the Psychic, sufficiently similar to] "Cheyne-Stokes breathing" [to constitute a notable symptom of the trance. Any alarm which might have been felt was prevented by previous observations that this effect is apt to ensue in deep trance by Margery. For a description of the effect, see Encyclopedia Britannica, Eleventh Edition, Vol. 6, p. 749; and note also mention of this effect in article on Hibernation, as sometimes characterizing the latter phenomenon]. This effect was followed, perhaps half a minute later, by breathing sounds similar to flow of water through a pipe.[4] The Psychic's head then returned to T.

10:09. The signal for the flashlight was again given [and this time it was sprung successfully]. Following the flash, the extreme brilliance of the particles of luminous paint [with which the tabletop has, in long course, become impregnated, made it in effect a luminous plaque, which] shows the Psychic in silhouette, in a state of [apparent] collapse. There was an interval of perhaps two minutes [of absolute inertness] between the flash and her first audible respiration. Richardson reports the pulse about normal in rate and volume during this interval.

---

[4] *Cf.* my experience with Mrs. Leonard: *My Psychic Adventures*, p. 135.

10:15. [Considerable conversation ensued with Walter after the Psychic's recovery from collapse but while she remained in trance.] Walter says her face ought to appear [in the picture] as though covered with mesh or lace, and swollen. At least, this would be the case if visibility could have been established in the dark; he is uncertain what modification the presence of the white flashlight may effect. He promises that tomorrow night he will try to show teleplasmic formations on the Psychic's face, in red light before the flash.

10:16. The Psychic came out of trance while Walter was still present and talking.

10:17. Walter says good-night. Crandon's usual effort to provoke a word from him, in red light after this is given, was a failure.

The photographic plate was developed by Gerke and seen, in the glass negative, by all sitters before leaving the house. The Psychic's face was thought to be swollen, and a white [on negative] fringed effect was thought to be visible, like a beard, about its lower part.

Séance of July 24th, 1925: 10 Lime Street. Dictaphone record, by Bird with aid of other sitters; transcribed verbatim, with parenthetic elaboration by Bird.

Circle formed at 9:06 [and séance held in total darkness save for red light and flashlight intervals noted in record]. Order, clockwise: Psychic, Richardson, Hill, Bird, Crandon, Psychic again. Two cameras as last night; Gerke in charge and free in room. On sofa: Dunipace and Mrs. Bird. [Bird operating dictaphone from seat in circle, as last night.] Owing to the photographic program, all luminous controls of the Psychic omitted for this evening. [Psychic in robe and slippers only, as usual; she changed into this under Mrs. Bird's supervision.] HB initially on T; no illuminated apparatus present save one doughnut [which was not called for and not used].

9:07. Walter's voice heard immediately on extinction of the light. Walter instructs that red light be given and sitters from the sofa inserted in the circle. While this was going on Walter's whistle was heard in full red light; [no eye was on the Psychic's lips at the moment]. New circle, clockwise: Psychic, Richardson, Mrs. Bird, Hill, Dunipace, Bird, Crandon, Psychic again. [The record at this point carries a faint impression of Walter's whistle, audible through Bird's dictation.]

9:11. Lights out on the revised circle. Walter whistled at

once [and this whistling is audible on the record through Bird's voice].

9:13. Walter's voice and whistle are as brilliant as last night [here the whistle is audible through the dictation] in all respects [the whistle is again audible on the record]. The Walter whistle is heard from very high in C, as well as from points apparently well out over T, etc.

9:15. Continuous conversation and whistling by Walter. [Numerous snatches of the whistling appear on the record here; see the latter part of the next paragraph.]

9:22. [A dark megaphone, DM, has been on floor of C at Psychic's right initially, as is usually the case with this mediumship. This] DM, which according to Crandon has been in air for some time, is now reported by him to have returned to the floor. Red light given at Walter's instruction to remove HB from T. During the interval preceding this dictation, Bird had been making efforts to record the Walter whistle [holding the dictaphone mouthpiece open and directed to C at moments of clear, loud whistling; and he continued these efforts after this dictation]. DM heard in motion. [A brilliant series of whistles is recorded here.] Walter was sufficiently interested in the attempt to record his whistling [brought to his attention by the preceding dictation], to give numerous loud blasts, apparently far from C and very close to dictaphone. It is hoped that some, at least, of these will be recorded in the interval preceding this dictation. [It will be seen that they were, and very freely. Following this dictation, the record carries further audible whistling.]

9:25. Crandon reports semi-trance. Half a minute later, [he reports] deep trance. Since trance period began, Walter whispering and whistling [have] lessened; [but he greets this dictation with a fresh outburst, audible on the record through the dictation in the absence of any effort by Bird to catch it]. Deep snores from the entranced Psychic.

9:26. [With trance of less than one full minute's standing,] in two-second period of red light [given, as throughout, at Walter's direction], the entire side of the Psychic's face is seen by all sitters to be covered with a network of white substance. The head is inclined to the left [so that the uppermost] right side is affected. Richardson and Crandon state that hand control of the Psychic has been continuous since the lights went out at the start of the séance. The description as "network" should be amplified. The mass lay, not in fine lines, but rather in heavy bands perhaps half an inch wide; with large empty meshes between, some of these as

much as an inch across. Richardson suggests the simile: like hanks of cotton yarn as seen at the factory.

9:27. Further period of two seconds of red light. The entire top of the Psychic's head and much of the face are now seen covered solidly with the white mass. Long low groans are heard from her. Walter states that this white teleplasm, different in color from that produced for Dingwall,[5] is what apparitions are made of. The Psychic continues groaning in trance. Dim red light for two seconds leads to disagreement among the sitters as to the teleplasmic details; so Walter orders bright red light for two seconds more. The Psychic's entire head and face are seen now covered by the white mass. Similes applied by Crandon and Richardson in description of the appearance both carry the idea of a textile fabric. Everybody agrees that while this is a just simile as far as it goes, the appearance is not that of any cloth [known to them]. The vocal effect in trance suggests obstruction in breathing by the teleplasmic[6] mass.

9:30. In spite of the difficulty in breathing, the Walter voice seems unimpaired. Walter states that the white material issues from the ears. In a further period of two seconds of red light, the general position of the mass seems lower and it appears more consolidated. It is possible that the teleplasmic veil is as high as before, merely extending to a lower point. Richardson reports violent efforts by the Psychic's left hand to reach the face, without success.

[It should be noted that while Walter always called for "two seconds," of red light, and while the record follows him in this, the interval actually given was seldom if ever so short. Crandon's interest, and his knowledge of the other sitters' interest, lead him to stretch the exposures to red light. Once Bird counted five full seconds during one of these "two second" intervals. This remark also calls attention to the failure to state heretofore, in the records of this series, that at all times Crandon handles the light switch. Bird cannot conceive of circumstances which would impel him to intrust this to another person.]

9:34. Walter calls for preparation for a photo. Then he says, "Shoot, any time." There is a slight delay as Gerke pre-

---

[5] See Chapter II.

[6] The original records of this period employ always the words ectoplasm, ectoplasmic. Inasmuch as the Society has abandoned this term, turning it over to orthodox biology in the interests of its long-established use there in another connection, I have throughout substituted the newer and more expedient terminology.—J. M. B.



PLATE 9. THE PHOTOGRAPH OF JULY 24, 1925; 9:35 O'CLOCK. WHITE TELEPLASMIC MASS, ARISING APPARENTLY OUT OF THE RIGHT EAR AND ALMOST WHOLLY COVERING THE FACE. THE APPEARANCE IS SOMEWHAT THAT OF A SHEEP'S OMENTUM.

UNIV. OF MICH.

pares the second camera for action, with the Psychic groaning. Crandon reports vigorous shaking by her hand.

9:35. Just as Gerke was about to shoot, the red light was given for a second or so [so that there might be a visual check against the photo]. All sitters clearly see the teleplasmic mass on the Psychic's face and head, with the exception of Richardson, who was looking elsewhere, and Mrs. Bird, whose eyes were closed in anticipation of the flash. After the flash, the teleplasmic mass gave a faint luminous effect; it was not nearly so bright as the T with its particles of luminous paint, but none the less visible to all the sitters.

It may be well to point out, here, that if the teleplasmic mass is of genuine character, it represents a substance quite new and unknown to the sitters. When we feel it, we get a sensation presumably not corresponding exactly to anything in our past experience; when we look at it, the same factor is present. We can attempt to describe our visual and tactile experiences with the teleplasm only in terms of past experiences through these senses with other specific substances. We employ the utmost freedom of simile in this sense, without any intent to reflect upon the validity of the teleplasm. Similarly, we make this remark without any intent to imply that the teleplasm is to be taken as necessarily valid.

Further: a very interesting suggestion is made by one who has read the above in proof, and who wants to know what impressions the sitters had as to the color of the after-luminous teleplasm; whether this effect could not have been an after-image; and particularly, what Mrs. Bird, whose eyes were closed during the flash, had to report. The color was the same whitish or gray-whitish effect seen in afterglow by the luminous paint; the adjectives just used being not wholly satisfactory until the reader explicitly adds to them, in his mind, appreciation of the fact that the effect is distinctly a luminous one. The suggestion that an after-image was involved is disposed of by the unanimous verdict of all sitters to the effect that they have to look at the teleplasm in order to see it; that if they turn their eyes elsewhere, anything that they may see is of different form. And again, while Mrs. Bird cannot at the late date when interrogated recall the details of the present experience, it is the positive observation of various other sitters that a person whose eyes are closed during the flash, after opening them sees the same after-glow as the others, and sees it in the

same place. At the time when this paragraph is written, there is available nothing beyond this distinctly *ex post facto* statement. At the first opportunity, I shall get contemporaneous testimony on this point from specific sitters and in connection with a specific séance; and I hope to have such testimony in time to publish it along with the other statements of endorsement or repudiation by the sitters, which I have promised the reader on page 3.

9:38. Crandon reports that the Psychic carries his hand to her chest, and directs it in feeling the cold mass thereon [edited in transcription to eliminate ambiguity]. Walter expresses willingness for Bird to do the same. There is considerable difficulty overcoming the reluctance of the entranced Psychic to permit this, but it is finally effected. Bird finds the mass soft, slightly cool, distinctly [of a plastic surface and] not of the nature of a textile fabric. Another sitter supplies the word "rubbery," which comes fairly close to Bird's sensations.

9:40. Bird is left in control of the Psychic's right hand as Crandon goes for a cloth with which to cover the luminous table [following the flashlight. He brings a white sheet for this purpose].

9:42. Gerke is reloading his flashpan with the aid of a red torch. The Psychic's head is apparently forward on T. Crandon reports that he feels teleplasmic cord running along her right thigh. [This seems to contradict Walter's statement about the present manifestations, and to throw us back into the Dingwall period.] Much moaning and groaning by the Psychic. [Because of its similarity in color to the teleplasm,] Crandon suggests that the sheet [6a] be moved off T before the next photo is made. The sheet at once moves off T toward Crandon. Richardson is positive that the hand controlled by him had nothing to do with this. Crandon thought the hand controlled by him [and which lay on the corner of the table at this moment] was pushed by the sheet rather than *vice versa* [but he put this forward only as an impression].

9:45. Groaning, moaning, blowing, restlessness, vocal complaint. Flash being reloaded and plates in cameras changed.

9:46. Second flashlight sprung. [Some sitters were taken by surprise and blinded; all others report] marked visibility of the teleplasmic material [immediately] after the flash. There is a pronounced cobwebby, stalactitic effect; no particles are detached from the mass [yet the word "dripping" characterizes the general effect]. Another simile strongly approved [by some sitters] is

[6a] See page 213.



PLATE 10. JULY 24, 1925; 9:46 P.M.; SECOND PHOTOGRAPH OF THIS SÉANCE. THE GENERAL APPEARANCE IS AS THAT OF THE PREVIOUS EXPOSURE, ONLY THE POSITION OF THE PSYCHIC AND OF THE TELEPLASMIC MASS VARYING, WITH SOME OF THE DETAILS OF THE LATTER.

UNIV. OF MICH.

that of pulled chewing gum or candy. Hill reports contact by back of his hand [under what guidance is not indicated] with a rough, cool, stringy mass. Bird [out of control] changing record [and dictation lags temporarily on the same ground].

9:51. [When the Psychic's head went up after the second flashlight, there remained on T a dark, silhouetted mass. At first taken merely to be a dark zone in T, this turned out to be the teleplasmic mass itself, in silhouette. It was this that Hill felt.] Mrs. Bird [next] felt the teleplasmic mass on T. She describes it in terms of rough, cold dough. Dunipace had the same experience; he agrees partly with Mrs. Bird's description but suggests that the feeling is also that of rubber. All having the experience agree that the temperature is cool but not cold. Walter reports the teleplasmic mass gone from T; he requests that the sitters relax and pay him no attention. Mrs. Bird says the temperature was almost exactly that of dough made from cold hydrant water. Walter endorses this.

9:55. Walter and the Psychic are now both fairly quiet, but the trance is still a plaintive one. There is considerable restlessness by the Psychic [immediately following this], both her feet being momentarily on Hill's knees. In response to Crandon's query, Walter states that his "gang," previously stated to comprise seven [for the present night], all helped him; he could not give the teleplasmic performance alone. The Psychic's foot is beating on the floor.

10:00. Violent convulsion of C heard by all. According to reports by Richardson and Crandon, this was certainly not done by either of the Psychic's arms. C continues apparently to be hauled around violently. [Bird here cites previous experience in connection with the disappointing amount of net motion observed by C after an appalling racket.] The Psychic's hands are [reported] under control, and quiet; violent perturbations of C continue.

10:01. Another spasm [of this]. Loud whistle, reported by Crandon as through DM. [It was not so heard by Bird, who would have taken it to be an ordinary Walter whistle, without any "trimmings."] DM was next moment thrown upon T, then fell to the floor between Mrs. Bird and Hill. There has been no interruption in the hand control [of the Psychic] since the last red-light interval, Crandon and Richardson report.[7]

[7] See *M. M.*, p. 158, for significance of this.

10:03. The Psychic is out of trance. Walter requests that the sitters leave quickly, without " hanging around."

10:05. Bright red light given for five seconds, then turned off again, at Walter's request. He states that when we see a genuine materialization, the substance used to-night is used, becoming luminous. Among his difficulties in the séance-room he gives light and heat a leading place. In dismissing us, he suggests that Mrs. Bird make examination of the Psychic. [This was done. Mrs. Bird left the room with the Psychic. She reports later that she examined the Psychic nude, with particular attention to hair and ears. The Psychic handed her robe to Mrs. Bird as she stepped out of it, and this too was examined with care. Bird himself examined the cabinet with care as soon as the Psychic vacated it. All findings here were negative.

The plates were developed by Gerke and examined (in negative) by the sitters before leaving the premises. Both corresponded closely with what was seen in red light preceding or white light during the flashes.

The dictaphone cylinder carrying the Walter whistles is preserved at 15 Lexington Ave.]

Séance of July 25th, 1925: 10 Lime Street. Dictaphonic record by Bird, with aid of other sitters; transcribed verbatim, with parenthetic elaboration by Bird.

Circle formed at 9:07 [and séance held in total darkness throughout, save for red light and flashlight intervals noted in record]. Order, clockwise: Psychic, Richardson, Mrs. Bird, Hill, Dunipace, Bird, Crandon, Psychic again. Cameras in place as previously and Gerke in attendance. Illuminated apparatus present, but on floor at east of C, concealed under a sheet pending indications of what Walter proposes to do. Luminous controls of the Psychic were omitted in anticipation of possible photography.

A certain contradiction appears to exist between this statement, and the confession appearing in the dictation for 10:09, July 23rd, that the table itself is luminous after the flash. It will however be appreciated that there is on the table no single luminous area of anything like the extent presented by the control bands. The paint on the table, visible only under conditions comparable to those of the post-flashlight period, is almost entirely in flecks of very small size, or else in very narrow lines where it has run along the grain of the wood. The outline of the Psychic is faintly visible when these

areas are luminescing and when she then falls forward upon the table; but when she remains upright, there seldom if ever seems to be enough light from the luminescent table to constitute a drawback under any theory. Further; when she remains upright this light is much farther from her than that of the luminous controls. Hence if there is any valid physical objection to the presence of light in the séance room, it ought to be far more essential to darken the controls than the table.

The skeptic, however, will doubtless still feel that while the table remains in any degree luminous, it is silly to object to the presence of the control bands. The controls, of course, are visible throughout the sitting and the table only for a little while after the flash; and this will constitute an illuminating comparison between their relative candle-powers. I would insist on this comparison more confidently, were it not that once or twice, in séances where the responsibility for the record has not been mine, Walter actually *has* objected to the luminous table and has required that a sheet be put over it. He is more likely, however, to ask that this protection be given him, as it was here, from a pile of luminously marked objects which often stands beside the cabinet awaiting use, and which is very noticeable indeed after a flashlight. The matter comes up again on p. 213.

Further interesting speculations might be indulged in, and further interesting comparisons in candle-power adduced, as between the control bands and the luminous plaques, etc., upon which teleplasmic structures are often laid *in direct contact with the paint*. The candle-power of the red light is also of an order equal to or greater than that of the luminous objects ordinarily present; but of a different wave-length, of course. If there is a physical factor of light-inhibition, it of course would be different for different parts of the spectrum and would afford justification for the use of red light where white is banned. Indeed, whether this is the case, or whether the objections to light are a wholly subjective factor of the medium's own mind, has been freely discussed for years; and when the question came up in the Paris Congress of 1917, there was a sharp cleavage of opinion among [7a] recognized authorities. If it were ultimately adjudged that the objection to light is entirely subjective, the extreme inconsistency of procedure with lights of different characteristics, seen not only in the present records but in all mediumships, would be completely explained. This completes the present interpolated discussion, and we return to the record:

[7a] *Journal, A.S.P.R.*, Dec., 1927, p. 680.

[The Psychic in robe and slippers only, to which she changed under Mrs. Bird's supervision.] On T initially, four balls of modelling clay, one on each corner. [A new record, "Rememberin'," from "Topsy and Eva," caused some delay through the effort to make the music softer; and there was a telephone call for Crandon.] The séance finally got under way [with lights out] at 9:11.

9:13. Walter voice and whistle.

9:14. Among other observations of the extreme mobility of Walter's voice, Mrs. Bird and Hill join in reporting whispers from him, apparently in the space between their heads. Richardson reports a touch with DM, which was initially in C [as usual, standing on the floor at the Psychic's extreme right]. Extreme mobility of Walter whistle continues.

9:17. Observations on the mobility of the whistle suggest strongly that tonight there are two distinct "whistlers," and that one of them has to a considerable extent been working in the corner by the victrola. [An extremely] clear observation [is made] by Bird and Crandon of a whistle outside C, to the east, behind Crandon.

9:20. Red light given to remove the modelling clay from T, at Walter's instructions. One of the four balls was found cut in two, as per announcement made a little earlier by Walter. Apparently [this had been] done with the edge of M. Richardson and Crandon here report that the Psychic has been in trance for some seconds, perhaps as much as a minute. [The onset was much gentler than ever before in these sittings.]

9:23. Red light given for several seconds, revealing a white mass on the Psychic's right shoulder. Crandon and Mrs. Bird report visibility of a connecting cord running to the right ear. Walter responds to this dictation by calling for bright red light for two seconds so that all may see the cord. All see it. Crandon and Richardson report a resemblance to a trachea. On renewal of the bright red light for two seconds, Mrs. Bird reports frayed appearance of cord, and Bird a twisted effect. All saw the cord here. Walter had stated, on the first exposure of the material on the Psychic's shoulder, that it was a materialization of the thing with which he talks. [It was in fact long and narrow, suggesting a larynx, trumpet, or something of the sort. The long diameter ran from front to back of the Psychic. The ear-cord joined quite near the rear end, and the front end was considerably the larger of the two.]

9:25. Dim red light for five seconds. All teleplasmic material is gone from the right shoulder; in its place, a U-shaped mass over-



PLATE 11. THE FIRST OF FOUR FLASHLIGHTS TAKEN ON JULY 25, 1925; THIS ONE AT 9:34 P.M. THE TELEPLASM IS OF PRECISELY THE SAME TYPE AS ON THE PREVIOUS EVENING, BUT IN DETAIL IT SHOWS CONSIDERABLE VARIATION.

UNIV. OF MICH.

lies the right side of the head, as the head inclines to the left. The ear is exposed in the middle of the U. A fresh interval of red light is given [in response to this dictation], to verify Walter's correction that the ear is not exposed; this is found to be the fact. In this view, the rear arm of the U is much heavier than the front one; and Bird thought the arms joined at top and bottom, making it now a crude O instead of a U. [Hill endorsed this emphatically.] Numerous sitters accept Gerke's suggestion that the appearance [in color and texture] is that of pie dough. Walter's correction that it is whiter than pie dough is accepted by the sitters.

9:27. In dim red light for two seconds, the front limb of this O-shaped object is seen to run straight down the Psychic's face [hanging down thence over the chin] to the breastbone. The rear limb is as previously described and in approximately the same position as before. Those sitters able to see the Psychic's left ear also report a branch of the teleplasmic mass overlying it, and dangling like a rubber band.

9:30. Walter says: "Look at this and see whether you want a picture of it. The mass of teleplasm overlying the Psychic's face is very notable. Considerable discussion ensues by the sitters whether to take a picture. Mainly at Walter's motion [with promise of much better effects a little later] it is decided not to do so for the moment.

9:32. "Look at it now," says Walter. The head is turned to the left, exposing the right side [which is] overlain with considerable masses of teleplasm, and a cord shows, running to the right ear. "Do you like this better?" asks Walter; all agree that they do. The Psychic's head is inclined forward and to the left; masses of teleplasm are visible all over the face; [there is] a visible cord to the ear, and long particles dangle down the front of the Psychic's robe.

9:33. Preparing for the flash. [Walter has indicated that we may take photos almost *ad lib.* to-night.]

9:34. Gerke ready. Walter ready. In red light before and during the flash, and in luminescence from T afterwards, long masses of teleplasm are again seen overlying the Psychic's face and dangling down in front. It waves in air and sways about, a foot and a half from her head as this swings forward. After remaining distinctly visible for some seconds, the teleplasmic mass partly fades from view as the Psychic leans further back into C. (This observation and dictation were made in fumbling fashion, and the record has been edited for smoother accord with the facts as they presently developed.) [It is believed that there was no

possibility of seeing an oblique connection between motion of the Psychic's head and that of the teleplasm, but no sitter is willing to make the *ex post facto* negation in stronger terms than these. All agree that the head moved slowly and steadily forward, came to rest, and presently withdraw to a point further back than that from which it started; and that during this simple excursion and return, the teleplasmic mass swayed back and forward several times, at a different and faster rate.][7b] Brilliant whistling from Walter. Crandon and Richardson report that hand control has been continuous since the séance began.

9:35. Walter forbids Gerke to use the red torch for the moment. A dark cloth is placed over the freshly luminous tabletop.[7c] Walter says he cannot harden the teleplasmic material in the light; it curls up. He gives red light interval to let us see [in illustration of this remark] what happens to the teleplasm [after exposure to light. The visibility was poor and no report was made by any sitter.] In repetition [of red light] the mass is seen distinctly, lying inert on the right shoulder and connected with the right ear by cord. The face and head are clear. [The diameter of the cord is estimated by Bird, here and elsewhere, to be a scant eighth-inch. It was here that the uncertainty as to what had happened toward the end of the 9:34 dictation became cleared up; this uncertainty had revolved about the question of where the Psychic and the teleplasm went as they faded out of the visual field of the sitters.]

9:39. With the Psychic's head withdrawn somewhat further into C than usual, Walter gives [a lengthy period of] dim red light through the rheostat in place of the usual red torch for Gerke to prepare for the second flashlight. The general effect is as before, save that now considerable teleplasm is found on the right side of the face. During this red-light interval [there is a prolonged outbreak of] extraordinary whistling in the corner near the victrola, as well as from C. Walter says the two came simultaneously, but no sitter heard them so. [Bird would not have believed that the whistling from the corner was other than on the victrola record, had this not been played through many times during the early parts of the séance without this whistling.] The

[7b] This parenthetic interpolation, while set uniformly with the others because its ultimate relation with the text is the same, is not contemporaneous. It arises out of a discussion between myself and an adverse critic during the period when this book was going through the composing room; and the recollections of the sitters, which I consulted in this connection, are of course a good deal older and less reliable than in the cases of other interpolations. My own memory of the incident happens to be much clearer than is usually the case after such a lapse of time.—J. M. B.

[7c] See page 213.

whistling continues, in and out of C, in red light and with the Psychic comparatively inert. [The light was too dim and she was too far back to support observation of her lips; but no person present could possibly consider receding from the positive location of whistles in the corner near the victrola.] Returning to the teleplasmic mass: some of this was on the Psychic's forehead, and it spread further over her robe toward the right breast [than on the previous view]. Whistling.

9:41. Gerke ready. Light, continuous since 9:39, now is put out. In darkness, Walter states that his main purpose in giving this long period of red light was to enable us to observe the stretching of the cord as the Psychic moved. Mrs. Bird and others verify [that there had been] motion of her head, but no sitter had noted the stretching of the cord.

9:42. Walter therefore gives a fresh interval of red light for this observation. All sitters see motion of the head and stretching of the cord. There is slight moaning by the Psychic here; but vocal effects of the trance have been much more sparing tonight than before.

9:44. A brief interval of red light shows a long mass of teleplasm lying down the Psychic's chest, extending pretty well to her waist, and showing visible connection with her ear. Bird is changing the cylinder [the first one being full]. While he was thus engaged [other sitters reported] further development of the teleplasm down the front of the Psychic's robe and on to T, observed in two intervals of red light. Another red light interval then shows the Psychic with head far forward, the teleplasm hanging loosely from some point of her face to T, and then stretching far across T. Walter says it hangs from the ear, not from some point of the face. The flashlight misfires. Walter again corrects the dictation, insisting that the teleplasm comes from the ear. Brief red light was given to check this; and so far as Bird could judge, there was no point of contact between the Psychic and the teleplasm save at the ear. It hung free from the ear to T, and [lay] draped far across T toward the remote left-hand corner. Gerke is refilling his flashpans.

9:47. A brief period of red light [is given]. The Psychic's head is more nearly erect; the teleplasm hangs in a long sweeping arc from her ear to T and across T beyond point of first contact [therewith]. To Bird, the end of the teleplasmic mass where it lies on T is greatly enlarged. Hill [checks this and] reports two dome-like protuberances like " solid bubbles " in the portion lying on T.

9:49. Unusually long red-light interval, preceding [successful]

flashlight. [The teleplasmic appearance was substantially as above.] In the period of visibility of the teleplasm [through faint self-luminosity] following the flashlight, pronounced visible changes were seen, best described as shrinking away and shrivelling up. Not [apparently] a shrinking toward the Psychic; simply a shrinking in diameter [and this change was observed in process, not merely through its ultimate result [8]]. A pulling in toward the longitudinal axis, says Hill.

9:50. The teleplasmic mass now lies down the Psychic's chest, nearly to her waist. [Whether it was still seen by its own luminescence or in an interval of red light, is not indicated.] She is in her chair, reclining backward unusually far. The teleplasmic mass is twelve to eighteen inches long and an inch or two broad, irregular in outline. During the shrinking or shrivelling process immediately above, several sitters saw what they characterized as the development of holes in the teleplasm.[9]

9:51. Gerke leaves the room to reload fresh plate-holders. [In two intervals, with brief onset of darkness between], a prolonged period of red light [is given to aid his passage and] for observation of the teleplasm. It lies in a mass at least two feet long down the front of the Psychic's robe. The sum total of Bird's observations here is: a more pronounced ramification of the lower end of the mass than he has yet seen. A sea-weed effect, suggests Crandon. During all this, there is considerable motion by the Psychic, resulting in movement of the teleplasm. It was not always clear that the latter motion was dependent upon the former [sentence edited in transcription for the sake of clarity]. Perhaps as a consequence [of the head motion and teleplasm motion] and perhaps independently, the sitters watching the cord report a pronounced swaying thereof.

9:55. [The above dictation was made in darkness, following the observations which it described.] During [this] dictation, Walter called for red light; the teleplasmic mass was seen entirely withdrawn from the Psychic's robe, etc., and concentrated upon her face and head, so that the face resembled a dead white mass, without features. Returning to the ramified effect of a moment ago, Bird emphasizes that many of the finger-like projections [at the bottom of the teleplasmic mass] had a slight curl.

---

[8] One of Dingwall's main grievances, it will be recalled, was that he practically never saw a change of the teleplasmic form thus in process. He would see the mass in one state, then after an interval of darkness he would see it in another. The present experience stands out in strong contrast with his.—J. M. B.

[9] See note 8, immediately above.



PLATE 12. SECOND FLASHLIGHT (9:49) OF JULY 25, 1925. THE PSYCHIC DESPITE HER APPEARANCE OF ACTIVE ATTENTION IS IN A TRANCE; THE TELEPLASM IS EXTENDED ACROSS THE TABLE FROM ITS POINT OF ATTACHMENT AT THE RIGHT EAR.

9:56. Walter says: "Turn on the dim red light and let the Psychic do anything she likes." She rises in her seat. The teleplasmic mass lengthens considerably, and hangs free in the air without actually resting upon T [though the Psychic is leaning forward so that it hangs over T]. The connection with the ear was preserved [and in fact provided the sole support and point of suspension]. Hill disagrees with the statement that the mass hung free of the table; Crandon agrees that it did; Dunipace agrees that it did not, that the end rested on T. [The light had been put out and the Psychic had presumably reseated herself.] Repetition of the episode [was afforded] by Walter, resulting in a unanimous agreement [by all sitters] that the teleplasm was four or five inches off the table, hanging freely from the Psychic's ear. On both these occasions the Psychic freed her left hand from Richardson's grasp, and made curious sweeping motions with it,[9a] toward and across her face, but without touching the teleplasm. Walter remarked: "If she touches it, I'll break her damned neck." [10]

9:59. Dim red light for two seconds shows the teleplasmic mass upstanding from the Psychic's face [and in contact at its upper end with the roof of C, as though fastened there and hanging thence]. It is still connected with the ear. [Richardson and Crandon report] hand control of the Psychic OK throughout the dark interval preceding this. Tapping on T [identified as] by Walter [when Crandon and Richardson repeat their report of hand control. In fresh period of red light] Walter gives another view of the upstanding teleplasmic mass. [The effect is that of approximation to the human form through the presence of two branches above and two below, as ultimately shown in photograph.] Hill and Bird [are so impressed by this effect that they] agree to make a sketch of it after the séance [but the photograph which was presently obtained made this unnecessary].

10:01. The demonstration [of the upstanding teleplasm] is repeated for Gerke's benefit on his return to the room. [Fresh red-light interval given for this.] Tapping heard on T.

10:02. The tapping on T continues. Crandon and Richardson report hand control [of the Psychic] OK. Renewed rapping while Bird verifies Crandon's control of the Psychic's hand.

10:04. Photograph taken of the upstanding teleplasm. Dur-

[9a] In both cases while the light was present.—J. M. B.

[10] Doubtless he had in mind the necessities of evidence, rather than any harmful effect upon the teleplasm. His concern over such points is a matter of frequent observation.—J. M. B.

ing the period of luminescence following the flash [all sitters not blinded by the flash report a] gradual swaying downward from C roof [of freed upper end of teleplasmic mass], as though the entire mass were withdrawing toward the right side of the medium's head. The word floating is used in description of this effect (with all possible insistence that there was nothing which could be taken for free falling).[11]

10:05. Walter suggests a photo of the Psychic, standing. There has been considerable whistling by him in the interval just past, as in other interludes. There is a strong inclination here by Bird, Crandon and Hill to identify an odor [strange to them and tentatively recognizable as] of teleplasm. It is distinctly not the odor of the flash-powder; Crandon describes it in terms of burnt bread. The word " pungent " is used by Hill [and by one or two other sitters whose observation of the odor was so delayed as to offer no defence against the implication that in their cases it was subjective. Bird was divided in his mind between " pungent " and " musty "]. Richardson reports a sensation as of teleplasmic touch across the backs of his fingers. It is now 10:07.

10:09. Flashlight misses fire. [Bird remarked here that Walter was much more patient and good-natured under this repeated failure of the flashlight than he would be himself if his rôle were comparable with Walter's.] Red light [in anticipation of the photo] reveals the Psychic standing, with perhaps the heaviest mass of teleplasm yet seen dangling [in space between her and T, and reaching decidedly below the level of the tabletop].

10:12. Gerke ready again. [In red light,] the Psychic stands with mass of teleplasm swaying in pendulum fashion from her ear; no other point of contact. The amplitude of the swing is such that the teleplasm struck Richardson's hand; and Hill reports, from his seat directly facing the Psychic, that the swing covered more than the entire length of T.[12] Most sitters were now blinded by the flashlight. Hill [was not; he] reports that the mass continued to swing [vigorously] until the Psychic was reseated in her chair.

10:14. Brief interval of red light given, in which it is seen that the teleplasmic mass has entirely withdrawn to the Psychic's

---

11 See note 8, above, and note 12, below.—J. M. B.

12 Offering convincing evidence that the mass weighs too much to explain away the observation that it floated down from its previous upstanding position because of its extreme tenuity. There can be no escape from the conclusion that an inert mass heavy enough to swing as this swung here would fall with practically no retardation by atmospheric resistance.—J. M. B.



PLATE 13. THE 10:04 FLASHLIGHT FROM JULY 25TH, SHOWING MASS OF TELEPLASM UPSTANDING FROM THE PSYCHIC'S HEAD, APPARENTLY SUPPORTED IN NORMAL FASHION AT TOP OF CABINET. THE FOURTH VIEW TAKEN ON THIS EVENING (10:12, P. 210) WAS SO BADLY FOGGED BY THE PRESENCE IN THE ROOM OF SMOKE FROM THE PRECEDING EXPLOSIONS THAT IT IS NOT REPRODUCED.

UNIV. OF MICH.

shoulder and to the upper part of the right breast. The connection with the ear is still visible. Dim red light again, for two seconds, shows the Psychic's head reclining to the left, the teleplasmic mass covering the right side of the face.

10:15. Red-light interval shows the teleplasmic mass over the left of the Psychic's face; [the right side is now in shadow, so that no sitter can say with certainty whether the mass is shifted or merely extended]. Bird is changing the cylinder [the second one having been filled]. The sash and curtains of the easternmost window are opened wide by Walter's instructions [following complaint by himself and some sitters of heavy powder clouds from the four flashlight explosions].

10:15. While Bird was changing the record, Walter whistled brilliantly. There is considerable white light in the room [through the open window; see details below]. Walter now announces [that there will be to-night] no more pictures, and gives two brief intervals of red light for visibility of the Psychic. He calls attention to the fact that the connecting cord actually enters the ear; and he remarks that in consequence, she is as deaf as a haddock. The teleplasmic mass here lies for the most part on the Psychic's left breast, with one rope-like filament extending down at least a foot.

10:18. Red light given for two seconds. The teleplasmic mass lies down the left side of the Psychic's robe to her groin. There is a constricted section part way down, with considerable flare above and below this; the shape of the whole being that of a very attenuated hour-glass. There is some suggestion of a knot at the constriction. [All this is checked by Hill as Bird dictates it.] All this is in partial white light with the window open. This white light was not such as to contribute at all toward the visibility of the Psychic to the sitters, but it gave very clear silhouetting of objects in the room to one looking toward the windows from any point whatever [this sentence edited in transcription, for better clarity]. Two further intervals of red light are given, showing the teleplasm lying in a complicated curved fashion down the front of the Psychic's robe, starting at [or above] the right breast, extending down and out to her left, then around in a sharp sweeping curve to the right thigh. There were at least two constricted zones, and a pronounced fan-like spreading at the extreme tip. Again two seconds of red light show the teleplasmic mass on the Psychic's right shoulder and, so far as can be judged, hanging down behind her. Hand control OK throughout this. A renewed interval of red light is given for verification of above supposition, the Psychic being now screwed around in her chair so that the sitters at her right can

clearly see the long filament hanging down behind her. The episode is repeated [in fresh red light], and the extreme lower end of the mass is seen below the chair-seat. This time the red light was of maximum rheostat intensity.

10:21. Audible motion by DM in C. Crandon reports an effect as of a big, hairy head on his hand, below the level of the Psychic's chair. [There is apparent desire on his part to connect up with the Pithecanthropus of Pawlowski's report on Kluski.[13]] Crandon reported that during this contact the Psychic's head was located, by her groaning, [elsewhere than at the point of contact. Walter said something which Bird interpreted in such way as to dictate:] Walter implies that what Crandon felt was the Psychic's head. Walter objected vigorously: he didn't *imply*, he *said* it was her head.[14]

10:25. The Psychic's foot is in Richardson's lap. Dim red light for two seconds shows her reclining far back in her chair, with the teleplasmic mass lying on the left of her robe, from the shoulder down to the waist or below. During this dictation Walter again calls for red light and we find the mass wholly on the Psychic's face, to the left. The distribution of the mass over the face seems to Bird to be more uniform than at any previous observation; [and he wonders whether all these moves since the last photo are not essential parts of the mechanics of withdrawal].

10:26. Dim red light for two seconds shows the teleplasm to be all gone. "No one in your world can find it," says Walter. Talking with Gerke, Walter says this white teleplasmic substance comes from the white part of the brain. Crandon and Richardson state that the fore-brain contains a considerable mass of white substance for which orthodox physiology finds no use. Walter states that the dark uterine teleplasm produced for Dingwall is of a different type. He repeats from last night that all genuine materializations are of the cortical rather than the uterine teleplasm. That's why we shouldn't ever touch the white variety.

10:30. Customary amenities between Crandon and Walter. The Psychic is out of trance.

10:34. Conversation by Walter in red light. A small dark megaphone is placed on T by Crandon, at Walter's request. The circle, allowed to lapse during recent minutes, is reformed. Walter suggests a telegram to McDougall: "Professor:—Ghost has brain storm—psychologist needed." Walter remarks that Crandon

---

[13] *Journal*, A.S.P.R., September, 1925; Crandon had seen the manuscript.

[14] Such disavowals by Walter of phenomena which if fraudulent he could easily claim are frequent.—J. M. B.

didn't even know his own wife from the " Pithy-Anthroscope " [see 10:21 entry]. Hand control OK. A red-light interval is given to verify that the cloth from T has been thrown over Richardson's head. Bird is now the victim of the same performance. Dim red light is given for verification of this; hand control OK.

10:40. Walter [has been] carrying on a very jovial conversation throughout the interval since 10:34. This [has been] punctuated by brilliant whistling.

10:41. In bright red light the Psychic reports something touching her on the right shoulder. Walter says good-night.

[Examination of C by Bird and of Psychic by Mrs. Bird, as last night. All details the same, with addition that the Psychic's robe was sweaty, and after examination was put in the tub for rinsing. It was then removed by Mrs. Bird and hung up to dry by her. The results of these examinations were entirely negative.

It is noteworthy that where the Dingwall trance sittings for the production of the uterine teleplasm had a profound depressive reaction on the Psychic, so that postponement was frequently necessary, she reports both tonight and last night that she feels extremely well after the sitting. There is more than a suggestion that the net result is actually a stimulating one.]

There runs through this chapter a thread of reference to use of a covering over the potentially luminous table, which is insufficiently clarified by the text of the records. The generalities of the situation are discussed in the textual interpolation of pp. 202–3; and the covering of the table as a means of meeting this problem is first indicated in the 9:42 dictation of p. 200. Here the cover was a bed-sheet, placed over the table at the start of the séance, and overlooked in the dictated account of the preliminaries. In commenting on it here we may refer to the footnote discussion of p. 194 and to the text pages there cited. On p. 206, at 9:35, we find that the sheet having been omitted at the start of this séance, an emergency arose in which a black focussing cloth was the most readily available cover for the table. At the extreme top of p. 213 we note Walter's use of this cloth as an instrument for spontaneous telekinesis. Anything in the nature of further summary of the above records, or comment thereon, is so effectively provided by the introductory remarks of the following chapter that we may without further formality close the present chapter here.

CHAPTER XVI

The Climax of the A.S.P.R. Sittings

Séance Records and Comment by the Editor

In reviewing Dingwall's report[1] of his sittings of January-February, 1925, I had written[2] substantially as follows:

"When we put on the séance table an object like the bell-box or the scales, we know in advance exactly what this object is. When it rings or levitates, we are confronted only by the problem of demonstrating its state to be what we had supposed it to be. There are no mysterious unknown factors at all; for if we can prove that its state was as intended and as represented, the immediate and simple problem of personal control *at the moment* is all that stands between us and a definite verdict. Even if we go beyond the mere validation of a valid episode and seek to discuss the psychic machinery, the *prima facie* terms of the problem are simple. We know exactly what has happened, in terms of sense impression, in terms of physical behavior, in terms of foot-pounds or degrees or inches. All we need look for is the dynamic agency leading to such result.

"In the presence of a manifestation which consists of the production of teleplasm from the entranced medium, everything is enormously complicated. Before we can reduce our problem to one of behavior or of units, we face the riddle: 'What is it?' There is a dominant factor of mystery which we can never overcome. Even could we overcome it, we should find that every difficulty marking the ordinary dynamic manifestations is present in exaggerated form in dealing with this static problem. The complications and the inherent uncertainty added by the mere fact that we do not know what this object is with which we deal, must be evident. But we can be more specific in our reservations.

"No prior examination can be attempted of this substance, for if it is genuine it is not 'there' initially. Any allegation which can be advanced in behalf of the possibility of concealed apparatus in a telekinetic séance is equally applicable to account for the presence of the teleplasm; but in the telekinetic séance the apparatus has still to be

1 *Proceedings*, S.P.R. (British), Part 98, Vol. XXXVI; June, 1926.
2 *Journal*, A.S.P.R., August, 1926.

used for the production of a pretty definite action by a definite object, whereas in the teleplasmic séance its mere appearance on the premises is the phenomenon which we must evaluate. Theories of fraud which may be advanced as to what it is or how it got in the room are not, as might be hoped, simpler or easier to meet than parallel theories to cover the ringing of the bell or the oscillation of the scales. If genuine, the teleplasm has the most fundamental anatomical nexus with Margery and we must expect that its examination or handling will be severely restricted—far more severely, and with far less resultant suspicion, than examination or handling of the ringing bell or the swinging scales." In a word, when we turn away from telekinetics and toward teleplasmics, we attack the manifestations that present the maximum of inherent difficulty.

Dingwall so turned by choice, as I pointed out in the critique from which the above is abstracted. My own choice of a field for investigation was made in accord with the spirit of these remarks. My entire plan revolved about the assumption that my sittings would be mainly telekinetic in character. As my June records indicate, this plan was initiated, and good progress was made with it in these three séances. But with the sitting of July 16th, Walter's interest and attention began to veer in the direction of teleplasmics; and the further we went, the more pronounced this became.

One large contributing cause here was the fact that at this time Richardson was engaged in a serious and continuous study of the mediumship revolving about the vocal phenomena. This study was of an importance fully equal to that of my own program. It was initially directed toward the problem of developing a mechanical means of mouth-control which should be of sufficient and sufficiently obvious rigor to constitute a demonstration of the independence of the voice; and in this direction a very conspicuous success[3] was ultimately scored. It was not, I believe, part of the original intent to seek out deliberately anything more than this. But for many months Walter had been in the habit of mentioning more or less seriously and more or less informatively the teleplasmic apparatus through which, he stated, his vocal effects were produced. A natural consequence of the holding, by Richardson, of a prolonged series of sittings devoted exclusively to the vocal phenomena was an increased amount of discussion with Walter about the nature of this mechanism. It was, I believe, mainly at Walter's

[3] See Chapter XX.

motion that there was grafted upon the original program of mere demonstration a further project for rather extensive visible materialization, photographing and study of what he would present as his vocal apparatus; but Walter's motion in this direction was enthusiastically seconded by Richardson and Crandon.

In June, when my séances were permitted (by Walter and Crandon) to take a telekinetic turn, Richardson's program was hardly under way, and had not defined itself at all. In July it was well under way and was beginning to define itself in the sense of the preceding paragraph. In August it had got in full swing and was completely defined in that sense. So that during this time there was every provocation for Walter's interest in the teleplasmic side of the mediumship, at the expense of the purely telekinetic.

One would have questioned, *ab initio*, the ability of Walter and the sitters of the intimate group to carry along two simultaneous investigations, two interlocking series of séances, with wholly divergent aims; and to keep these distinct. This failure reached a logical climax when I appeared in Boston for my August séances. At this time I was confronted by a proposal which I could not trace with certainty to a definite origin, but which I infer to have arisen more or less simultaneously and spontaneously in the minds of Richardson, Crandon and Walter: namely, that the Society sittings and the Richardson sittings be consolidated, to the great economy of time and energy. Neither in the degree to which this would substitute Richardson's control of the séance procedure for mine, nor in the complete concentration upon teleplasmics which it involved, was this proposal in line with my own plans or my own ideas. But it was so definitely presented to me, both in and out of the séance room, as constituting Walter's plan and Crandon's wish, that I was left without effective means of protest. It was obvious that I must go on in this way or not at all; and for the time at least, the choice between these alternatives was clear. It was plain to me that in so far as there was to be any stage management by the sitters, other than Crandon, this would be exercised by Richardson to my own exclusion. To this subordination of my own rôle, as well as to the radical divergence from my own phenomenistic program, it seemed altogether the wisest course to submit.

Séance of August 12th, 1925: 10 Lime Street. Dictaphonic record by Bird with aid of the other sitters; transcribed verbatim, with parenthetic elaboration by Bird.

Circle formed at 9:11 [Crandon reserving for himself the place at the Psychic's right, and requesting Richardson to place the other sitters.[4] Séance held in continuous darkness save for intervals of red light and flashlight indicated in the record.] Order, clockwise: Psychic, Richardson, Hill, Mrs. Richardson, Bird, Crandon, Psychic again. Three cameras set up [in place of the two previously used. One was of the ordinary model, using glass plates, the other] two were stereoscopic [using films]. Conant and Gerke in charge [of photographic work]. Luminous controls on the Psychic's ankles, but in view of the photographic program, not on her head or wrists.[4a] [The cameras took up so much room that it was possible to accommodate no more sitters in the circle than those listed; so] Mrs. Bird was on the sofa in the northeast corner.

[Bird operated the dictaphone, from his seat in the circle. The stand had to be placed further in toward the circle than previously, because of the cameras; and Bird was therefore uncomfortably remote from Mrs. Richardson. Part of the time he handled the mouthpiece with his right hand, Mrs. Richardson maintaining control by grasping his wrist. Part of the time, however, it was necessary for Bird and Mrs. Richardson to rest these two hands, in simple contact across the arms of the chairs; and Bird then operated the dictaphone with his left hand, free, depositing Crandon's right upon his knee for control. The temperature necessitated an electric fan; it stood on the floor, approximately behind Hill.]

[Preliminary search of the Psychic was unsatisfactory, for reasons which are more conveniently set forth in the record of the following evening (p. 223). She wore robe and slippers.]

9:15. In response to Mrs. Richardson's request that the fan

---

[4] I ought to point out that I was doing the recording of my own choice, and under my own procedure; and that this procedure involves my preoccupation with the dictaphone to such degree that I could not in any event occupy the place next the Psychic, with its demands for continuous close attention to the control of her members. Any criticism of the seating arrangements, therefore, must be on the general ground that Crandon was by his own insistence at one side of the Psychic; rather than on the specific ground that I was not assigned this seat. Had it been offered me, I should have declined it.—J. M. B.

[4a] Whether these controls are removed entirely, as on July 23rd, 24th and 25th; or whether those on the ankles are retained, in accordance with the remarks of page 189 and as we tried to do it on July 23rd, seems to be a point permitting of no generalization. Unless the phenomena and the conditions under which they occur were to present much wider variation than is the case during the period to which we are now giving our attention, it would certainly be the case that elimination of the ankle controls on one occasion to permit fraud would necessitate that this be always done. And the essential parallelism between the phenomena of Chapter XV and the period of the mediumship ushered in thereby, and those of the present period, entitles us to assume that inasmuch as the feet could not there play any large part, they need not play one here.—J. M. B.

be moved, Walter spoke [for the first time] and instructed that this be done, in red light. In the darkness following this he whistled greetings as usual.

9:16. Crandon announces trance. [On a recent evening, there had been obtained, on two plates exposed in the séance room, an apparently teleplasmic cloud obscuring most of these plates.][5] Walter refused to answer most of the questions [put to him about this]; but he told Conant that it was engineered from his side. In response to inquiry, he stated that he could do the same thing with a plate exposed in a camera in the dark séance-room. His philosophy—here he interrupted the dictation to say it wasn't philosophy, it was fact—appears to be that there was teleplasm, or "himself," in front of the camera, and that in the flash this became luminous or reflected light. [He represented it as a psychic accident, without intent.] With regard to some black marks on the same plates, Walter says this was himself, moving; he says these marks are joined by what he describes as a swish like a comet.

9:24. First vocal sounds of trance, which up to here has been entirely a quiet one. Crandon suggests that the noises, a curious blowing effect, come from the teleplasmic ball. Walter says no. [The reference here is to the "breathing head" of teleplasm.][6]

9:25. Blowing sounds continue. Most sitters connect them with difficulty in breathing through the teleplasmic veil.

9:30. Blowing sounds still heard intermittently. [There has been] continuous conversation with Walter, on various topics, to this point; [and beyond, remarked Walter. This turned out to be quite valid].

9:41. Walter stresses that for the purpose in hand, demonstration of his speaking apparatus, he is obliged to combine the two types of teleplasm [as characterized in the sittings of the preceding series. Bird had already been confident in his own mind that there was a liberal mixture of the philosophy of the Dingwall sittings and of his own; and that there was involved either contradiction or some such combination as Walter has now indicated]. No photos will be taken tonight, said Walter; [he would merely prepare for the following evenings, which he indicated would be brilliant affairs].

9:44. The Psychic's head is on T. Very loud blowing. Crandon reports her hand on the floor, under his control. She is erect

---

[5] The present text describes these adequately; and the date on which and the conditions under which they were taken were not recorded. Hence they are not reproduced.—J. M. B.

[6] See Chapters II, III.

again, after ten or twenty seconds. Immediately after this her left foot is on Richardson's knee for some twenty seconds. The Psychic is very restless; Crandon compares her grunts with those of a woman in labor [and Richardson assents].

9:46. [There is] considerable discussion of a questionable observation [by Hill and Gerke, the latter standing behind the Hill-Richardson space with his head forward and probably as close to C as that of any other sitter except Crandon and Richardson] of a "Maxwell-Parrish" blue light in C. Hill is positive that he saw it; Gerke less so; [no other sitter saw anything]. Walter said it was there, then called for dim red light. A white mass about the size of a fist was seen on the Psychic's shoulder; it was less irregular in shape and more rounded than [when] previously [seen by some of the sitters in Richardson's sittings]. Richardson said it looked like a rounded mass of coral; Crandon echoed this. Hill thought it looked like a new baseball; Bird found the surface appearance [irregular and fluffy], like cotton batting. Crandon thought the surface flaky, like vegetable ivory; and two other sitters used the word "flaky." Walter said that tomorrow night we would not know the teleplasm, and indicated that this is an important fact.

9:50 [at end of the above]. Walter states that the Psychic will not be feeling well tomorrow night but that we are to sit just the same. [Mrs. Bird, present through part of the examination of the Psychic prior to the present séance, reports that she spoke as though menstruation were imminent, and wore a Kotex napkin into the séance. She wore one again on the following night but spoke and acted as though entirely well.[7]]

9:51. A very faint tapping on the east wing of C was heard by Bird only after Crandon had called his attention to it.

9:55. Walter said that next night we might all touch the teleplasm. [This was realized.]

9:56. Richardson reports a touch inside his left thigh; at this moment the foot controls are visible to him; next instant he was touched again, on the chest. Again Richardson is touched, on the right arm; Hill verifies the visibility of the foot controls on the floor where they belong. Hand control by Richardson and Crandon is reported as uninterrupted through all this. Several times immediately following there is a stroking and plucking at Bird's left foot and leg, and a plucking at his trousers; [the latter is] repeated as he dictates. During this time Bird had extra control of two hands at the Psychic's right, [in addition to normal control of Crandon's

[7] But see page 232.

right hand; but he was without time to verify their identity as closely as he usually does. There was no specific reason for doubting this, however;] and Richardson reports control of her left hand [throughout the touches]. Both foot controls were visible throughout [these touches] to several sitters, including Hill. During this dictation M (dark) fell on T. [Initially there was no apparatus on T or in C, save this M, on the floor at the Psychic's right as always.] Immediately thereafter Bird was touched on the left arm, and Crandon felt the object—M or X—that did this. M placed by Walter at Richardson's mouth, [so that Richardson spoke through it]; all controls as a moment before.

9:59. A touch on Bird's right knee; all controls as before.

10:00. Several touches [apparently] by X felt on Bird's hand, [where it is grouped with three others] on the Psychic's [right-hand] corner of T. Both anklets were visible [at this time] and Richardson reports control of the Psychic's left hand. Bird's arm, bared at Walter request, is touched by what Bird took to be [the cold] metal mouthpiece of M. Here and a moment before, Crandon's head was controlled on Bird's arm. The cold touch was repeated.

10:01. M raps sharply on T a few times; all controls as during the past few moments. The additional controls are then dropped. Walter says these little manifestations do not count, he is just stalling us. [This is of considerable importance as indicating Walter's appreciation of the triviality of the phenomena in question.] Crandon, while Bird was being touched, felt something like a husky forearm going past the backs of three of his fingers, on his left hand; with sinew-like processes at work therein.

10:04. Richardson reports the Psychic's head down [on T].

10:05. Walter correctly reports the Psychic's head up.

10:05. [Richardson had for some time past been talking about the possibility of Walter's deflecting, other than telekinetically, the needle of a luminous compass; or producing some other non-telekinetic, magnetic phenomenon.] With Walter's permission, Richardson now placed [such a] compass on T [and the séance centered about it for some time]. The compass-needle oscillated [almost or quite at once]; the sitters could not decide whether [to infer that] Walter had done this, or that the needle had not come to rest [after motion of the unit in Richardson's hand]. With additional control by Bird of the Psychic-Crandon junction, the compass was eclipsed; immediately thereafter the needle oscillated through a ninety-degree angle. No sounds were heard here; but the sitters lacked any feeling of assurance that the compass had

not been moved en masse. Equally, the needle might have been jarred into motion by displacement of the compass while eclipsed. Finally, even if we assume the phenomenon to be genuine and confined to the needle, this might conceivably have been moved telekinetically, Walter working inside the case in this way, rather than magnetically as desired. Just how to exclude these alternatives would be quite a problem. [This comment on the compass action is included in the record, because it was brought out by conversation in the séance room among the sitters and between them and Walter. It has been considerably edited in transcription, for the sake of clarity and completeness.] Momentary eclipse observed, twice.

10:07. Compass eclipsed; oscillates; eclipsed; oscillates; eclipsed to Hill but not to other sitters; partially eclipsed several times. At this stage there was twice heard a rattle [of the compass case against T]. Crandon's left thigh touched. Compass eclipsed.

10:08. The foot controls were visible throughout this; and there was additional control by Bird of the Psychic-Crandon junction. The compass was eclipsed, one half at a time [and then the other half]. Hill continually reports eclipses at times when the other sitters see both ends of the needle, [which alone is luminous]. Walter says that he is working from Hill's side of T. There is considerable oscillation of the compass needle, off and on, throughout this. Bird twice [but only twice] heard faint metallic sounds [suggesting movement of entire unit rather than of needle alone. There next ensues a] rapid complex of partial and total eclipses. The compass [then goes] in motion, en masse and sharply, across T; and this motion is repeated in the opposite direction. Eclipses [follow], plus metallic clicking.

10:12. Oscillation and eclipse of the needle, followed by clicking, then by sharp movement of the unit across T. Momentary eclipse. The compass is then moved across T to the extreme corner near Bird [the far right corner as seen from the Psychic's seat]. There then occurs sharp oscillation [of the needle alone] without noise, and under Walter's conscious control [*e.g.*, he would address remarks to "Little Needle," giving it instructions which it would proceed to execute.] Repetition of all this is given at the Richardson-Hill corner of T [the Psychic's far left]. All controls are reported OK since 10:05, including Bird's additional hand control.

10:16. Complicated compass manipulations occurring while Bird is engaged in changing the cylinder [are accordingly not recorded in detail]. The ambiguity of the compass experiment

leads to discussion of the psychic closing of an electric circuit [under conditions more lending themselves to exclusion of telekinetic or normal mechanical action]. Walter says he can close a gap of five inches, and can make the teleplasm conductive or nonconductive, at will. It becomes conductive or the reverse en masse, he says, and not in detail. He thinks he could do this in red light, [which would be essential to rule out endless discussion about search of the Psychic and use of her hands while thought to be under control. (In answer to a query)] Walter says that the choice of electrical properties in the teleplasm is not a matter of will alone; it consists in a physical abstraction [or addition] of something. He says he puts "air" between our terminal and his to produce nonconductivity. To Bird's objection that this [begs the question, since it] constitutes an incomplete closing of the gap, he replies that for him the closure is complete, though for us it is not. He says he takes the pores of the teleplasm and fills them with "air." The discussion closed with Walter's statement, [usual under similar circumstances,] that the ideas which he is trying to express are foreign to our concepts [and that he must accordingly do his best to put them across through crude analogy].

10:24. The compass is still on T, and occasionally moves or is eclipsed.

10:25. Telephone; Bird takes the Psychic's right hand as Crandon leaves.

10:29. Crandon returns and the normal circle is reëstablished.

10:30. Trance terminates.

10:33. After a little final discussion Walter says good night and the séance ends. The Psychic a few minutes later reports stomach cramps.

Séance of August 13th, 1925; 10 Lime Street. Dictaphonic record by Bird with aid of other sitters; transcribed verbatim, with parenthetic elaboration by Bird.

Circle formed at 9:00 P.M., [under same procedure by Crandon and Richardson as preceding night. Séance held in darkness throughout, save for intervals of red light and flashlight, as recorded.] Order, clockwise: Psychic, Richardson, Hill, Mrs. Richardson, Bird, Crandon, Psychic again. [Dictaphonic arrangements as the night before.] Mrs. Bird on a chair immediately behind the dictaphone, in Bird-Mrs. Richardson space, [whence it was hoped that she would have better view of table-cabinet region than the preceding night. Her omission from the circle, it should be specified, is rather in accord with her own wishes.] Luminous

controls on ankles, but those on head and wrists omitted in view of the photographic program. [Cameras as night before, Conant and Gerke in attendance.]

[The Psychic wore robe and slippers. On the 12th, Mrs. Bird reported that so far as her own part therein was concerned, the search of the Psychic was not satisfactory. Mrs. Richardson and Mrs. Bird officiated together; but in the middle of the process Mrs. Richardson and the Psychic entered the bath room together and closed the door, leaving Mrs. Bird without. On the present evening, Mrs. Bird conducted the preliminary examination alone, Mrs. Richardson not being in the room at all. If one were then to seek to go behind the search, this could be done only by attacking its completeness or competence, and not the circumstances surrounding it. This is the more interesting, inasmuch as the séance of the 12th was largely a failure and that of tonight a brilliant success; while the only noticeable difference in conditions was that in the search, which should have influenced things in the other direction if at all.]

9:01. The Psychic complains of acute and universal itching. [No report was made regarding the degree of freedom of scratching allowed her by Crandon and Richardson.]

9:03. The Walter voice is heard. Walter stated that tonight the teleplasmic material of "his" larynx will be much hardened as compared with previous experience. What previously looked like a rubber ball will now be seen hanging out of the teleplasmic "mouth," to a length of about a foot. He is going to show us what he talks with.

[Once or twice during the evening Walter said "larnyx." Bird had never before noticed any tendency on the part of Walter or Margery to mispronounce this word. But next day, she duplicated this mispronunciation.]

9:07. Crandon and Richardson simultaneously announce trance.

9:10. Unusually sustained and tuneful whistling by Walter. He asks that tonight we observe particularly the location, etc., of the cord joining the teleplasmic mass with the Psychic. He states that the teleplasmic larynx is made once for all. It remains with the Psychic, not with Walter or in the room. A moment later he seems to indicate that it stays with him. He explains the apparent contradiction by saying that the apparatus stays with her, the force going with him—it's like the deflation of a balloon. [A rather clever simile, Bird thinks.]

9:14. Dim red light for two seconds shows the mass of teleplasm overlying the entire face. It is rather heavy in texture, of

a general veil-like effect. The cord is visible, at the right, running apparently not to the ear but downward at least as far as the right breast. At the junction with this cord, the mass is aggregated into a small globular formation. [The cord was much thicker than ever seen before; perhaps half an inch, certainly three-eights or more.] The trance becomes a complaining one; " Don't feel good, at all; head aches," [in petulant tones].

9:19. Bright red light for two seconds. The teleplasmic mass is seen heavily consolidated on the Psychic's right shoulder; the cord lies down the right side to —. At this point Walter interrupts to say that the extension seen lying down the right side of the Psychic's frontal aspect is not the cord, but the laryngeal extension of which he spoke earlier. The cord, he says, extends from the ear to the big mass; he gives an interval of red light and we verify this. The cord is seen distinctly running from the ear, decidedly smaller in diameter than usual; and the extension lying down the Psychic's breast is seen to have a definite termination. Crandon and Richardson state that the general effect of the mass upon the shoulder, with the extention below it, is that of a trachea running up into a larynx. [In Walter's conversation there has been some indication that he regards the extension as the larynx, and the generating mass as something else—a head, perhaps. Following Crandon's and Richardson's simile, the balance of the record refers to the laryngeal mass and the tracheal extension, or to the teleplasmic larynx and trachea. As the sitting developed, with its strong indication that Walter had in mind a picture of the tracheal extension as protruding from an oral cavity and as perhaps being itself a larynx, Crandon and Richardson were impressed with his departure from the anatomical model—even, perhaps, with his caricature thereof. Walter's terminology was influenced by ours, and toward the end of the séance he had fallen in with ours completely.]

9:22. Walter states that the trachea looks as though it entered a mouth in the laryngeal mass. At the preceding moment of observation, Bird had felt some resemblance to exist between the side of this mass facing him, and the human countenance; but not enough, or not clear enough, for him so to report. Other sitters now are inclined to agree on both counts.

9:23. In bright red light for one second the facial aspect of the laryngeal mass seems increased. Crandon points out that [as usual] he gave a very long count [for the period named by Walter for the light].

9:25. The Psychic's left foot is on Richardson's thigh. Dis-

cussing the possibility of an early flashlight, Walter says he has a lot to do before he can stand this.

9:26. The left foot is replaced on the floor. M [from its usual place in C initially] is heard scraping about immediately thereafter. Following this the Psychic's head is reported on T. After some ten seconds, it is up again.

9:31. Walter calls for one second of red light and gets about five. Bird and Crandon agree that the appearance is much as before, with the possible exception of a longer trachea. Hill calls attention to the fact that tonight's teleplasm is darker in shade than we have been in the habit of having it, of late. Muddy gray would perhaps describe it well, [as against the rather brilliant white of the cortical teleplasm of the recent sittings. After the séance, all sitters were agreed that the teleplasm was more or less white at the start, getting grayer as we went along. In this connection one might recall Walter's remarks about the mixture of the two teleplasms.] At this point Walter requested that Richardson follow the Psychic's right hand and permit her to do, under control, anything she desired. [Apparently there was no sequel to this request; at any event, Richardson made no report.]

9:32. Under fresh exposure to red light, the tracheal appendage is seen with two sharp bends. It lies vertically downward from the main mass for a space; then turns sharply outward and to the Psychic's right in a horizontal segment; then turns again and terminates in another vertical segment. [This sentence edited in transcription, for greater clarity.] The laryngeal mass is about the same [under this exposure to light] as before. At the conclusion of this dictation Walter calls for red light again and the tracheal appendage is seen extending upward to the Psychic's nose, entering the right nostril. It is smoother, and lighter in color, than before. The Psychic is quite restless during this phase, with noisy breathing. [Throughout the ensuing 58 minutes during which the tracheal appendage remained thus in the nose, there were intermittent indications of an obstructed breathing.] Walter protests that nobody seems to have observed how the trachea emerges from a mouth-like orifice in the larynx. Crandon and Gerke thereupon state [from their memory of preceding observation periods] that this is a fact. Under repetition of red light for the express purpose all sitters verify the [presence of the] mouth-like orifice, with a single exception.

9:33. Gerke having failed to see the "mouth," we have red light again for his benefit. [This insistence by Walter that everybody see, and record his seeing, before we proceed, is characteristic

of his recent attitude.] Other sitters agree that the orifice is more prominent than before [when the light is thus given for Gerke's benefit;] and Gerke, [in spite of his unfavorable position outside the circle at the east, largely in his own light,] sees this too.

9:34. Fresh exposure to red light to verify that this is the set-up that we want for the first photograph. After a discussion of whether all the cameras are focussed upon the proper region, red light is repeated within 30 seconds. While preparations are under way for shooting with all the cameras Crandon's hand is brought up [to the Psychic's face by hers] and he is permitted to feel of the [teleplasmic] larynx. [He reports it] very cool, at most 40° Fahrenheit. Richardson repeats this observation.

9:35. A camera having been knocked down, Walter gave two seconds of red light to aid in its restoration. The teleplasmic configuration is about as before. Walter seems able to hold the teleplasmic pose indefinitely, with no perturbation over the long delay.

9:39. [All cameras being ready,] the red light is again given for inspection of the teleplasm. Gerke states that the tube running to the nose distends and flattens as though respiration were being effected through it. Walter agrees with this.

9:40. Red light given for two seconds for final verification of [the teleplasmic] pose. Within five or ten seconds the flashlight is detonated, in red light; [but prior experience of all sitters leads them to protect their eyes rather than seek a glimpse of the teleplasmic mass]. In the luminous period following the flash, [however,] the teleplasm is plainly visible. [In this period of self-luminescence the teleplasm is not to be compared in brightness with objects that carry luminous paint; but it is clearly to be seen, in definite and detailed outline.] M is now observed [in silhouette against the luminous tabletop] to be standing on T, toward the west end. Crandon is permitted to feel the mass on the shoulder and the cord running to the ear. Clammy, cool, soft, sticky, [is his report; making the same experiment,] Richardson says the mass is slightly warmer than before. [In general, it warmed progressively with the progress of the séance.]

9:44. Richardson is permitted to feel, in the vicinity of the Psychic's nose, a rounded cord about the size of a pencil. Crandon reports that when his hand was lifted to the face, a loop of this cord fell across his four fingers.

9:45. Physic's head on T. Crandon reports cold breezes blowing from [the direction of the] Psychic. Hill feels these on his face and chest, Mrs. Richardson on her knees. The Psychic is erect again.



PLATE 14. TWO VIEWS, FROM DIFFERENT QUARTERS, RESULTING FROM THE 9:40 FLASHLIGHT ON AUGUST 13, 1925. OBSERVE THE HEAVY "TRACHEAL" APPENDAGE, SO-CALLED BY WALTER, THRUST UPWARD INTO THE NOSE; AND THE VERY FINE CORD RUNNING TO THE LEFT EAR. THIS TELEPLASMIC OBJECT IS STATED BY WALTER TO REPRESENT HIS SPEAKING MECHANISM.

UNIV. OF MICH.

9:48. Red light given for two seconds. The laryngeal mass is seen on the Psychic's face, on and above the nose and heavily concentrated on the forehead. In repetition of this red-light exposure, the teleplasmic "mouth" is seen very distinctly by all in the circle except Mrs. Richardson. The massed effect of the laryngeal structure upon the upper part of the Psychic's face is very pronounced. There seemed to Bird no normal reason why this mass should stay in place instead of falling.

[9:50 or a little later.] Flashlight taken while Bird was changing the dictaphone cylinder. After the flash the teleplasm is luminous, as usual. Walter calls for a black cloth to go over [the too-luminous] T; and this was supplied with considerable delay, confusion and breaking of circle.

9:55. Circle restored, complete and in good order. Crandon and Richardson are immediately touched by [something taken for] the teleplasmic mass. Richardson says this came first on his right hand, then on his forehead. Crandon felt something big, more or less like a head of cabbage; it struck the left side of his forehead.

9:57. The Psychic's head [is reported] on T immediately after the above.

9:59. Walter asks us all to draw as close as we can to get a view of the fine cord. Hill then reports vigorous breezes, focalized, as though caused by air issuing from a tube. Red light is given for two seconds; the Psychic's head is seen on T, resting on the left side. The laryngeal mass [lies out] on T, perhaps three inches in front of her face. The tracheal cord extends from her nose to this mass. Bird is particularly struck by the aggregation of this material at its point of entrance—[an aggregation which on transcription he distinctly recalls as having been inside the nostril and slightly overflowing therefrom]. Two seconds of red light to verify the photographic set-up. One camera is [reported by Gerke to be] out of focus under present status, [with the Psychic's head and the teleplasmic appurtenances so far forward from their usual position]. In fifteen seconds Walter gives us a fresh view [in red light]; and the Psychic's head carrying the teleplasmic ensemble with it is seen to have shifted considerably on T. The relation of the teleplasmic mass to the head is about as before; if there is any change, it is a little closer. Vigorous blowing by the Psychic in trance.

10:02. Red light for two seconds. The Psychic's head is on the extreme corner of T [at her near left], the laryngeal mass practically in contact with her mouth. The tracheal cord winds in passage from the teleplasmic mass to her nose, [rather than being

shortened to compensate for the reduced distance]. Repetition of red light for further verification of the pose shows the teleplasmic mass moved across T to a considerable distance from the Psychic's face; Crandon and Mrs. Bird saw the ear cord [this time,] as well as the tracheal cord to the nose.

In the luminous period following the flashlight [which was sprung here, at some time between 10:02 and 10:06,] the laryngeal mass and both tubes were very plainly discernible. Hill, given permission to feel the mass, puts his hand on the larynx and then gently pinches the trachea—[both items at Walter's explicit instruction]. Immediately after this, red light is given for several seconds; and most sitters felt they had had a more brilliant view than at any previous exposure. Bird was particularly struck by the attenuated character of the ear connection. Before Hill could report on the sensations of his contact with the mass, Bird was invited to feel in red light, which was given for this purpose and which lasted at least five seconds. Bird was particularly struck by the soft, yielding character of the laryngeal mass. Hill states and Bird endorses that the temperature was somewhat higher than on previous contacts [of this evening]; also that there was a feeling of very slight moisture. Hill got same general sensations from the nasal cord as from the main mass, save that it was even a trifle more yielding. Richardson was invited to follow the teleplasmic cord into the "mouth," in the red light. Nothing particular to report except that he did this.

11:06. Telephone. Bird takes the Psychic's right hand in Crandon's absence. [Instant advantage was taken by Walter of this opportunity to engineer a contact between Bird and the teleplasmic mass.] Bird's hand was carried over by the Psychic's, and pressed upon and into the teleplasmic mass on T, far more forcefully than Bird would have dared do it himself. Bird's hand made a depression in the teleplasmic mass, he judges, of ¼ to ½ inch. [In entering this depression, staying therein, and withdrawing, Bird observed no feeling of resistance to compression under his hand, as is the case when a flexible—*e.g.*, rubber—ball filled with air or water is indented. The character of the contact remained unchanged, no matter how deep the depression; and Bird was quite confident that he sensed a flowing effect of the mass, through which it may be inferred that the depression made by his hand was compensated by erection elsewhere, as is the case in handling kidney, liver, or other organic aggregations of similar type; rather than by an internal compression as in the case of the inflated ball. As his hand withdrew, this flow of course followed, and so rapidly that



PLATE 15. THE SECOND FLASHLIGHT (9:50) OF AUGUST 13TH; BADLY OUT OF FOCUS IN ALL THE CAMERAS, AND REPRODUCED MERELY TO COMPLETE THE RECORD.

UNIV. OF MICH.



PLATE 16. THE THIRD EXPOSURE OF AUGUST 13TH (10:02), SHOWING THE "TALKING HEAD" ON THE TABLE, WITH THE TWO CONNECTIONS TO THE PSYCHIC'S NOSE AND EAR.

UNIV. OF MICH.

in Bird's judgment the actual contact with his hand did not end until the original, symmetric configuration of the mass had been regained. This one would expect to be the case with the compressed ball; with the distorted organ-like teleplasm it would not necessarily follow that the return to form would be so immediate. All this represents subsequent analysis of the sensations which led Bird to put into the dictaphone the statement that] here, more than in any previous instance, he felt that he was in contact with a living organism. [The pressure on the dictaphone during this phase was so severe that Crandon's return was not recorded. Recollection would place it as occurring during or after Bird's second teleplasmic contact of the next paragraph.]

Hill and Richardson state that in [above interval of] red light, through shadow or other causes the junction between the nasal cord and the main mass was darker than the surrounding regions. Bird's hand is again carried into violent contact with the teleplasmic mass, [in darkness, as immediately above]. His fingers were used in giving almost the effect of kneading this mass, being driven into it [by manipulation from the Psychic's hand] again and again. Except for the increased vigor, the sensations of this contact were those of the preceding one. Mrs. Bird makes the point, [generalizing from her numerous views of the mass,] that visually the structure is waxy or doughy. Bird finds from recollection of his contacts that [tactually as well] the structure is dense.[8] He means to apply this term to the granular structure of the material, and not as indicating the hardness or softness of the mass—[this, as noted in several places, is decidedly soft]. Hill states and Bird emphatically endorses [as he has already indicated parenthetically] that one's impression on contact with the mass is not that of contact with any gas- or fluid-filled membrane. [When Bird, in amplification of this, stated that] it seemed clearly a homogeneous mass throughout, [the word was given an] enthusiastic reception by several sitters, as just the word for which they had been searching. Walter said we would see a great deal more in the pictures.

10:11. Richardson was instructed to give his two leading fingers to the Psychic. They were carried to her face and used to finger the teleplasmic mass. Walter asked Richardson whether he felt skin, and Richardson said he plainly did—a distinct change

[8] An interesting example of the tendency of one sitter to report in concrete while another reports and thinks in abstract terms. Presumably what Mrs. Bird means by "waxy" or "doughy" is precisely the same effect as that of which I think in terms of a density of structure.—J. M. B.

over what he had felt before, an unmistakable skin effect. Crandon, in rendering a similar report on a similar experiment, uses the adjectives " rough, almost warty." There is repetition of the contact by Richardson with verification of the rough-skin effect. Gerke, instructed to come near and make the same experiment, [hesitated to state at the time the only simile that occurred to him as giving mental satisfaction. He said he would report to Bird later; but Walter ragged him into reporting before the other sitters, to the effect that] the nearest he could come to describing the mass was that it felt like a woman's breast. Richardson was again in contact with the mass; then it was Conant's turn. Walter taps the mass audibly with Richardson's fingers. Conant, reporting on his contact, says that the temperature was somewhat below his own.

10:16. Richardson feels the mass in red light. Gerke asks where the cord from the ear enters the mass; Walter says from the back. Mrs. Richardson, reporting on contact, says the mass feels to her like dry dough; dough that has been exposed to the air for a while and has developed a bit of crust on its outer surface. Crandon endorses this and Bird is inclined to agree. Hill is asked by Walter to put his finger in the teleplastic " mouth " and to verify that the mass is cooler therein than elsewhere on its surface. Hill reports that this difference is clearly perceptible. The surface effect now suggests to Hill that of a fine-grained Morocco leather that has just been freshly finished. The general verdict is that the mass is getting more granular on its outer surface. Gerke suggests that the mass is larger than it has been; Bird agrees.

While Bird was changing [from the second to the third] dictaphone cylinder Mrs. Bird travelled around the room, [coming to a place behind Richardson], and felt the teleplasmic mass. On thus seeing it more closely than at any previous moment, she observed a slight pinkish tinge and certain faint vein-like markings. The feeling was that of a homogeneous mass under a thin, fine skin like a baby's; [but Mrs. Bird agrees with Bird's observation that the absence of compression and the characteristics of the flow under indentation were such as to forbid the assumption that we were dealing with a gas- or fluid-filled membrane].

10:20. Red light given to verify the set-up for another picture, which Gerke wants to pose so that it will show the junction between the ear-cord and the main mass. The Psychic is erect, the mass on her shoulder. All the touching by sitters of the past few paragraphs has been done with her head on T. The circle has gone pretty much into the discard during the past ten minutes or so; [but there has been no sacrifice of control of the Psychic herself].



PLATE 17. AN UNDATED SÉANCE PHOTOGRAPH SHOWING A TELEPLASMIC STRUCTURE IDENTICAL WITH THAT OF AUGUST 13TH. DOUBTLESS OBTAINED IN ONE OF THE SITTINGS OF CHAPTER XX OR XXIV; PRESENTED HERE BECAUSE OF ITS PHOTOGRAPHIC EXCELLENCE AND ITS PARALLELISM WITH THE PICTURES OF THIS CHAPTER.

UNIV. OF MICH.

10:24. Victrola slowing. Several sitters state that this occurred earlier, but by a wide margin not so strongly as now. The machine now is apparently about to die. [Walter made some remark which was interpreted as a disclaimer of responsibility for the effect.]

10:25. Walter asks Richardson to feel the ear-cord between the tips of two fingers. Richardson says that it feels like a piece of [cooked] spaghetti. The victrola has picked up and is running normally.

10:28. In a brief period of bright red light, the entire laryngeal mass is seen hanging and oscillating freely through a short arc [in a way interpreted by the observers as implying suspension] from the nose-cord. The red light is repeated to check up Walter's correction that it was not from the nose-cord, it was from the ear-cord. So far as the eye could judge, it was hanging from either cord or from both. Walter says there is no tension on the nose-cord; [but this cord lay perfectly straight, and] its bulk was such that Bird felt the statement would have to be taken on faith. [One simply could not judge whether it were under tension or not;] but the ear cord was clearly tensed. Hill points out that in the very brief interval between these exposures there was marked change in the outline of the mass. [Some sitters feel able to endorse this, others cannot say; nobody feels able to deny it.]

10:30. Walter objects to our taking anything on faith and gives a fresh exposure to red light. [Waiting for this, Bird and Hill discussed whether we should find the nose-cord detached, or lying in an arc, as a means of showing the absence of tension.] The nose-cord is seen detached from the nostril, fallen below the main mass and hanging there; the teleplasmic mass is now plainly oscillating on the ear-cord alone. [Walter had stated at the beginning of all this that his purpose was to demonstrate the strength of the ear-cord and the integrity of its junction with the Psychic.] The consensus of opinion placed the diameter of the ear-cord here at ⅛ inch. [Bird is certain this was a heavy over-statement; nobody realizes how big an eighth-inch is until it is driven home upon him.] In bright red light for another second or two, the teleplasmic mass is seen on the Psychic's chin and jaw as her head is inclined sharply to the right.

10:34. One second of bright red light is given. The laryngeal mass looked to Crandon like a whole face. The nose-cord is in place again. The mass hung slightly to one side of the median line of the Psychic's face, extending below the chin. It seemed to Bird larger than before, [and no sitter contradicted this]. Mrs. Rich-

ardson suggested that it looked like a gourd. In repetition of this red light, the teleplasmic mass is seen hanging below the Psychic's left cheek, partly above and partly below her chin. Both cords are as before. It seemed to Hill as though the mass projected almost at right angles from the left frontal corner of the jaw.

10:36. Flashlight. Walter promises an improvement for tomorrow night. [In fact we got a blank so far as the teleplasm was concerned.]

10:42. The victrola is slowing again; Walter says it has nothing to do with him.

10:50. After a long delay, stated by Walter to be due to exhaustion of his resources and consequent difficulty of proper withdrawal, he said good night. The Psychic apparently came out of trance little, if any, before this. When the red light goes on at the end of the sitting M is found on T. Crandon explains that Walter had used it to express his loud appreciation of a story told by Mrs. Bird just before his departure. He had been trying hard to get us laughing and joking, to facilitate his winding-up processes, but most of us felt that [under repeated demands of this character, these two evenings,] we had told all the jokes we knew.

[In the after-search by Mrs. Bird, it developed that there were slight pink stains on the Kotex napkin which the Psychic wore, tonight as last night. In view of previous experiences and allegations revolving about this point, it should be stated that there were no traces of this sort on the séance table or on the hands of the sitters who touched the teleplasm. During the day the Psychic expressed complete well-being; after the séance, exhilaration.

A generalization agreed upon by several sitters is that the Psychic shrinks from contact by the sitters with the teleplasmic mass; and that not always, but often, she groans under such contact. Bird is fairly confident that so far as his own contacts with the teleplasm are concerned, the groan has never preceded the contact, even when this was made by his hand independently of the Psychic's.]

For the séance of August 14th, Richardson had arranged with Crandon, at some time during the day, that he (Richardson) should dictate the arrangement of the sitters in the circle. My first inkling that this was the case or that it was planned to displace Crandon from his usual seat came after the company had gathered in the séance room. I think it probable that had my preoccupation with the dictaphone not made it obviously unwise for me to occupy the seat



PLATE 18. THE FINAL PICTURE (10:36) OF AUGUST 13TH, SHOWING THE LARGE MASS HANGING FREE ON THE CORDS JOINING IT TO THE NOSE AND EAR.

UNIV. OF MICH.

next the Psychic, this seat would have been assigned me—especially had I asked for it. There being no substitute available for me at the dictaphone, one had to be used for the position of control; and this was accordingly assigned to Hill. This choice I regarded as an entirely logical one.

Initially, the small dark megaphone (M) was in the cabinet, at the Psychic's right, on the floor, as always. Outside the cabinet, at the east (the Psychic's right), with the wing of the cabinet between her and them, stood quite a collection of apparatus: hole bell-box, doughnut, basket, etc. There was no place for these on the evening's program, but they were not removed because it has become more or less customary to store them at this point. Some or all of them had in the same way been present during the two preceding evenings. In accordance with the custom when it could be inferred that they would not be used, they had not been activated; but with some straining of the eye the various painted spots and areas on them were faintly visible at short range, in the séance darkness.

Séance of August 14, 1925: 10 Lime Street. Dictaphonic record by Bird with aid of other sitters; transcribed verbatim, with parenthetic elaboration by Bird.

Circle formed at 9:02, [and séance held in total darkness throughout]. Order, clockwise: Psychic, Richardson, Crandon, Mrs. Richardson, Bird, Hill, Psychic again. Three cameras in use as on two preceding evenings; Conant and Gerke in charge. Mrs. Bird outside the circle, on chair, behind Bird–Mrs. Richardson space. Luminous control of ankles, but not of head or wrists in view of photographic expectations. [Dictaphone manipulation as on two preceding nights. The Psychic, in robe and slippers, prepared for the séance under Mrs. Richardson's supervision.]

9:07. Hill reports a marked increase in the temperature of the Psychic's right hand. It started cool, and is now a bit warmer than normal.

9:11. No indication of Walter's presence having been previously given, M is heard scraping about the floor. Richardson reports contact on ends of his fingers.

9:13. Richardson reports trance.

9:14. Bird feels a contact on his left leg; Hill says it was not he. Immediately following, Mrs. Richardson reports cool breezes under T. [The fan was not going tonight.] Crandon and Richard-

son verify this, and the cool breeze is felt on Hill's left hand. Bird too feels it vigorously.

9:15. Contact on Richardson's finger and knee; contact on Bird's left ankle and instep as of searching finger (or toe).

9:17. Considerable blowing by the Psychic in trance, and marked tremor of her right hand.

9:20. Richardson touched on the back of his left hand; then he reports a fumbling contact on the front of his vest, as though in search of his watch. Hill reports a similar contact on the front of his shirt, while he himself has an eye on the foot controls.

9:24. Hill reports a marked touch on his shirt front, with foot controls O. K.

9:26. M fell to floor; [whence, is not known].

9:27. Victrola slowing badly; marked blowing and smacking in trance.

9:28. M is moving up Hill's left leg with considerable pressure. About to mount T, it falls to floor instead; then moves freely about under T. Hill reports foot controls visible and motionless.

9:29. M is heard on T; then is thrown violently to the floor on Bird's side. Victrola is not so slow [as it was], but is still below normal speed.

9:30. M had been thrown into a position [which seems] totally inaccessible to the Psychic, in the region between Bird's chair and Bird's and Hill's feet. Nevertheless Hill now reports it moving up his leg again. Neither Bird nor Hill had been conscious of its withdrawal to that side [from Hill's right]. Creaking of C heard; heard again; and a third time, quite vigorously.

9:34. The basket [marked with luminous paint but not activated, as stated above] is brought into C by Walter from its usual preliminary position outside the east wing. It is heard, and very faintly seen, moving about on T; and Hill felt considerable contact with it on its way into C.

9:35. The victrola is about normal and has been so for some time.

9:36. Violent shuddering and twisting by the Psychic, confined to the right side. Crandon remarks that sittings of this character have been held in the past, when it turned out that nobody was present except John [Richardson], holding the fort in Walter's absence. A voice from C [is here heard, saying]: "That's me." This was



PLATE 19. VIEWS FROM OTHER ANGLES (SEE PLATES 15, 18) AT THE THIRD AND FOURTH FLASHLIGHTS OF AUGUST 13, 1925.

UNIV. OF MICH.

followed by a whistle. After some discussion, it appears that Walter is present, in charge of the trance, etc.; but that John is doing the telekinesis.

9:37. It is not known with certainty, but it is believed that the luminous doughnut (D) was not initially on the basket (B), but on the hole bell-box. When D is seen floating freely about T, therefore, it is concluded that Walter brought it in as he had brought B, but independently. [These sentences edited in transcription, to smooth out very incoherent dictation.] Walter says [we are right,] D was on HB. Like B, it is extremely faint, [and visible with the utmost difficulty]. HB is now being stevedored across the floor, [independently of any motion by C]. Hill's hand is brought up to the right side of the Psychic's head. B is in motion on T and levitating with considerable freedom on and over T. In response to Mrs. Richardson's request B is dropped into her lap, whence it falls to the floor. Richardson is touched on the right knee.

9:40. B is in motion under T; both foot controls visible to Hill, and motionless. B is in free motion on the floor and in the space beyond T, between T and the knees of Bird and Mrs. Richardson. Foot controls visible and motionless, reports Hill. B is brought on to Mrs. Richardson's lap, back to the floor, to her lap again, to Bird's knees, and finally dropped to the floor.

9:42. Walter says he got a little too much light last night, from the flashes. With both foot controls visible to Hill and motionless, B rises to Mrs. Richardson's lap and Bird's knee, then rattles about in contact with T leg, Bird's toes and the floor. It rises to knee level and falls to the floor. Foot controls visible to Hill, and motionless. Additional control during this episode by Mrs. Richardson of Crandon's knee.

9:44. B in motion. Quite violent perturbation of C. In response to request by Mrs. Richardson, raps on C. Touch on Richardson's right forearm. D shifts across T. Foot and hand controls O. K. Hill reports a marked breeze from C on his left hand and forearm and the left side of his head. Strong apparent motion of C. [All the above in extreme rapid succession.]

9:46. The Psychic's elbows are on T and she leans forward. C rocks.

9:47. The Psychic is erect again. Violent disturbance of C.

9:51. Touches outside Hill's left leg; foot control [reported by Hill] O. K. The victrola is slowing badly.

9:52. Touches on Hill's left arm, and he O. K.'s the foot control. Walter calls for objects [to be put] on T for identification. Hill supplies one. Rapping heard on T. "A ring," says Walter, several times. [No response of any sort from Hill.] "Wait a moment," says Walter, "I'm not so sure. Don't know just what it is, but it's metal, like a Yale key, with a seal on the end." Banging on T ensues, [presumably with Hill's object]. Bird now attempts to identify this object. It is metal, he finds, and he thinks it is a stamp for use with sealing wax, with a hole in the end of a curiously shaped shank, so that it might conceivably be carried as a watch charm. [This turns out to be entirely accurate; but the idea in Hill's mind revolved about the design of the seal, which is in some way curious or unique.] Walter speaks up: "It has letters on it." [This is wrong, it is rather a design.]

9:56. Bird puts an object down for identification; [the metal cap, with rubber safety grip, off one of the dictaphone cylinders]. Walter taps T with it and says it is some part of a machine; he doesn't know just what; a little frying-pan arrangement, with something in it. Beyond that he can't say. [The description is quite pat, and strongly implies a tactile or pseudo-tactile or paratactile mechanism of some sort.]

10:00. Richardson put down [for identification a deck of cards in the case]. The victrola is rather slow, and there is considerable trance complaint. "A little book of some sort," [says Walter]. It falls to the floor. "Never mind, I'll get it," [says Walter]. Difficulty of some sort [ensues in connection with the attempt at recovery].

10:02. The object is restored to T by Walter. The victrola is in great distress. Walter: "It's a pasteboard box." Richardson: "What's in it?" Walter: "Oh, have a heart." [The pun is apparently accidental.]

10:05. Extreme tremor of the Psychic's hands.

10:10. While Bird was changing the dictaphone cylinder, Conant produced an object for identification. Walter says: "It's a celluloid measure of some sort, isn't it?" The Psychic's hands are both very restless and she groans considerably.

10:14. Returning to Conant's identification, Walter says that

as near as he can make out, it's saw-toothed on one edge and smooth on the other. Not necessarily saw-toothed, he modifies, perhaps just rough. About twelve inches long. Conant reports it a six-inch celluloid rule. The victrola is sick again.

10:16. Walter says he is going. The Psychic is out of trance. Walter reiterates that the reason why no teleplasm was got tonight was the extreme amount of flashlight last night. He says the light dissolves it; if he can keep it from getting luminous it doesn't dissolve, but the moment it luminesces dissolution begins.

Hill reports that at all moments of the séance when it was pertinent, the foot control was visible to him and motionless. He and Richardson report that hand control of the Psychic was unbroken at any time during the séance.

Conant's scale turns out to be graduated on both edges, but the graduations on one edge are much deeper than on the other, and give much more a tactile impression of roughness or indentation.

[The recovery of the apparatus from behind the cabinet is so suggestive of invasion that it seems desirable to specify: as usual, the door was closed and locked. The cabinet was found, at the end, in very approximately its initial position.]

The recovery, by Walter, of the apparatus from outside the cabinet, with its introduction into the theater of action, is unique in the history of the mediumship. The adverse critic will wonder whether the substitution of Hill for Crandon at the medium's right did not interfere with the procedure which had been used for the production of the teleplasm, throwing the Psychic back upon the necessity for improvization and thus leading to new phenomena. The feet alone would be available for the production of these, under the oblique theory; the hand control cannot be attacked. Escape from the luminous foot control along the lines postulated by the Harvard group would presumably have been possible; for the Psychic wore slippers rather than stockings.

The record does not contradict this theory, and in some features seems to bear it out. The first object recovered from the storehouse outside the east wing was the basket; and its appearance in the theater of action was preceded by creakings of the cabinet. Disturbance of the cabinet continued throughout the séance, and particularly

such disturbance preceded or accompanied the introduction of further pieces of apparatus into the active theater. From 9:44 to 9:47 there went on what might be interpreted as a restoration of the cabinet to its approximate initial position; after this, no further apparatus was brought in from without. And at 9:37 the record suggests that the hole bell-box was found in the way of this restoration process and had to be moved as a preliminary thereto.

Even Houdini, however, when obliged to picture the cabinet as tilted backward, admitted[9] that this would require the medium's hand; that she could not do it with an unaided foot. On the present occasion, then, we must picture the cabinet as shoved bodily backward, rather than tilted up to permit the apparatus to pass under it. But the arrangement of the circle was such that the clasped hands of Hill and the Psychic rested, not on the table, but on his knee and her own. That is to say, the two knees were close together, in contact intermittently rather than continuously; Hill's elbow and forearm lay along his own leg and on his own knee, with Margery's similarly on hers; the clasped hands would now be in contact with one or both knees, now perhaps for a time free in space as the Psychic's restlessness carried her knee further than usual from Hill's. Though of course no attempt can be made at any generalization covering the relations existing between both hands and both knees throughout the sitting, it seems clear that under any arrangement which might obtain at any moment, the Psychic's right leg could hardly be used with any degree of freedom, without the awareness of the sitter at her right. The allegation that this fraud ruled at the Harvard sittings requires rebuttal only by virtue of the fact that at all of these save the last, Crandon sat at her right. Hill in particular is a very enterprising sitter—on more than one occasion he has engaged in spontaneous exploration on a scale which I would not pursue without some expectation of receiving Walter's reproof. That the right foot could be used in moving the cabinet with him at Margery's right is only a little less preposterous than the supposition that it was the left foot thus working on the right wing. It therefore becomes necessary to point out that all the potential elements of suspicion in the record are equally the sort of thing that would happen if a bulky teleplasmic terminal were fishing for the apparatus around the corner of the cabinet. And when we give due regard to the fact that the foot which pushed the cabinet back would have to pull it forward again,

[9] *M. M.*, p. 420.

we may fairly insist upon the favorable interpretation of the whole sequence.

The general considerations set forth on page 214 deter one from attempting any serious demonstration of the reality of the teleplasm of the first two evenings of this series; a far more severe search of the medium than was given would be only one of several elements which would have to be added before any rational person would make such attempt. We can, however, and we must, at this stage pause to ask just where we have attained. The present séances are obviously of enormous interest and importance; nevertheless it is evident that my initial plan for examination of the telekinetic side of the mediumship is permanently sidetracked and defeated. A series of business emergencies in New York and elsewhere, followed by illness in the Crandon household, made it impossible during the ensuing two months for me to go again to Boston, and hence made it unnecessary for me to give such definite consideration as otherwise I should have been forced to give, to the question whether I should terminate the present project or make another effort.

I was inclined toward its termination. It did not seem to me at all profitable to study the teleplasmic manifestations until a more nearly inescapable presumption of general validity had been built up. For the teleplasm can never be proved valid on its own merits, as my introductory remarks to the present chapter indicate. Not only do the general considerations which I have there elucidated prevent this; we have further the very special fact that every photograph of teleplasm, in the very nature of the case, looks more or less like some particular material object and suggests to the skeptic explanation in terms of this appearance. Very clearly, the orderly consideration of a versatile mediumship like Margery's involves, first, a prolonged attack upon the problem of demonstrating the telekinetic validity; and only after some large degree of success should we pass to study of the intrinsic properties of the teleplasm.

This of course does not involve any recession from my personal conviction of validity; nor does it in any sense contradict that conviction. At this date I knew Margery's phenomena to be valid because of the extraordinary character of my exposure to them and to her and to Crandon. My experience could not possibly be explained away, but at the same time I could not put it before another person, a non-observer, with the demand that he accord all elements therein the weight which they had in my mind. It seems a trifle anomalous for one who aspires

to scientific method to say that he knew the phenomena to be valid but was not in a position to insist that this had been proved. It *had*, however, been proved to me; but with due regard for the circumstance that we are dealing with a factual sequence and not with a logical syllogism, I could not put this proof forward too insistently for others to accept. Further discussion of my individual viewpoint and my public position in the light of the séances of these four chapters will be found on the opening pages of Chapter XXXI.

I had no intent of abandoning the mediumship, of course; any abandonment would involve merely the present project. And it seemed about time to admit that inversion of the program had brought about this defeat; when the proposal came from Crandon, who assumed the project still to be alive, that I make my "next" visit in October, in connection with the climax that was now being so rapidly reached with Richardson's VCO machine.[10] This suggestion I accepted, with very fruitful results so far as concerns demonstration through the VCO machine of the independence of the Walter voice. But the matter is so entirely one of the voice tests, and so little in line with the course of events that has brought us from the record of June 16th to that of August 14th, that it may well go into the chapter devoted to the VCO machine.

A summary of the work accomplished in the present project, if made at the time, would be considerably less sanguine than if made to-day, in 1927. For to-day we have behind us the extremely clean-cut demonstration of validity through use of the glass cabinet.[11] It really seems as though we are now entitled to say that no rational critic has the right of resisting the accumulated weight of the evidence. If this be so, we may turn back to August, 1925, for study of the other aspect of the case, secure in the presumption of validity reflected upon this by the 1926 history of the case. From this viewpoint, the work of July and August, 1925, was very important and altogether worth while. At the time, of course, one could only lay these records aside for future reference, in the hope that the future course of the case would thus make them citable as documents of importance.

One positive and final statement remains to be made. The complete success of the dictaphonic recording was now a matter of no possible question; and the balance of advantages and disadvantages

---

[10] Chapter XX.
[11] Chapters XXV, XXVI, XXVIII, XXIX, etc.

seemed somewhat in favor of my giving it my personal attention. The gain in recording under this procedure more than offsets any slight loss in my own ability to concentrate upon observation. For the recording is my own unique responsibility, and nobody else can discharge this responsibility for me; whereas the very fact that I record the *observations of all sitters* is a confession that *this* part of the séance-room duties is not my own exclusive prerogative. Moreover, the distraction of my own attention is not at all critical; I can come very close to doing as much and as good observing as I need to do, even with the operation of the dictaphone on my mind and hands.

CHAPTER XVII

The Telekinesis of Later 1925

From the Séance Records, with Comment by the Editor

It must not be inferred that the four series of serious, formal séances afforded me on behalf of the A.S.P.R. and detailed in the four preceding chapters absorbed the entire attention of the mediumship during the summer of 1925. The reverse was very much the case; sittings were held more frequently during that summer than during the corresponding period of either of the following years, and the ordinary development of the case went on at approximately its ordinary pace. The present chapter, however, represents not so much any fundamental deviation from preëxisting telekinetic routine, as an attempt to keep the topical treatment of the case from getting too far out of step with the chronological sequence. The telekinetic standardization which I have stressed in Chapter VI and from which the sittings of Chapter XIII diverge only in detail, rather than in principle, was continued through the summer. A few of the séances of this period have already been covered in Chapter VIII. Dates on which the telekinetic routine was experienced in Lime Street, without features dictating the inclusion of full records in other chapters than the present one, include July 5th, 6th, 8th, 9th, 14th, 20th, 21st, 22nd, 27th, 28th, 30th, 31st, August 3rd, 8th, 9th, 15th, 17th, 18th, 19th, 30th, September 1st, 3rd, 20th, 26th, October 2nd, 3rd, 4th, and 23rd. On many of these dates there were episodes falling in some other category and described in some other chapter; on all of them there occurred more or less of the routine telekinetic display defined in Chapter VI. I give with a minimum of comment such extracts from the records as describe phenomena or conditions at all critical in any respect.

> July 5th: Murray put a small pocket note-book on the table; the light was then turned on for twenty seconds, and during that time the book moved without visible contact from anything, eight inches, away from Murray and toward the Psychic. The light was then put out. Crandon pointed out to Walter that this might be open to the criticism that the Psychic was pulling it toward herself with a hair or thread. "Very well," said Walter, "turn on the light again." This was done; and the note-book was seen to be

half on the west edge of the table and half on the knee of Hubbs. It now started in motion, without visible contact of any sort, and went nine inches eastward toward Crandon. During this, the Psychic's and Crandon's heads were moved freely to show that there were no connecting links between these heads and the moving book; after which Murray picked up his book, showing that it had no connection with anyone.

Whether we are to assume that the light continued throughout the motion and up to the time when Murray recovered his note-book is not clear from the record; if it really happened so, it is most unfortunate that the record does not make it clear.

On the 8th, Walter "for the first time picked the big megaphone up from the floor beyond the table, and put it on the table." This is a feat which could obviously not be charged against the Psychic's feet; but of course the record can tell us nothing pertinent to the exclusion of confederacy by one of the sitters on that side. The length of a teleplasmic rod adequate for this act would be at least five feet. Later, the megaphone was thrown from the table "completely over the cabinet, hitting the ceiling in transit and landing on the floor back of the cabinet." A brilliant performance was also given by one of the wicker baskets.

This was placed on the west end of the table and on turning on the red light it was seen to be balancing on the edge of the table. It was then lifted to vertical and slowly laid over to the horizontal in good red light.

On the 9th, the movement on the table of an object contributed by a sitter was given something of a climax. My own records says:

Miner put a small leather note-book on the table. This was the object of several isolated demonstrations. Red light would go on, and the note-book would be seen on the table, at rest; it would then go into motion and proceed toward the edge of the table. One or two final episodes were even more extraordinary. On the incidence of red light, the note-book would be seen at the extreme edge of the table, hanging over. It would teeter on the edge, seesawing up and down over space, and likewise moving further off the table to make it absurdly evident that it lacked normal means of support. It hung wholly or almost wholly off the table thus for several seconds, then descended to floor, but

not falling freely; and did not strike as from a fall, but rather as being laid down.

My record from which I quote the above also carries a reminder of a general factor that ran through numerous séances of this period. Walter, in philosophizing about the Harvard "exposure," had concluded that one way to prevent the future occurrence of that sort of thing was to revert to the late 1924 attitude of seeking to bring the pheomena out into the light. It was true that, influenced by the keen desire of his numerous friendly sitters to see better teleplasmic displays, he had been gravitating throughout the first half of 1925 toward phenomena occurring in large degree in darkness, with large dependence upon the luminous paint for such visibility as they might possess. He now definitely proposed to get away from this and to work for phenomena in light. Clearly, there may be a difference of opinion as to what constitutes "phenomena in light," but that is neither here nor there. Likewise, one would expect that now as in 1924 the atmosphere of the séances would be that of gradual approach toward ideal conditions of illumination; and this expectation was in accord with the course of events. Finally, the lesson for new procedure which the familiar sitters ultimately drew from the Code-Hoagland episode and put into effect in the séance room was a different one, and involved an attempt to idealize the conditions of control rather than those of illumination. But for the immediate present, Walter's séance philosophy became that of the gradual attack upon the production of phenomena in light. In accordance with this philosophy, *all* the action of July 9th, to which any significance was to be attached occurred during red-light intervals. And I may also add, with my own endorsement, the following from Crandon's record of the note-book action got on that date:

> The light was good, all hands were visible and none moved, the Psychic's head did not move, and her feet and knees were visible and apparently did not move.

For July 14th, in addition to the routine production of several other items in the telekinetic schedule, the performance with the basket was carried to new extremes:

> The luminous basket was then put on the table and made to balance in the dark on one edge of the table in a way that could

not be done normally. It was then put over on the floor to the right of the Psychic, and lifted thence to the table and higher. On request of Hill it was turned upside down and so lifted high in the left side of the cabinet between Richardson and the Psychic. These things were all done in the dark. Then in the dark the basket was lifted up to the middle of the east edge [1] of the cabinet, and then for a period of ten seconds of red light it was seen suspended there without apparent means of support. Still in red light [2] a similar phenomenon was shown on the west side of the cabinet, the basket hanging out horizontally toward the north with no visible support.

A statement from the July 21st record ought to be quoted, with the explanation that it approximates to the regular procedure; but that the regular sitters are so habituated to this procedure that they usually fail to record it explicitly. The statement in question reads:

> All the apparatus was examined carefully by the strange sitters in full light outside the séance room before the sitting. The séance room door was locked throughout the sitting.

The record for July 27th indicates an unusual degree of precision of control: all the telekinetic phenomena of a very versatile séance "were accomplished under control consisting of De Wyckoff's hold on the Psychic's two hands, Miss Boring's hold on both Crandon's hands and her contact with his knees and chin, and the wearing by the Psychic of five luminous markers on her five extremities." This could be done on the present occasion without any question of Walter's disapproval inasmuch as there was no thought of taking photographs and no sitter able to handle the photographic technique.

July 30th saw one incident strongly suggesting the use by Walter of two separate terminals. The record says, of this:

> He put the doughnut in the basket held high by Miss Keith; then he seized the basket and held its handle and the doughnut apparently in the one grasp. But then, still holding the doughnut high in air and motionless, he threw the basket across the room. All controls were beyond reproach throughout.

On the following night, July 31st, approximately the usual performance with the basket was given, but over an unusual spatial range

[1] *I.e.*, at the Psychic's right, on Crandon's side of her.—J. M. B.
[2] But not the same continuous interval of light.—J. M. B.

and in zones to which it would be more difficult than ordinarily for the Psychic to gain fraudulent access. And the telekinesis of an article contributed by a sitter went to extreme lengths. The record:

> He next turned his attention to the luminous basket, ordering the luminous band to be taken off the basket itself but leaving the markers on the handle. In red light it was seen in contact with west edge of the table, sliding over 45 degrees towards Miss Keith. Then in the red light it erected itself and slowly laid itself over on the table. This was then repeated on the east end of the table and again on the north end. When it was done on the east end, before it tipped it was seen to turn 90 degrees apparently of itself before the other motion started.
>
> Walter then asked for someone to put a personal article on the table. Miss Clancy put her handkerchief on. When red light was ordered the handkerchief was seen on top of the Psychic's head and as she turned her head it fell off to the floor. Walter then called for something else, and Laura Crandon put her handkerchief, much perfumed, on the table. In the dark Miss Keith immediately noted the perfumed handkerchief under her nose. Then red light was ordered and the handkerchief was seen floating in the air above Psychic's head, undulating and rotating. The angles or corners of the handkerchief were pulled out in four points. The whole roughly resembled a jackstone. This was shown to us twice thus floating and the second time while we still looked at it, it decended slowly on the Psychic's head.

This handkerchief stunt was repeated a few nights later. The record for August 6th tells us:

> On request, Laura Crandon's handkerchief was put on the table, and when red light was allowed it was seen rotating slowly above the Psychic's head in the cabinet, free from all apparent connection with anything. Three views were given of this,[3] and each time it was nearer the Psychic's head.

On August 9th, after having thrown the megaphone into the space between the Psychic's chair and the back wall of the cabinet, Walter retrieved it himself, bringing it back to the table; the record asserts that this had never been done before. The throwing away of the basket while the doughnut was held steady in the air was repeated

[3] In separate intervals of red light.—J. M. B.

here; and, in the usual intermittent red light, an unusually fine demonstration was given of the balancing and erection of the basket at the edge of the table.

The statement of the August 15th record: "toward the end of the sitting, when he came to levitation of the heavier objects, Walter had to use light trance," is one which should obviously be filed for possible future reference.

The basket performance of August 17th was, apparently, in some details at least different from its predecessors:

> This was revealed in red light balancing at an impossible angle on the westerly edge of the table, directly in front of Bentley. It then went over still farther toward him, then erected itself, and then fell over on the table. On the east side of the table it was next seen balancing in red light. It then erected itself and rotated through 90 degrees, then tipped over. Laura Crandon put a handkerchief on the table and it was seen next in red light, rotating, or better spinning, at the right of the Psychic's head and six inches above it. This was shown a second time at a different level. The control conditions were "perfect."

The record for the 18th testifies to double hand control of both Margery and Crandon, presumably by the adjoining sitters; with luminous controls on the Psychic's ankles.

September 1st saw another very good demonstration by the basket. Red light was given and it was found on Abbott's edge of the table and tilted toward him at an impossible angle. "Then in good red light it straightened itself to the vertical, rotated 90 degrees, and then fell over horizontally."

The séance of October 2nd, I ought to state, must not be held against Prince in his refusal to be impressed by the mediumship. It is true that he had no immediate answer to the VCO[4] machine and that he never availed himself of the permission given him to visit the house in the daytime for purposes of experiment with it. But I suppose he would plead, as Rhine later pleaded,[5] that he did not *know* that there was not some way of defeating it. As regards the rest of the phenomena, he found no actual evidence of fraud but several respects in which the phenomena as presented paralleled the way in which

[4] Chapter XX.
[5] Page 512.

they would have been presented if done by the fraudulent methods which he had in mind; and other respects in which, to look forward again to Rhine's paper, they were given under conditions that might have permitted fraud, and that so far as he could see were not essential for genuine phenomena. All this is duly set down in more detail in Prince's own words in Chapter XXI.

To this date, in the three espisodes of handkerchief spinning, there has prevailed a distressing common factor—in each case it was Laura Crandon who was called upon to place her handkerchief on the table. The record for October 3rd meets this situation very squarely:

> Returning now to red light phenomena, Hill was asked to put a handkerchief on the table. After a brief time Walter allowed us to have red light for two seconds and we beheld the handkerchief suspended above the head of the Psychic, rotating on a vertical axis, but not hanging limp as it would have if it had had but one point of support. This experiment he repeated successfully; and the handkerchief was afterwards, in the dark, rubbed across the faces of two of the sitters. All phenomena were under strict double control in the dark and single control in the light.

The handkerchief stunt was repeated on October 23rd, and one who looks upon it in terms of pre-séance preparation will have to seek a new confederate; for while the record omits to state whose handkerchief it was, neither Hill nor Laura Crandon was present.

I have mentioned incidentally, at an early point in the present chapter, that the sitters met the Harvard "exposure" by the development of a new type of control. The first experiments with this control follow hard on the period to which we have now come. The result is that during the weeks of concentration upon these experiments, many of the familiar aspects of the case fell into abeyance. Routine telekinesis under conditions permitting inclusion in the present discussion was one of these; so we terminate the chapter here. We shall come back later to Walter's telekinetic routine; and we shall see that it was in no fundamental respect altered by the new conditions of sitting.

CHAPTER XVIII

One Sitter, and His Verdict

By the Editor

The present brief chapter revolves entirely about the personality of a particular sitter; and I may introduce it by giving in full the following séance record:

> Sitting at 10 Lime Street, July 10th, 1925. Present to left: Dudley, Adler, Mansfield, Crandon. Walter came through in about eight or nine minutes and seemed to be cheerful as usual. Mansfield was introduced; and he informed Walter that he had been a Spiritualist for twenty-five years, had reached the belief intellectually, had had it confirmed by subjective mediums, but had never seen a valid physical medium. However, he firmly believed in the reality of the physical phenomena. Whereupon Walter rang the [SA] bell the number of times requested in red light, and then rang it three successive times intermittently while Dudley held it high in air and turned himself around 360 degrees. Walter then "removed his force" and Dudley picked the bell-box up and it did not ring. Walter then did unusually brilliant levitation of doughnut, big megaphone and basket. He also rang the Dingwall bell-box showing his terminal. All the phenomena were done under strict double control plus the luminous wrist-bands, anklets and head-band.

For Mansfield's presence I was in large part responsible: I had sent him to Crandon, and had written privately stating that I could not quite make the man out. He was either a bit of a fool, or a bit of a rogue, or a tremendous zealot; I couldn't tell which, and Crandon would have to determine for himself whether he cared to admit him to the séance room. My experience with the man leading to this pronouncement was confined to two long interviews.

Mansfield called on me the first time without appointment, introducing himself as a very old and valued friend of the Society and of Dr. Prince, my predecessor as Research Officer. Ideas flow on to his tongue faster than they can flow off, with the result that one's main impression after he has been talking for three hours is of a deluge of unordered words. Disentangling the essentials of the welter

of disoriented conversation in which he buried me, the story that he had to tell was approximately this:

For twenty-five years he has been a fake medium, and has practiced all phases of this profession all over the country. As a result, he is intimately acquainted with all the mediums now practicing. He knows them all by their first names and knows all their private scandals and knows how all of them achieve their results. They are frauds—all of them, with a few conspicuous exceptions. These exceptions are mediums through whom *he* has had message material of one sort or another which defies explanation as other than valid. In addition, he knows that certain physical phenomena occur because they occasionally happen spontaneously in his presence.

He was at the moment more or less down and out, financially and physically. He was going to Boston, where he was planning to start a spiritualistic church—whether on a basis of genuine or of fraudulent mediumship he avoided saying and I avoided asking! His whole manner was insinuatingly and furtively confidential. He is exactly the sort of person whom you would expect to have no other address than "General Delivery"; and usually this is in fact the case with him. *But*—whatever reservations one makes about the man himself and about other parts of his story, it is abundantly clear that he does not exaggerate his knowledge of the ways and means of fake mediumship. In this respect I think he outranks anyone with whom I have talked. Houdini, for instance, was much the same sort of egoistic, voluble, disorderly talker; but his vaunted acquaintanceship with the actual processes of fake mediums was largely a matter of suspicion, inference and speculation. With Mansfield it is a matter of personal knowledge based on personal experience or personal contact with other operators whose confidence he enjoys. Sane or insane, honest or crooked, the man is an authority on fake mediumistic practices. He is the only person with whom I have ever discussed the subject, for instance, who properly appreciates the unwieldy character of most of the trick slates described by Abbott,[1] and who properly appraises the extremely high percentage of fake slate-writings that is got by simple sleight of hand with innocent slates. In a word, he knows his field thoroughly; and if Prince was in the habit of consulting with him as freely as Mansfield would have me believe, Prince will be able to bear me out in this judgment.

[1] *Behind the Scenes With the Mediums.* Open Court Publishing Co.

As a matter of fact, not only Prince but also Dingwall does bear me out. Mansfield is one of the very few persons aside from himself whom Prince deigns to introduce as witnesses to the phenomena described in "The Psychic in the House."[2] And Dingwall, when he was in this country in 1921-22, met Mansfield, and was by him shown what he characterizes as "a most extraordinary collection" of "lovely *gadgets*" for use in the production of fake physical phenomena. Mansfield is neither bluffing nor crazy when he represents himself as thoroughly familiar with this field.

Crandon's first impression of Mansfield was rather favorable; he realized that the man was none too stable, but entertained no doubts of his essential honesty. During the ensuing days, however, he had more opportunity to listen to his conversation; and he began to entertain doubts as to his good faith and his object in sitting. These doubts did not become dominant in time to prevent Mansfield's second attendance on July 13th; but they were at that date sufficient to bring it about that the major part of the evening's record dealt with the stranger's conduct:

> Sitting at 10 Lime Street, July 13th, 1925. Present, to left: Gray, Murray, Hubbs, Mrs. Hubbs, Dr. Brown, Mansfield, Crandon. The sitting was an hour late in starting because of a long discussion of mediums and fraudulent mediums which preceded the sitting, downstairs. Mansfield had given us a very interesting lecture on the fraudulent methods of both subjective and physical mediums. He said that his purpose in life was to expose fraudulent mediums for the purpose of encouraging the valid ones. He said he had devoted fifteen years of his life to this purpose; that he had made apparatus to aid fraudulent mediums, later to serve for their undoing. On the subjective side he told of himself posing as medium, of telling some one in the audience to hasten to the telephone and to notify his wife that the barn, forty miles away, was on fire; that he had arranged to have the barn set in a smoldering fire and to have the housewife come out and discover it at just that moment when notified by telephone. Then he told us of the arrangements between mediums by which they, in fair exchange, give each other tips on the various dupes in the way of believers who might come to them.
>
> On the physical side he showed us the typical aluminum trumpet in three sections used by standard mediums. He showed

[2] Page 156 of the volume named.

how two of these trumpets hitched together in the dark would reach across the average room. He showed us what appeared to be a pocket pen, which, with a trigger, would extend out 48 inches; then he hitched a luminous painted butterfly on the end of this and then waved it about in life-like fashion. He showed us psychic photographs; two he said were valid, the rest he said were faked. He tried to get our Psychic to accept some of this apparatus as a present from him. Of course she refused it, and at no time was she left alone in a room with him. Her friends were present and witness to every act and every word which occurred during the evening. He said that he was a working man, single, who, as often as he saves a thousand dollars, stops work and sets out on this hobby of his to expose fraudulent mediums. He seems to be forty-five or fifty years old, well nourished, prominent abdomen, very dexterous white hands and wears gold spectacles. A Masonic emblem was notable on the left side of his coat. We are inclined to believe that he is an emissary of some organization sent to size up the mediumship.

At the sitting Walter came through slowly, partly we think because it was so late. He rang the bell many times in the dark, cracked a few jokes, more or less aimed at our strange visitor; then rang the bell box in the red light the number of times requested by Mansfield, and departed at 10:40 P.M. The visitor then talked till midnight and departed in the custody of Brown and Murray. They say that he never spoke once after he entered their automobile. The evening was full of interest, and we feel sure that the visitor went away with a lot to think about.

The Lime Street regulars were much disturbed by Mansfield's behavior; and particularly by his insistence upon demonstrating and explaining the apparatus and procedures of fake mediumship in Margery's presence. They were not at all confident that this did not constitute an attempt to " plant " her in some way, as Houdini had done. In point of fact, it became obvious in rather short order that he had simply been fishing around, for his own satisfaction, to see what would be Margery's reaction to these things. That he was satisfied is amply indicated in an article by him appearing in the Boston Spiritualistic weekly, *Banner of Life*, for August 15th, 1925. From this article I abstract enough to make it a matter of record in this place that this very competent and none too lenient critic was wholly satisfied alike with the physical and the psychological evidence of Margery's validity:

The writer sought and obtained permission to witness the phenomena of Margery. He bore no letter of introduction and was not asked for references. He was a total stranger. He has seen all kinds of mediums, genuine and fraudulent.

Margery has spent and is spending much money in entertaining investigators and those who come to witness her phenomena. Besides the actual outlay of money, time, energy and labor involved, she must answer dozens of letters received weekly relative to her séances. For a long time she avoided publicity, and she would be unknown today but Fate decreed otherwise. None ever finds a fraudulent medium that avoids publicity and spends money instead of making it in demonstrating his phenomena.

Fraudulent mediums are apprehensive of strangers and if the least bit suspicious will refuse to admit them under any one of various pretexts. I have been told that Margery never refused to admit any person that proved his interest in her work, and most of her visitors have been strangers to her. The writer was a stranger and said frankly that he knew something of magic and fraudulent mediumship, yet he was gladly admitted to two sittings and sat as close as possible to the Psychic while the phenomena took place. In admitting strangers to her séances Margery has everything to lose and nothing to gain. She is risking the presence of one who might publish a garbled account of what took place and "explain" to his own satisfaction the phenomena on normal grounds.

Fraudulent mediums will not hold a séance in the presence of a magician or even of one with a slight knowledge of magic or fraudulent mediumship. Margery welcomed to her séances world-famous exposers of fake mediums.

Margery's mediumship is in a class by itself. Her work is not standard. It differs entirely from that of fraudulent mediums. And each séance is to some extent different, whereas séances by fraudulent mediums are standardized to a large extent.

Fraudulent mediums avoid as much as possible discussing their phenomena, no doubt through fear of making a slip. Margery discusses her work with all interested and answers fully any question asked.

Fraudulent mediums depend for their support almost entirely upon messages. Margery's guide, her brother Walter, rarely gives a message, or announces the presence of a spirit known to a sitter, or states that he has seen or met any particular spirit. A medium that never receives a message or "impressions" for sitters is something new.

Objects levitated by fraudulent mediums are generally from five

to ten feet distant from the medium and have a straight-line movement, and sitters are occasionally struck by them. Objects levitated in Margery's séances are generally three or four feet distant, frequently have a curved-line motion, and in many respects differ from the levitations of fraudulent mediums. No sitter was ever struck.[3]

Probably most Spiritualists think that the red light in Margery's circles is about the same strength as that usually found in séance rooms. The writer knows it is frequently many times more brilliant, far stronger than any fraudulent medium would permit. There are many phenomena not witnessed by the writer, reported in Margery's séances, which fraudulent mediums would find it impossible to duplicate under the same conditions.

I bring this chapter to a close with brief reference to an interview between Mansfield and myself in New York, some weeks after his sittings. He expressed his satisfaction and his conviction of Margery's genuineness, more directly than he had done in print. He was particularly impressed by the obvious fact that she had nothing to conceal, and by the honesty of her reactions when he tried to demonstrate to her some of the methods of fraud. And of course he freely admitted that many of the phenomena which he saw could not with good sense be visioned in terms of fraud. But he made a prophecy which has come out more than once. If they were not more careful in admitting others than they had been in admitting him, they would let themselves in for serious trouble from enthusiastic exposers of the sort who do not bother about keeping within the facts.

* * * * *

The above represents the present chapter as originally written, during the summer or fall of 1927, with complete consideration given to all the facts as they were then known to me. During the interval ensuing before publication, however, it has been suggested to me that in private conversation Mansfield has told quite a different tale from the one of the above extract. I have pursued these rumors into the western city of their origin, and have learned that in fact he has expressed dissatisfaction with various features of his sittings, and has even attempted to repudiate or explain away the document carrying

[3] By this, of course, he means accidentally and with force; he does not mean to deny the frequent intentional touching of sitters by Walter, with megaphones and other apparatus. Likewise, of course, in this paragraph he speaks more from hearsay than from direct knowledge of his own.—J. M. B.

his name from which I have just quoted. In view of the possibility that these viewpoints may exist in documentary form and may at some future date achieve publicity, I have interrogated the editor of the *Banner*, asking him whether Mansfield offered the printed report spontaneously or whether it was solicited; whether it was published in its original form or after revision; and whether, after its appearance, Mansfield made protest of any sort. Mr. Scott replies by holographic letter:

> The solicitation was all on his [Mansfield's] part. Dr. Crandon had nothing to do with it and no one tampered with the manuscript except possibly to edit it by correcting the English. He never protested, but on the contrary was very proud of his effort[4] and requested and received several free copies of the issue in which it appeared.

Whether Mansfield's true opinion was favorable or unfavorable, it would be sufficiently easy, assuming lack of moral fiber on his part, to suggest motives for his giving statements contrary to his actual beliefs. The reader must judge for himself to what degree Mansfield's dealing in contradiction robs his testimony of value. Whether it does this wholly or only in part, his first contact with the mediumship must be described as part of the history of the case; and the rest of the story must then be told in justice to the facts. Indeed, it is particularly necessary for me in this compilation to avoid any appearance of suppressing the fact that what might be interpreted as Mansfield's final and fully considered opinion was adverse; while it is equally important to get the whole episode on accurate record so far as I can learn the facts in order that subsequent citation of this adverse attitude may not be made without full access to all the details of his contact with the mediumship.

---

[4] This part of Mr. Scott's statement I can emphatically endorse. In talking to me, Mansfield displayed this same inordinate, almost childish, pride over having broken into print.—J. M. B.

CHAPTER XIX

Another Sitter: The Same Verdict

By the Editor

Another of the few individuals whose contact with the case has been of the particular sort that demands a special chapter in this volume is the Rev. Edward H. Cotton, Unitarian minister and one of the editorial staff of *The Christian Register*, a Church weekly. The sequence of events that culminated in his attendance at Lime Street began with his assignment to interview Houdini for his paper, the subject of course being Spiritualism and psychical research. The result was sufficiently explosive, even though Cotton's text as it appeared was necessarily for the major part about Houdini. I do not have conveniently available the date of this publication; but I can cite the *Literary Digest* of July 18th, 1925, for a summary of the article which is much more generally available than the original.

The appearance in *The Christian Register* of this extremely violent interview led to a deluge of letters of protest. Not a few of these came from ministers and laymen who had sat with Margery, who, for a wonder, had been mentioned but casually in the article. Westwood, for instance, told the editor of his knowledge of and interest in the Margery case, and suggested that Cotton be assigned to look into it as a fair sample of the best aspect of the other side of the picture. After some correspondence between Cotton and Crandon, this was actually done. Cotton attended his first séance on August 3rd, 1925. He read my Margery book and other available literature. He talked the subject over in some detail with me to the extent of an entire afternoon. And, as a result, there appeared two articles in *The Christian Register* for October 8th and 15th, 1925, the second of which at least was remarkable enough in its *prima facie* character. For while its predecessor was nothing more startling than an interview with me, as Research Officer, on the subject of physical phenomena, this second offering was no less than an interview with Walter, pieced together as a composite picture of Cotton's four evenings of contact with him during August.

I cite this literature here because it is characteristic of the reaction of a certain type of mind. In interviewing me Cotton would not, and I could not make him, stay off the subject of spiritism. I really talked

to him about the phenomena, stressing to my best ability the distinction between this and talking about the spirits. His printed report of the afternoon's proceedings seizes upon and magnifies every mention of the spirits, and revolves entirely about the connection of the phenomena with the spirit hypothesis. And when Cotton got around to the task of describing his séance room experiences, the physical manifestations are relegated to a position of extreme obscurity while he dilates about his impressions of the personal character and characteristics of Walter.

Of course the reason for this is obvious. Cotton is a minister, and his whole life has been spent dealing, on a religious and metaphysical basis to be sure, but none the less definitely dealing, with the idea of survival. The ministers who oppose spiritism and psychical research, we must always remember, do so not because they oppose the idea of survival. They do so for the very respectable motive that the alleged survival of the séance room does not look to them like the survival with which they are familiar; or for the less respectable motive that they fear it to be the same spirit world in the two cases and resent the intrusion upon their preserves. But whether they fear or welcome the evidence of the séance room, their major interest in it must be in its spiritistic bearings. This was Cotton's reaction: he was being brought into far more concrete touch than ever before with something that claimed to come from the other side of the veil, and his entire interest lay in analyzing this something and determining how it checked up with his pre-existent ideas. In his entire sanity and good sense and in much of his philosophy Walter checked up very well, and Cotton was strongly impelled to accept him as what he claimed to be.

I give this brief chapter to Cotton because of his published account of the mediumship and because his viewpoint is so characteristically a theological one. I conclude it by pointing out that he continues to sit as opportunity offers, and that there are obviously no doubts in his mind about the reality of the phenomena. That he accepts the spirit interpretation and refuses even to entertain any other may or may not be a weak point in his philosophical armor. It at least does not detract from his representative clerical character or from the value of his conviction of validity.

CHAPTER XX

Dr. Richardson's Voice-Control Machine

From the Séance Records, with Comment by the Editor

All the time that Walter had been playing with the water test,[1] Richardson had been working outside the séance room with the idea which, in its more nearly perfected form, was described by him and by me in the Journal of the A. S. P. R. for December, 1925. Starting May 10th, this apparatus was frequently put before Walter, and frequently improved in some detail as the result of observations upon and objections to the details of its use and the results thereof. The records are not always entirely specific as to the exact nature of these improvements and the exact form of the apparatus on a given occasion. On the date named, for instance, it is indicated that what was at that date regarded as the permanent model of mouth-piece was not in use; but the record is ambiguous as to whether there was any mouth-piece at all or whether the naked ends of the tubing went into the mouths of the sitters. The point is not an important one, since the test was in the nature of a preliminary one; but it *is* of importance to observe that Walter met this test with complete success on first encountering it. The record is given complete, though some of the descriptive matter duplicates that cited from the A. S. P. R. Journal:

> Sitting at 10 Lime St., May 10th, 1925. Present to left: Dudley, Adler, J. H. Brown, E. W. Brown, Crandon. It was not our intention to sit tonight, because the Psychic was not feeling at her best; but Richardson had brought in an apparatus for independent-voice testing and everyone was anxious for Walter to inspect it. This apparatus consists roughly of a large U-tube with a luminous float in each arm. One limb of the U-tube and six other tubes lead through the cork of a large empty bottle. Some or all of these six flexible gas-pipe tubes are held in the mouths of the sitters, including the Psychic; pressure enough is blown by one or by all into the big bottle and thus into the U-tube to raise one float and lower the other; this pressure is maintained by the mouth of each sitter and then Walter is asked to talk or whistle. If the pressure is lost, any sitter may be to blame. If

[1] Chapter IV.

pressure is not lost and hand control is maintained, and if the mouth of the Psychic is known to be free of anything that could close her tube, a positive result would tend to prove the independence of the voice.

Walter seemed much interested in the experiment; and at once, while the tubes were in everybody's laps but still in the dark, he did something which made the floats oscillate through two inches. Dr. Brown then showed that by tucking a rubber pencil eraser into his tube with his tongue, he could freely talk around it. On this Walter commented: "Yes, but I defy any of you to speak as I do with my voice." Dr. Brown then showed how the mouthpiece could be attached to the upper lip, while one could speak around it but could not whistle. An informal try-out was then made, the floats were blown to unequal levels and everyone obtained control of his own pipe with his tongue. Then the light was turned out and Walter spoke freely and whistled. When the new perfected mouthpiece comes no control of the pipes will be possible except by the lips.

Starting on the 21st, there was extreme concentration upon this new machine for vocal control, in séances more under Richardson's own supervision and less under Crandon's than is the Lime Street custom. No material alteration in the apparatus as a whole had been made, but the new mouthpiece was in use and is described in the record:

May 21st, 1925; séance for the purpose of making the first complete trial of Richardson's apparatus to prove the independent character of Walter's voice. The most important part of this apparatus is the mouthpiece which each sitter has. It is made of glass, like the curved stem of a pipe. About one and one-half inches of the glass tube is in the user's mouth; a large glass flange prevents further entrance. The end of the tube may be closed with the tongue. Two little holes, top and bottom, are in the shank of the tube; and these can be closed only by the lips. Thus, after one sitter blows hard until the luminous floats assume a position out of equilibrium, this condition can be maintained only if *every* sitter keeps the three holes of his glass terminal tightly closed by lips and tongue. All sitters tried, with the mouthpiece thus held, to speak and whistle; but in vain. Miner came nearest to it, but could not make a phonetic whisper and could not repeat either whisper or whistle.

In the dark, Walter came through very quickly in cheerful mood, saying: "I've been having great fun, sitting watching you folks. You don't seem to be able to work your own apparatus.

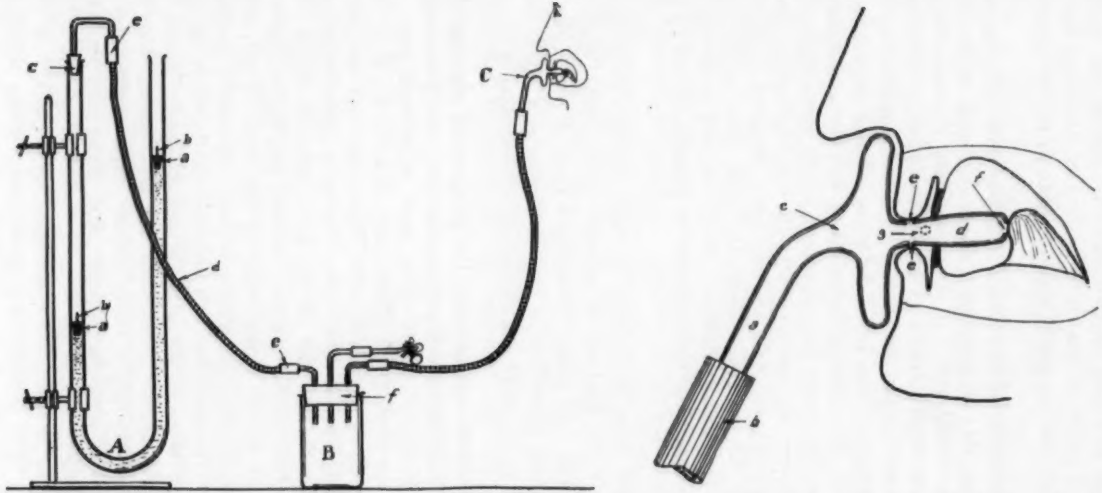


Diagram showing the operation of the VCO machine with use of the reservoir bottle; and vertical longitudinal section of the mouthpiece in the form used from an indeterminable date in 1925, to March 26, 1926. This mouthpiece was in use when the Editor sat in October, 1925; and for some time earlier. The significance of the lettered indices will for the most part be clear from the text; any which are not clear are interpreted on pp. 676, 678, *A. S. P. R. Journal*, December, 1925.



PLATE 20. THE VCO MACHINE, ASSEMBLED WITH THE RESERVOIR BOTTLE, AND SPECIALLY POSED BY MARGERY AND DR. RICHARDSON. OBSERVE THE CLIPS SEALING THE RESERVOIR CONNECTIONS WHICH ARE NOT HERE IN USE.

UNIV. OF MICH.

Give me time now and I'll try it." He then talked along merrily in the dark, and finally said he was ready for a preliminary trial. This was made with the ordinary circle, and had no rigorous value because the link between Crandon and the Psychic was uncontrolled. Walter spoke with the greatest facility.

Walter repeated this experiment several times, and then instructed us to set up double control: Richardson taking the Psychic's two hands and Mrs. Richardson taking Crandon's two. Under this control Walter spoke; and he improved upon Richardson's original test sentence by saying: "David dug a damned devilish deep trench." Then he whistled merrily. The control was irreproachable.

Walter then said: "Now I will show you one that will sting you." Whereupon he picked up the small megaphone and said: "Now blow up your machine." This was done, and Walter proceeded to talk and whistle through the big megaphone high in the air.[1a]

This experiment was repeated, and before Walter began to speak the column of fluid carrying the floats fell. Walter said: "The Big Chief, the Bugologist, could not hold his own machine." This was true, it having been Richardson who was unable to maintain the pressure. At another time it was Mrs. Richardson who failed to hold, and again Walter spotted who had failed.

Twice he repeated the following experiment: He began to talk with the machine blown up under double control and then instructed us to acquire single control.[2] This was done with complete success.

As a last type of experiment, after the machine was blown up Walter began to whistle his own tune which contains a lot of notes, first high and then an octave lower and much prolonged. This he whistled beautifully, and for so long that our tongues and lips ached from maintaining the pressure. The door was locked throughout the séance.

Two evenings later, they did it all again, with a somewhat different make-up for the group of sitters who had to hold the fort while Walter gave the vocal performance. The record (May 23rd, 1925):

1a A specific statement of control here would be welcome, but is not given.—J. M. B.

2 "Double control" means of course that the sitters next to Crandon (and at his right) and Richardson (and at his left) participated in the control of the Psychic by these two, reaching across the "suspect's" lap to place a hand upon the joined hands of suspect and Psychic. Single control means that Crandon and Richardson were in unverified control of the medium's hands.—J. M. B.

This evening was to test again Richardson's machine for proving the independence of Walter's voice. The six forming the circle first practiced in the red light to get familiar with the method.[2a] In the dark, Walter appeared in about two minutes. The tests of the voice machine were made as follows:

In the dark, with no control, the machine was blown up. Walter spoke and whistled freely.

With double control, Richardson having the Psychic's two hands and Mrs. Richardson both of Crandon's, the machine was blown up. Walter again spoke and whistled freely. This test was repeated.

There followed a discussion of possible flaws or weaknesses in the apparatus. Walter himself suggested: "One sitter could pull his glass terminal out of his gas pipe, and block the rubber tube so that he would be free to speak as me. To meet this, blow up the machine when you are ready; then give one second of red light to see that each sitter has a tip in his mouth. Also, before and after a demonstration you should test the tube from each mouth to the reservoir bottle, to see that they are all unobstructed."

The experiment was then tried as directed. Each sitter was seen to have a terminal in his mouth; yet Walter spoke and whistled freely. This was repeated. [The record then describes some vocal effects, different from those usually got, and ascribed by Walter to John. Inasmuch as they were not given under the machine control, they are here omitted.]

With all tubes in the mouths under Walter's instructions, the markers in the U-tube began to oscillate vertically, and air could be felt being blown into all the mouths. This could have been done by Walter through alternate blowing and sucking on the open top of the U-tube; or by one of the sitters, blowing and sucking through his tongue-hole while the others held fast. The floats danced up and down some fifteen inches. [Another brief section of the record that has nothing to do with voice tests is here omitted.]

Walter then instructed Mrs. Richardson to take Mrs. Litzelmann's chair, and had Mrs. Litzelmann stand between the Psychic and Crandon. Then under instructions the apparatus was blown up and held by all sitters; and then Mrs. Litzelmann sang, Walter whistled and John sang, all three at once; and once or twice Walter or John also laughed aloud.

The exact point of the blowing through the tubes, and of Mrs. Litzelmann's part in the last test of this evening, are not clear, of

[2a] A very necessary measure—see *Journal*, A.S.P.R., Dec., 1925; p. 684.—J. M. B.

course. But one would expect that in pursuing demonstration on a new apparatus of this sort to its logical climax, numerous false leads would be taken and numerous blind alleys entered. The fact that he does not display superhuman omniscience in travelling in a straight line to his destination surely cannot be urged against Walter.

The next display of the voice machine came in the presence of the Harvard group, who invaded Lime Street for the explicit purpose; and of Dean Edwards, who was there through an appointment which accidentally coincided with that of the young men from Cambridge. The record indicates that the purpose of the sitting (May 24th) was:

> First, to experiment with Richardson's machine for testing the independence of Walter's voice; and second, an attempt to make a paraffin hand. First, the six sitters in the circle practiced for twenty minutes, working with Richardson's machine to learn its technique. Walter came through in about six minutes, whistling a beautiful obligato to the new tune "Out of the Dusk to You", and this continued more or less extensively throughout the sitting. Walter proceeded at once to experiment with the voice machine. Hillyer had trouble maintaining pressure; so did the Psychic; and later, so did Crandon and Hoagland. Walter jeered at each in turn, saying that he was far more expert with the machine than we were. Finally, without control, the machine was blown up; and Walter spoke and whistled.
>
> With double control the machine was blown up; and Walter spoke and whistled. This experiment was repeated successfully, to a total of four times.
>
> All sitters expressed themselves as entirely satisfied of the independence of Walter's voice, in so far as they could judge from their own experience in trying to "beat" the machine. Considerable discussion then followed for fifteen minutes as to the use of a microphone as another test of the actual point of greatest intensity of the voice in the cabinet. This kind of discussion, taking interest from the current experiment, seems always to kill Walter's enthusiasm. Further, the three repetitions of the double-control operation of the voice machine were each staged after a flash of red light. Of this Walter said: "You'll have to wait a bit each time, for that red light dampens my ardor." At the end of the discussion referred to, Walter said: "There is no use in my doing the paraffin glove tonight although I am ready to do it. There are so many free hands in the room, it would be silly and would have no evidential value."

Following this, and while Richardson and others were discussing and planning improvements alike in the machine and in the technique of its use, it began to figure as a regular feature of the séances. Thus, on May 29th:

> Actual sitting began after a considerable amount of practice with the Richardson voice machine. Walter came through in seven or eight minutes and seemed to be cheerful. He had us make several tests of the voice machine without hand control, and then formal tests were made and carried out, with 100 per cent success, five times. Each time after the machine was all set in disequilibrium, the red light was turned on for two seconds in order to see that each mouth contained a mouthpiece, and to confirm the double control by Richardson and Taylor. Then each time Walter talked and whistled, the whistling once including a little obligato to the music. He sought by humorous remarks to make us lose our pressure; and once he succeeded, when he said: "Hold it, you devils, hold it!"

After the above séance, there was a long hiatus in the experiments with voice-control. In fact, before these were resumed, Richardson's interest in the vocal aspects of the mediumship had led to another excursion into photography. The memorandum of the conference with Walter on August 1st is meager, but tells the story:

> Walter came at once and was told Richardson's desires. He replied that if we wanted a picture of his [Walter's] voice apparatus, we would have to sit with the same group for three successive nights, August 4th, 5th and 6th; but not to have the photographers present until the last two nights. He said further, that he does not want us to sit more than three nights a week hereafter. Walter emphasized his remarks with many loud poundings on the table.

It does not appear from the records that this program was carried through with complete accuracy. The sittings of the 5th and 6th appear; but that of the 4th was replaced, apparently, by a sitting on the 3rd. At all three of these, the same circle was present; except that Cotton was absent on the 6th, while Hill and Litzelmann exchanged positions in the circle on that date. The photographers were absent on the 3rd, according to schedule; and on this date the séance was devoted largely to the routine of telekinesis and identification of objects. At the end, however;

> Walter then proceeded to put the Psychic into trance, saying that all the work done tonight was only to stall us along and keep us amused; that as a matter of fact he and his gang were all very busy preparing for the next two nights.

On these two nights, Conant and Gerke were in attendance and pictures were made. The thoracic or pharyngeal character of the teleplasmic masses presented on these evenings, however, was so far from evident that I deal with the records elsewhere; they will be found as part of a teleplasmic sequence in Chapter XXIV. And there is nothing more of the voice machine in the record until the middle of September. It had been intended to use it on the 10th, and on that date it was prepared for use; but Walter said that he could do nothing with it on account of the conditions remaining from the excessive exposure to white light on August 13th. He represented himself as working to restore his psychic apparatus to a condition of operativeness; and it was ostensibly his absorption in this task that dominated the séance to the exclusion of all physical effects of any account. On the 11th (September) he said that the damage had been made good and he could proceed. The record tells us:

> The main work of the evening was the use of Richardson's voice machine. Walter said: "Now get out your spitting machine. Everybody get a nipple of the psychic nursing-bottle." The experiment was now made four times in succession. The first time was with an ordinary circle and no light. The second time was with an ordinary circle; but just before the test, the light was turned on momentarily to show a mouthpiece in each mouth. At the third test Hill acquired control of the Crandon-Psychic link, and then the light was turned on for an instant. At the fourth, this was repeated. All four tests were completely successful. At one time, despite Walter's efforts to break down our gravity, we held on while he talked and whistled for forty seconds.

The Richardson machine was taken to the Litzelmann residence in Cambridge for the séance of September 17th, and was there used with the usual brilliant success. The record tells us:

> The Richardson voice apparatus was on the table with its six control tubes. The mouth and pharynx of everybody were examined before the sitting by Richardson, and each one after this examination was escorted by Richardson into the circle and his hands held until the circle was completed. Walter came through

in about five minutes, and seemed to be very cheerful. He directed a rearrangement of the circle until it was as above. The voice machine was then used with this circle in its ordinary status; which is the equivalent of no control, scientifically speaking. It worked perfectly, Walter talking and whistling freely. The test followed a period of ten minutes of trance. The same experiment was repeated, and again it worked perfectly.[3]

Then came the crucial experiment of the evening. All the details were carefully worked out by Walter beforehand, and he gave the orders. All the mouthpieces except two were clamped and closed. Of the two remaining open, the Psychic had one in her mouth, and Richardson had the other in his. At Walter's signal, Richardson blew through his mouthpiece until the luminous floats in the U-tube showed about ten inches difference in level. Then the Psychic gave her two hands to Richardson, and all the other sitters left the room and closed the door. Richardson then reports that Walter spoke and whistled freely for twelve seconds. The whistling could be heard by the other sitters from outside the door. Then Richardson rapped three times on the floor, as prearranged, and we all filed back quickly and made up the circle again. Walter said that this was in order to prevent total loss of his force.

At the end of this experiment, Walter took the Psychic again into trance and went on talking, saying merrily that he was pretty well used up and must collect force. Three times, in full red light, he talked and whistled while the Psychic was plainly seen to be in deep trance with lips motionless. He said: "John says that I have changed over from a psychic control into a broadcasting one."

Later, at Lime Street, many raps being heard at 12:20 A.M. in a brightly lighted bedroom, Crandon and the Psychic sat again. The Psychic was entranced, and Walter talked until 1:00 A.M., saying that he did this to gather force; and he directed that the red light be left going.[3a]

The procedure of the above sitting is open to criticism, to the extent that Richardson's control of the Psychic's hands started too late to be of rigorous value. He can not testify that while he was blowing the machine up, she did not use her hands in some trick enabling the position of disequilibrium of the floats to persist while she used her mouth for conversational purposes. She might, for instance, have plugged the open end of the U-tubes. Or, in complete default of any

[3] A paragraph of the record dealing with subjective experiences of the sitters, of no importance, is here suppressed in the interests of space.

[3a] See open reference No. 11, Vol. 2.

concrete suggestion as to what she may have done with her free hands, on the hypothesis of validity there was no necessity for them to be free and they should not have been so. This, and other equally obvious shortcomings of the procedure as the above record reveals it, were subsequently corrected. The one-man sittings with the voice machine became a regular though somewhat rare feature. They ultimately reached a point of very rigorous demonstration, and one entitling us to attach weight to the fact that the first attempt to use the voice machine with a single sitter was a complete success.

On September 29th the voice machine was again the central theme of the séance:

> Richardson's voice machine[4] was put into action. 1: It was worked in the dark without any control. 2: Red light was turned on just before the experiment to show a tip in everyone's mouth. Double control was then established of Crandon and the Psychic; *after which* the light was put out. A perfect success ensued, Walter talking and whistling freely for twelve seconds. 3: The same experiment was performed *with Crandon out of the room;* again a perfect success was scored. 4: The same experiment was again done with Crandon present, and with the ordinary circle, lacking double control; but as Walter was talking, he touched Richardson repeatedly on the arm. Walter explained the point of this: "The Psychic might have done something to the glass tube with her hand, or she might have touched Richardson with her hand; but she could not have done both." This comment is in fact not the whole story; for we have found it impossible, while the floats are in the unstable position, for one to extract the tube from one's mouth without losing the pressure.[5]
>
> We then asked for single sittings,[6] but Walter said he would not do this. There was force enough, but things were confused because of last night's sitting.[7] "I don't want the Psychic to sit any more with Foss," he said; "the rest of you may do so, but it gets things all mixed up for the Kid to sit with him."

Though the record does not show it, Walter probably arranged to give a one-man demonstration on the following night, September 30th; the record for that evening says: "this was to mark the second

---

[4] Hereafter, following the Richardson-Crandon usage, we shall refer to this as VCO (voice cut-out).

[5] See my testimony in this regard, in the *Journal*, A.S.P.R., Dec. 1925.—J. M. B.

[6] Like Richardson's experience of the 27th.—J. M. B.

[7] At Concord, with another medium; see Chapter VIII, p. 82.

experiment with VCO having only one sitter in the room besides the Psychic." It goes on:

> We now proceeded to the experiment of the evening. All the exits of the bottle but two were closed. The Psychic was given one of the active tips, and Hill the other. Hill took the Psychic's two hands, and the light was turned on. The machine was blown up to instability, and then we all filed out, leaving Hill and the Psychic. Hill had requested Walter to speak, using as many j's and x's as possible. We closed the door; and shortly heard Walter's whisper and his whistle. As we filed in the machine was still in unstable position, and Walter was whistling the wedding march from Lohengrin. Hill reported that Walter had spoken as soon as the door was closed, saying: "Jane is an extraordinarily jazzy jay-bird, I'll be jiggered."

I cannot too strongly emphasize the fool-proof character of the procedure here followed. The light goes on, showing the floats in their normal state of equilibrium, and the Psychic's hands in Hill's. While Hill and all the other sitters watch, he blows the machine up; and after all the others leave the room, so that there is no one in it free to speak for Walter, Walter speaks and whistles. It is not even pertinent to talk about cleverly concealed soft spots or valves in the tubing; if such existed, there would be no way to bring them into action. Objection to this test is automatically confined to two directions: the adequacy of the glass mouthpiece itself must be attacked, or Hill must be impeached as a confederate. If the critic choose the latter course he will find that his list of accomplices must include Hill, Richardson and myself, at the very least. I take it that if he is a critic to whose words we need pay any heed, he will then abandon the idea of confederacy, and center his attack upon the design of the mouthpiece. Is this really fraud-proof; or might there not be discovered some extremely ingenious manipulation of lips, tongue, teeth and cheeks that would beat it?

This claim, of course, involves the attribution to Margery of fairly superhuman powers; for it requires that this trick, which has baffled every other human being[7a] who has examined the nozzles, revealed itself to her casual inspection of the tips the first time they were put before her. It requires, also, that a new trick for beating the mouthpieces

---

[7a] An exception to this sweeping generalization might be made in behalf of the episode chronicled on pages 275, 357.—J. M. B.

reveal itself similarly after each of several radical changes in their design. Incidentally, with the approach to conclusive demonstration which we now make, we might do well to read formally into the present record the careful description of the entire apparatus given by Richardson in the A.S.P.R. Journal for December, 1925; for we have reached a date at which the VCO machine was in the semi-permanent condition there displayed. The pictures are reproduced herewith, in accordance with the general policy of giving in the present volume all important illustrative material, regardless of whether it has appeared elsewhere (see p. 260).

A rather well-known adverse critic was among the sitters of October 2nd; and, "contrary to Crandon's inclinations," Walter instructed that the VCO be demonstrated to him. The record goes on;

> The mechanism of this was explained to Prince, and then he distributed the glass tips: one to Saunderson, one each to the Sturtevants, one to Prince, one to Crandon, and one to the Psychic.[8] An experiment was now made in the light; then one was made in the dark; then two were made in the dark, each preceded by a brief red-light period to show that each person's tip was in his mouth. During all these experiments, Prince had the Psychic's two hands and Mrs. Hack had Crandon's two. Under these conditions Walter whistled and repeated the test sentence of the preceding night. Prince was told he could come down to experiment with the machine any time he wants to do so.[8a]

On October 6th the VCO again was used:

> First the machine was used in the light with all six sitters; then in the dark with the six sitters; then in the dark with three sitters and with double control of Crandon and the Psychic. This was then repeated with red light immediately preceding the voice, in order to show that both Crandon and the Psychic had their tips in their mouths. Then Walter said the "Jazzy Jane" test sentence; and for good measure added twenty bars of an obligato to go with the victrola.

On October 16th, we are told, "Walter used the VCO with great brilliancy." On the 19th, I was present for the first time since

[8] There being but six tips, Hill and Mmes. Uffield and Hack had to be left out of the distribution. Prince was included, rather than Hill, because the demonstration to him of the difficulty of operating the tip seemed more important than that of the non-confederacy of such a very eminent citizen as Hill.—J. M. B.

[8a] See the remarks on p. 247; also Chap. XXI. These should be digested before placing any appraisal upon Prince's participation in this sitting.—J. M. B.

August—my expedition to Lily Dale in August-September had conspired with illness on the Society's staff and in Lime Street to keep me away. The three sittings of the 19th, 20th and 21st marked the end of my official examination of the mediumship in behalf of the Society which had begun in June.[9] And they also marked the climax of the merging of my program into Richardson's, as described in detail elsewhere.[9a] Although it has appeared in part elsewhere,[10] I give my record of the three evenings in full, with the transfer of one paragraph to another chapter in view of its complete impertinence here. This record was not dictaphonic, for the reasons explained internally; it was drawn up in rough form each evening immediately following the sitting, and the finished draft here reproduced was compiled from these rough drafts after my return to New York.

Séances of October 19th, 20th and 21st, 1925, at 10 Lime Street, Boston. Present on each evening and in a circle clockwise: Margery, Richardson, Hamilton, Hill, Bird, Mrs. Richardson, Crandon; except that Mrs. Richardson was absent on the 21st. Present outside circle and in charge of camera, etc.: Conant and Gerke. Present outside circle as guest on the 21st: Newman Gray.

In view of the fact that Margery was not well it was agreed to substitute some other program for the teleplasmic one of Bird's more recent sittings. Richardson was approaching a climax with his VCO machine for the demonstration of independent voice; descriptions of this machine will appear in an early issue of the Journal of the A.S.P.R., and such material is accordingly omitted from this record. As Richardson stated that if he could get a report by Bird of a one-man sitting with this machine to add to similar reports by Hill and others he would regard his formal tests with this machine as completed, Bird agreed to make this the order of the day. In view of the fact that Bird's whole attention and all his physical resources will be completely occupied with control of Margery and operation of the VCO at critical moments the dictaphone reporting was suspended.

On the first evening Walter came through promptly and after [an episode described in Volume 2[10a]], the action of the séance was confined entirely to the use of the VCO machine. No attempt was made at a one-man sitting, Walter stating that he required

[9] Chapters XIII–XVI.
[9a] See pages 215–6.
[10] *Journal*, A.S.P.R., Dec. 1925
[10a] See open reference No. 31 in Vol. 2.

considerable practice and also (as was quite true) that Bird and Margery required practice in the physical operation of the machine. Only two of the mouthpieces were in use, and these were in the hands of Bird and Margery, sometimes with and sometimes without hand control of Margery by Bird. Walter gave in all perhaps a dozen separate episodes with the machine, speaking freely, and whistling brilliantly, while the float remained steady.

In this connection it must be remarked that Bird has experimented faithfully with this machine and found it quite impossible to articulate any other consonants than *m* and *n* under its use. He feels 100 per cent positive that any attempt at tricking the machine would involve its removal from the mouth or its blocking by other than anatomical means, while in the mouth. Richardson examined Margery's mouth before and after and made a negative report; and Bird has been quite unable to remove the mouthpiece from his mouth without leakage of air and movement of the float.[10a]

The second séance (October 20th) was a repetition of the first, except that the one man experiment by Bird was made. This was in detail conducted as follows:

Bird blew into his mouthpiece while Margery held hers, to prove that his tube was not clogged. Reversal of this test proved that Margery's tube was not clogged. Bird held Margery's two hands in his during this test and continuously throughout the experiment thereafter. Margery held her mouthpiece while Bird blew the float up close to the top of the tube, and then held it there. In red light which was now given, the other sitters verified Bird's control of Margery's hands, the proper position of the two mouthpieces and their two mouths, and the position of the float at the top of its tube. The red light was then extinguished, and they filed out of the room as rapidly as possible. The door was hardly closed behind them when Walter began talking. Bird does not remember everything he said, but among his remarks were the test sentence "Jane is an extraordinarily jazzy Jay-bird; I'll be jiggered." The purpose of this sentence is to incorporate as many sounds as possible, normal articulation of which involves a wide opening of the lips. During this same test period Walter also repeated the expression "phenomenish phenomena," which one of the sitters had used shortly before. Also he whistled brilliantly and laughed. Bird permitted this to go on until he felt there was

[10a] The record is defective to the extent that it fails to indicate any control over Margery's mouthpiece before or after the sitting. The several mouthpieces available were at my disposal and I chose two at random, later giving Margery one of these and retaining one myself, at random. What tests I made of the due operativeness of hers, I do not recall.—J. M. B.

danger of his losing his air-tight grip on the mouthpiece. He then signalled for the return of the other sitters and some, at least, of them were in the room and had observed the undisturbed position of the float when Bird's grip relaxed and the float collapsed.

Repeatedly, on this evening, as on the previous one, there were brilliant demonstrations of the VCO machine operated by Bird and Margery in the presence of the other sitters. Likewise at one stage Walter signalled for a flashlight photograph to be made. He expressed the hope that some of his psychic apparatus would appear on the negative, but in possible default of this he insisted that the test be made with the machine in full operation. He made the point that this would show the float in its high position and the top of the open tube untampered with.

The sitting of October 21st was delayed for about one hour and a half while Crandon and Hill conferred with Griscom of the Boston Herald, with the other sitters, and again with Griscom. The occasion for all this was a publication in the Herald of the advance story about the findings of the Code-Hoagland group.[11] The acts of Shapley, Boring *et al.* in signing séance records which explicitly disclaimed the idea of fraud and later signing a very specific allegation of fraud, agitated Margery more keenly than any incident since that of the Houdini box. It was a foregone conclusion that when we did sit we would get nothing but conversation from Walter. It was likewise to be assumed that Walter would be much calmer and more philosophic about it all than Margery. Both of these easy predictions were borne out.

For the second of the three dates covered by the above document, Crandon prepared a record of his own; and inasmuch as it goes into more detail on some phases of the séance than mine, I give it as well:

Walter came through in about nine minutes and seemed to be cheerful but not very talkative at first. Later he warmed up and kept us full of laughter.

The Psychic was searched and examined by Dr. and Mrs. Richardson and her hands were either in the possession of Richardson or Bird throughout the tests of the voice machine. The voice machine was arranged for two sitters. The tips and tubes were both in possession of Bird, who tested both before he handed whichever one he pleased to the Psychic.

Walter now instructed us to try the thing out in the dark. It was done twice successfully. Then he threw the Psychic into

[11] Chapter IX.

a deep snoring trance with respirations resembling the Cheyne-Stokes effect.[12] This trance lasted for twelve minutes, with Walter talking freely between snores. The Psychic groaned as with labor pains and complained in a querulous voice that she did not feel good. Walter now said that he was going to try the VCO and would bring her out of the trance. This he did after she had been nauseated for two or three minutes with attempts to vomit. He now proceeded to work the test twice. It was successful. During these tests Richardson had the Psychic's left hand and Bird had her right hand and Crandon's two hands. Walter now said he was going to try an experiment but was not sure that it would work. He told the boys to get the cameras ready and they did so. The VCO was blown up and through a mistake in signals the flashlight went off too soon. Walter forgave it and took about ten minutes to recover himself. He now said that he wanted Bird to put his head down near the table, so that his head would appear in the picture. The VCO was then blown up and a flashlight was taken. Then Walter said "I have tried to show myself in the picture and it was taken for another very important reason."

Then the voice machine was used with Bird as the sole sitter. Everyone else went out of the room and we all heard Walter whistling. A period of red light preceded our departure from the room, showing Bird holding the Psychic's two hands and them both with a tip in each mouth. When we came back Walter was still whistling and the VCO was still blown up.

My successful use of the VCO machine, in solitary sitting with Margery, was regarded as more or less of a climax preceding the description of the new device and its operation, in a contribution by Richardson to the Journal of the A.S.P.R. This appeared in the Journal for December, 1925, and was supplemented by an article from my own typewriter. The two stories tell about all there was to tell at that date regarding the design and the use of the VCO machine, and they should be read into the present record.

Following the October sittings, the development of the glass cabinet[13] took up all the time of the group for several weeks. At first, with the Psychic in the glass cabinet and the sitters outside it, and often a closed door between them, there was no scope for use of the VCO. Presently, however, it was realized that the hand control of the glass cabinet solved automatically one of the difficulties of the VCO

[12] See page 195.

[13] See Chapter XXV.

tests, and these two pieces of apparatus were then brought together.[14] The only modification which this required in the previous procedure with the VCO was the dropping of the convention that one or more of the sitters must have a tube and a mouthpiece; the distance between the Psychic and the others make this a bit awkward. For two or three nights, all the superfluous openings into the reservoir bottle were clamped shut; the Psychic then sat with the machine on a shelf or table in front of her, the one tube in action and its mouthpiece in her mouth. As soon as it became clear that this was a permanent change, better form was achieved by eliminating the reservoir bottle entirely; its sole function having been to make it possible for a plurality of persons to work the machine. The Psychic's tube was now connected directly to the upper end of one arm of the U, and thus a radical simplification of the apparatus was effected.

The records are not wholly explicit, so I shall have to make out of my own general knowledge of the case the statement that after two or three sittings in which the point remained unsettled, it became the invariable custom for the Psychic to emerge from trance for the VCO test and to remain wholly normal for this. Despite her tendency to a slight claustrophobia, she found it easy enough to habituate herself to the hand and foot control, so that the maintenance of these bonds during a considerable period of consciousness irks her neither physically nor mentally. But the head control is quite another thing, altogether too severe for application to a conscious medium in the absence of a dominating motive for submission to unnecessary discomfort; so the custom rapidly crystallized of releasing her head when she emerges or as she is about to emerge from trance for the VCO test. One of the sitters then inspects the tip and places it in her mouth. She blows up the floats to the unstable position and holds them there while *all* the sitters withdraw to the doorway of the room, lending certainty to the negation of an accomplice. The records of Chapters XXV and XXIX will add details and dates, and will further demonstrate that the technique described took a little time to settle down into permanency and constancy.

The VCO continued to be used throughout the year 1926; but so far as its essential history is concerned, we may finish with it here, without too much chronological loss. Its next chapter comes with the standardized séances which began to take form in January, 1926,

[14] See pages 327–34, and Chapter XXIX.

and which constitute the theme of Chapters XXIX, XXXIV and XXXVII in their entirety, as well as of portions of the intervening and subsequent chapters. We soon arrive in these chapters at a point where the VCO takes its place beside the scales and the bell-box as a routine instrument whose use seldom requires more than citation by date and title.

But on February 22nd, 1926, as told on page 357, one of the sitters found that the VCO was not, for him, an absolute gag. He could do nothing with it if some other person put the mouthpiece in his mouth for him, in proper central position; the effort then to shift it would result in loss of air. But if he put it in himself, he could place it in the extreme corner of his mouth, with the tongue-hole bearing against the side rather than the tip of his tongue; and he could then whistle around it very well, and talk around it very poorly, just as he was in the habit of whistling around his smoking pipe as an amusing trick for his friends.

In spite of the restrictions governing Sherburne's performance with the VCO and from which Walter had amply shown himself to be free, and in spite of Sherburne's belief that his trick was a very special one which few people could duplicate, it was at once realized that the mouthpiece must be modified to meet this trick. Sherburne pointed out that his ability to do the trick depended upon throwing the mouthpiece to the side of his mouth; if a nozzle could be designed that would compel him to hold it centered in his mouth, he would be as helpless as anybody else. The problem was attacked along these lines; the cylindrical shank entering the mouth was changed into a broad, flat shank, of the full width of the glass flange and of the average mouth. The new mouthpieces had to be specially ordered and could not be received at once; so pending their delivery, the VCO continued in use with the old mouthpiece.

During this interim of working with a nozzle that was known not to be absolutely inhibitive of trickery, the test of March 12th, 1926, ought to be mentioned because of the unusually long period, 42 seconds, during which Walter spoke while the Psychic held the floats in their unbalanced position. For March 26th the new mouthpiece was available, completely filling the lip orifice and making lateral displacement impossible. It was tried out in a very restricted circle and gave Walter no trouble, so on the 27th it was permanently substituted for the older mouthpiece. On this date the VCO test was given with com-

plete success, Overstreet handling the mouthpiece and doing all the work of examination. A photograph of the new mouthpiece will appear at an appropriate point in the second volume.

This completes the history of the VCO, so far as its history involves anything beyond its routine use in the séance room. It became a regular part of the standardized séance, and will be mentioned freely as such in the chapters dealing therewith: XXIX, XXXIV, XXXVII, etc. But it underwent no more changes and was the crux of no more critical demonstrations. We need therefore say nothing more about it as a special topic; we may leave it to figure in the séance routine as it may chance so to figure.

CHAPTER XXI

An Unconverted Skeptic

Séance Record and Comment by Walter Franklin Prince
With Remarks by the Editor

On pages 247 and 269 mention has been made of the presence, at the séance of October 2nd, 1925, of Dr. Walter Franklin Prince, who in his capacity of Research Officer to the Boston Society for Psychical Research, stands as the more or less official sponsor of the viewpoint that Margery's phenomena are not proved and that they are in fact to be presumed fraudulent. On both occasions when I have spoken of Prince's presence in this séance I have indicated more or less explicitly that he was not convinced by what he saw. The facts of his presence and of his well-known antagonistic attitude toward the mediumship, however, seem to make a little more than this in order; and especially, it seems only due the reader that he be given the opportunity of judging just how serious are the specific grounds for Prince's non-acceptance of what he saw on the evening in question. The notes of the séance which he prepared or dictated on the following day were intended for his own private use and benefit alone, and were no more extended than they are since he did not expect to be called upon for any further public utterances on the case. He has however been good enough to put them at my disposal for use in the present volume, subject to the explanation which I have just given in his own words. They are dated October 3rd, and read as follows:

> I received an invitation from Dr. Crandon, through Mrs. Hack who had been present at an earlier sitting because of my request to Dr. Crandon, to be present at a sitting at 10 Lime Street, October 2nd. I arrived at 8 o'clock and was ushered in by the Doctor. Besides Dr. and Mrs. Crandon there were present the Rev. Dr. Saunderson, Mrs. Hack, Judge Hill, an elderly lady, Mr. —— and presumably his wife.
>
> There was considerable conversation between me and the Doctor before the others arrived, and by all in common before the sitting began.
>
> Margery was very friendly, has intended to visit this office, wants to tell me a psychical experience of hers, etc. Before, during

and after the sitting Dr. Crandon made many sarcastic and disparaging remarks about Dr. McDougall. Before the sitting I and others were shown the album of photographs of casts, ectoplasm, spirit photographs of Hope and Deane, etc., etc. After the sitting we were shown the pictures of the ectoplasm in stereoscopes.

I shall not attempt to give a precisely chronological order of the events as it was not possible to take any notes whatever. But the general order, with the principal incidents follows:

I was the controller of Margery's left hand, Dr. Crandon on her right. Dr. Saunderson to my left, Mrs. Hack to the right of Dr. Crandon. The others in between. Margery put luminous bands upon her ankles but remarked that there would be no need of arm bands in the red light. Nevertheless all the phenomena except some of the bell-box ringing occurred in darkness but she said in a loud voice to me that there would be no need of the bands in the red light. She put on the ankle bands and a band around the forehead showing luminous spot in center.

First that came was the supposed independent voice, really whispers, of Walter. He addressed himself to me and in the effort to make me hear the whispers approached very closely and I was quite willing that they should approach more closely than was absolutely necessary for me to hear. The result was that I am absolutely sure that her head was but a few inches from mine when the whispers blew into my face. Walter said that he was glad that I was present and we had an exchange of insignificant chatter, after which no such effort was made to make me hear directly, but his remarks were interpreted from time to time by Dr. Crandon. At no time in the evening was there the slightest appearance to me that the whispers or the whistling came at any point removed from Margery herself.

The next stage was bell ringing, the bell rang several times in the dark, then I was asked to give directions, and called for one long ring and two short, and they followed. Then in accordance with directions, after a dark interval, Dr. Saunderson was told as soon as the light came on to take up the bell-box and turn around. He did not perfectly understand the order and executed it somewhat hesitatingly, but the bell rang and stopped ringing several times in the circuit. Then two or three times I was asked to direct what kind of rings should be given, the light was turned on and the rings followed as directed. I was not asked to take the box and turn around. I was encouraged at intervals to see that there were no attachments but am not particularly interested

in making sure of details at invitation. There certainly were no tangible attachments. Once when the bell was to ring Margery, with my hand in hers put it upon the table beside the bell box remarking that I might have it there if I liked. Dr. Crandon immediately said something to her in a low voice which I could not understand but my hand was taken away by hers instead of remaining according to the terms of her offer.

Then the "doughnut," that is to say the paper disc with a hole in the center, both periphery and hole about the dimensions of those of a large doughnut, was brought into play. It was explained to the company as a device introduced by Mr. Dingwall, being an object of a nature difficult to levitate because of its thinness. I do not quite follow the reasoning here, but that was the statement. Perhaps the meaning was that it would be thought hard to get hold of. The doughnut is well luminous upon one side and appears faintly so on the other, but it may be because of the luminosity showing through. Thereupon in the darkness the doughnut performed various tricks, shifted about upon the table, went up into the air, went to a point seemingly between Margery and Dr. Crandon, etc. Once when it came near me I seemed to see something protruding through the hole, not slender but something which fairly well filled it. Then Dr. Crandon, still in the darkness, asked me to hold out my hand and gave me what he said was a silver half dollar. This I was requested to put in the hole of the doughnut as it lay upon the table. Soon a slight movement of the doughtnut was seen as though the edge of it were raised and the half dollar extracted from beneath, then the coin was heard to ring upon the table a foot away. Then Dr. Saunderson was asked to extend his palm over the doughnut, the apparent object being to drop the coin into it. This was done two or three times and each time the half dollar struck the table. I gained the impression that it did not drop into the palm but it may have done so and fallen off. I was not asked to extend my palm in this species of experiment.

At Dr. C.'s request I raised a basket about a foot above the table, and the doughnut was lifted into it.

Another stage was occupied by a megaphone about 2 feet long, with some kind of a handle upon the side. There were two luminous rings upon it, one at each end. The megaphone performed all sorts of antics, being shoved, raised, poked into faces, once falling upon the floor between the table and Dr. Saunderson and myself and coming up with considerable difficulty. Once it fell off the table and landed on the floor back of it and after some little time

was flipped upon the table, after for some moments I had been watching what seemed to me evidence of muscular strain on the part of the medium. Finally the megaphone flew apparently over the medium's head into the cabinet. So far as I could tell, at the precise moment the medium's body gave a violent jerk. Dr. Crandon asked me if I felt her tremble. I did not personally think the word tremble was the right one but did not say so. Throughout the performances of the doughnut and the megaphone while not only I felt the pressure of Margery's left foot upon mine but was able frequently to see the luminous band upon the left ankle, I was at no time able to see the other band. I took special pains to look down alongside the front edge of the table next to the medium and it is very difficult to suppose that her foot could have been held in such a position during the considerable time that these acts of the doughnut and megaphone were taking place and the foot not have been moved so that the band would appear if it remained upon the ankle.

The final feature was the use of an apparatus devised by Dr. Richardson, I understood, an explanatory diagram of which is annexed to this report,[1] the same made by Dr. Crandon to be taken me by Mr. Mansfield. Across the curved glass tube are two horizontal luminous bands and at the surface of the liquid on both sides is a floating perpendicular indicator. The liquid is of course at equilibrium in both branches of the curved tube unless force is exercised to drive it higher in one branch. The diagram shows one of the mouthpieces, which is made of glass having two lateral holes and one terminal hole. From one to six persons may use the apparatus at a time. Whoever is using it blows, the liquid rises on one side as shown by the luminous indicator and then if all using mouthpieces have their lips pressed firmly against the lateral opening and tongue against the terminal one the indicator remains stable. But if anyone who is using a mouthpiece uncovers any one of the openings in it the air escapes and the indicator sinks. Consequently when the indicator remains stable and the liquid is higher on one side than the other, if Walter is able to talk, it is supposed to be an absolute proof of independent voice. It is stated that all sorts of experiments have been tried to see whether these holes can be kept shut and yet voice be possible, and that no one has been able to show that this is the case. The two or three experiments of this sitting when voice was produced the

[1] Omitted in this publication in view of its having been covered in Chapter XX and in the *A.S.P.R. Journal* articles therein cited.—J. M. B.

indicator did not remain absolutely stable but sank slightly, though very slightly. I was invited to come over and try to cheat the apparatus if I could. I stated that I claimed no special skill in dealing with mechanical apparatus but I might come over for the amusement of seeing whether I could do it, although I had no expectation of being able to.

After the sitting was through, as I have stated, I looked over the set of ectoplasmic photographs in a stereoscope. To all appearances there were several types. One looked like a bulby mass the size of a large pear with a kind of a twisted cord perhaps six inches in length extending from it. This appeared in a number of the photographs, with the end of the cord protruding from a nostril, and a sac-like protuberance variously placed. I think that in all of these there was the appearance as of a thread passing from the bulbous extremity up toward the ear. This object (mass, cord and thread) was said to constitute Walter's speaking apparatus, and Dr. Crandon said that Walter said if the thread were broken it might kill the medium. He did not say whether this apparatus was used in all the sittings or only in the trance ones of Dingwall's series. But as it was alleged that ectoplasm was produced only in trance, and as it has frequently been alleged that Walter speaks and whistles independently when she is not in trance, I hardly see the advantage of having such a vocal apparatus. Another species was like a large egg, so far as I could judge from the picture possibly 3 inches long and 2½ inches wide in the center (these figures are of course very conjectural), the egg more or less covered over with strands of a lace-like white material. The color of the egg portion was considerably darker than the material which crossed it, making one, in fact, think of rubber. Another form exceedingly roughly resembled a hand. The fingers fell apart in awkward fashion, and while I do not mean to intimate that it was carved out of some anatomical substance, yet that comparison spontaneously kept coming to my mind. I mean it only as an attempted item of description. There were other pictures that represented the ectoplasm as issuing from the ear, at least the small end was protruding from the ear, and hanging down in masses or strands from a few inches to apparently more than a foot. Others showed the substance or some white substance covering a portion of the top of the head or even a large part of the face. The material in some cases looked very different from that in other cases. In several instances where one extremity of the substance was protruding from the mouth it was nevertheless stated by the Doctor it exuded from the ear. He did not explain

what it was doing in the mouth. Of course the pictures do not prove that a substance sticking into the ear actually issued therefrom.

Before I left, Margery said she hoped I would be able to see the ectoplasm and I said I should be very happy to do so.

After the séance I was asked to see what I could do with the voice apparatus. I succeeded in pronouncing two or three words, the float showing only a momentary jerk—not greater so far as I could judge, than the jerk which preceded the voice when Margery had her mouth applied. I was then asked to utter a prescribed jaw-breaking sentence, and did not attempt it, knowing it would be hopeless, at least without considerable practice.

[Signed] WALTER FRANKLIN PRINCE.

Before the above document came into my hands, I had made inquiry of Prince about the October 2nd séance, and about the general character and extent of the negative reports from various sitters which I had been told were in his possession. With reference to my general query whether he had made on October 2nd any specific adverse observations, the record above reproduced was forwarded, with the following additional statement:

I [Prince speaking, of course] send you a copy of my sitting of October 2nd, 1925, written the following day. The chief marks which made it not evidential but rather the reverse were the following:

(1) The approximate certainty that the luminous band on the ankle next to Dr. Crandon was removed and concealed. For fully half an hour I vainly tried to get a glimpse of it, though there was no difficulty in locating the other. Of course if off, the band was off for a purpose, which purpose would presumably be the production of " phenomena " by the free right foot.

(2) The medium made an excuse for leaving off the luminous wristbands—an excuse contradicted by the sequel. The reason given not being correct, I am forced to seek the real reason, and none seems so intelligible as that of leaving the right hand free to help the foot where necessary. Since it has been proved and published without remonstrance that Dr. Crandon is capable of releasing the medium's hand without due notice,[2] this reason fits in with the general scheme.

(3) There was to me not the slightest indication that the

[2] The reference is to *M. M.*, pp. 157–159, 256.—W. F. P.

whispers and whistling were "independent," whether when the breath came into my face or at any other time.

(4) I noted very clearly that the more strenuous of the "telekinetic" movements were accompanied by those movements of the medium's body which generally indicate muscular effort. I was very confident, for example, that her violent start when the megaphone flew up did not follow but was contemporaneous with that "phenomenon."

(5) When Dr. Crandon said something to the medium which made her remove my hand in hers from beside the bellbox where she had said it might rest, this to me indicated that he thought that it would be dangerous to have my hand there. I cannot believe that even had I touched the "ectoplasm" which was sturdy enough to throw a megaphone, it would have injured that substance, and suspect that the peril was a different one.

(6) Nothing apart from the mechanical contrivances presented difficulties for a free right foot with the occasional aid of a free right hand.

(7) Mechanical contrivances *kept in control of the medium* can never be free from doubt. Hundreds of pieces of apparatus have been invented by magicians, which have defied the inspection of committees. The voice machine, persistently pressed upon attention when there are so much simpler and surer means of showing whether or not sounds proceed from the throat, raises rather than settles suspicion.

While for the better part I present Prince's strictures without comment, one or two remarks from me will be in order. The demonstration of the photographic exhibits to him, along with the other material on file in the Lime Street book room, might doubtless seem to him or to anyone not acquainted with Lime Street routine as a special gesture directed at him. In point of fact, every new sitter or every old sitter who comes back after a long hiatus receives precisely this immersion in the documents of the case; it is not an attempt at conversion or conviction but merely a desire on Crandon's part to present the fullest possible information as to the current status of the case. It is usually done before the séance but when the time factor requires its complete or partial postponement until afterwards this occurs as on the present occasion. I have no doubt that Prince understood all this thoroughly but I make the explanation in the interests of insuring against misunderstanding by any reader.

Prince's last remark about "simpler and surer means" of control would doubtless suggest to most readers a personal control of one sort or another; and if this were what he had in mind, he could easily be met with the statement that the history of the case shows many occasions on which the voice has occurred under such control. But of course, the constitutional skeptic always wants, on each occasion, a different type of control from that actually used. If you hold the medium's hands he wants to know why you did not tie them and if you tie them he asks why you did not hold them; and so through the entire gamut of control procedures. The mechanical voice-control represents a studied attempt to get away from personal control, on the ground that personal control has been so seriously objected to. I would rejoice exceedingly to find a skeptic who is willing, after having eaten his cake, to reconcile himself to the fact that he no longer has it to eat.

The above paragraph, however, while entirely applicable to the skeptic whose only thought is to object to the control that he happens to find in use, does not constitute an entirely valid rejoinder to Prince's criticism; for the better control which he had in mind was not a personal one, but a different type of mechanical one. The stethoscope is a familiar enough instrument, and many others before and after Prince have wondered why it was not used in this or in other vocal mediumships. It could be applied directly to throat or upper chest and while it would not prevent fraud in the same sense as does the VCO (assuming this to be a valid control), it would give interesting returns as to the active or passive state of the medium's entire vocal and respiratory apparatus during the voice phenomena. In elaboration on this point, Prince writes: "the constitutional scientific observer desires to apply any and all feasible tests in this, as he is expected to do in all other, branches of inquiry; and particularly that test which seems simplest and most effective; rather than to be limited to a mode dictated to him."

The obvious reply to this is that the VCO is designed to prevent fraud and that it seems an entirely effective means of achieving this prevention. Any specific criticism of the VCO as ineffective has always been and will always be met by its redesign. But when the skeptic merely says without giving any bill of particulars that he doesn't like it and would rather use his hand, or his eyes, or his stethoscope, or his some other idea, Crandon invariably reacts with a metaphorical bristling and a demand to know precisely what is the objection to the VCO.

In view of its availability for test and experiment and of the completeness with which it has been described and of the accuracy of these descriptions, he feels that it may be rejected only through specific criticism; and he does not grant that its permanent presence in his house constitutes valid ground for attack upon its use.

Further, against the specific suggestion that the stethoscope be employed in its stead he points out that the use of this instrument would bring us back again to a discussion of the validity of the hand control of the Psychic. In my presence, fraudulent mediums on whom the stethoscope was being used have freed a hand from control and removed the stethoscope from immediate contact with their throats or chests, as the case were, thereby creating a condition where the " spirit voice " was unaccompanied by any stethoscopic report of vibrations in the medium's vocal apparatus. The VCO on the other hand cannot be thus manipulated, as has been emphasized on pp. 682–3 of my article in the A. S. P. R. *Journal* for December, 1925.

Moreover, the VCO gives a positive verdict while the stethoscope does not. By this I mean that if the float in the VCO tube drops habitually while Walter is speaking, we must conclude that the Psychic's mouth is being used normally and we have no conceivable alternative to this conclusion. But the stethoscopic control is so much less direct as to afford the following possibility of alibi:

If the stethoscope is used and if it reports a vibration of any sort in the chest or throat of the medium, the notion of the essential ambiguity of psychical phenomena which I have satirized on page 142 may be called in, much more plausibly than in the cases there outlined. It may be alleged that obviously there is some sort of psychical or pseudo-material connection between the medium's normal ensemble of brachio-thoracic functions and apparatus, and the psychical machinery for the independent voice; so that production of the latter is accompanied by a species of reflex action in the former. As evidence that this particular thesis is not wholly and inherently absurd, one might instance the behavior of Frau Rasmussen's respiration[3] during the production of phenomena which on no conceivable theory of fraud could have any dependence upon her breathing. I do not at all insist upon this interpretation of a superficially unfavorable stethoscopic record but I do insist that I know no way of conclusively silencing the person who does advance it. Neither do I insist that all the points here adduced

[3] Journal, A.S.P.R., May, 1928, pp. 278 ff.

are conclusive reasons for sticking to the VCO apparatus and refusing to use the stethoscope but I do insist that they are Crandon's reasons, and that as such they must have due respect. If not conclusive, they are at least plausible and constitute a bar against offhand damnation of the vocal phenomena on the mere ground that a stethoscopic control ought to be used and is not.

So much for Prince's one sitting of the period since October, 1924. In reply to my query as to the nature and status of the collection of adverse reports[4] which he was alleged to have in his custody he wrote as follows:

> *Reply to Query 2.* It is correct that reports of sittings in the Margery case have been handed me by several persons, none of whom have become known in connection with the case. The reports by two of these persons are long and detailed, and they support and agree with the reports of the Harvard Group and the Rhines[5] in a general way so far as the phenomena were alike. There was no glass cabinet and no balances as in the Rhine sitting, and various apparatus and consequent reactions present in the Harvard sittings were absent here. One of the persons rendering a long and detailed report was certainly quite independent of the Harvard Group, as his sitting came first. The other author of long and detailed reports wrote them long before the Harvard report was made public, and I doubt if he knew anything about what it was to be—though not sure of this.

All possibility of misunderstanding Prince's position with reference to the case having been eliminated by the preceding material,[6] and all claim having been forestalled that due attention has not been paid to the evidential values of his observation of the case, we may proceed with the chronological developments of the summer of 1925, which have rather lagged behind in the interests of the topical discussion of the present and the immediately preceding chapters.

---

[4] See pages 479ff.

[5] See Chapters IX, XLV.

[6] Dr. Crandon will comment upon Dr. Prince's text above, in one of the appendices appearing as part of Vol. 2. See open reference No. 17, in that volume.—J. M. B.

CHAPTER XXII

Identifications of Personal Objects

By the Editor

From a very early date, it has been Walter's habit to use in telekinesis small objects contributed from the pockets of a sitter, or even to help himself to such objects.[1] Occasionally he would go so far as to tell the contents of wallets, the denominations of bills, etc., etc. But he never pursued the matter systematically; and, indeed, we must deal at first with several apparently isolated and unsystematized instances of the thing which we shall ultimately systematize.

The first reference will be to the séance of April 2, 1925,[2] in the Richardson residence, in which Walter correctly identified an object not known to be present by any other sitter than Mrs. Richardson; and followed the identification by further more or less evidential statements about this object. On April 11th, he made a deliberately staged return to this sort of thing; the record tells us:

> He now invited each sitter in turn to place quietly upon the table some small object for him to identify. In this way, under double control, he examined and correctly named a brooch, a clinical thermometer,[3] a notebook,[4] a spectacle case, and a pair of scissors. The only thing that puzzled him was a latchkey; he could only call this a "drip," which was partly true, as it hung from a ring or tag.

This first performance of what has now become a specialty distinguishing the mediumship came after there had been demonstration of the teleplasmic terminal, in silhouette against luminous objects; and the *prima facie* aspect of the identifications was that they were done by this organ, through a tactile process. The same may be said of a repetition given on April 12th (see page 60):

> All the rest of the phenomena of the evening were done under constant double control: Goodall having the Psychic's two hands,

---

1 See *M. M.*, Chap. XXVII, etc.; also present volume, pp. 56–62, and Chap. XVII.
2 See p. 71.
3 "Who's sick?" he said to this.
4 "Thought you'd fool me into thinking there was money in it?" was Walter's query here.

Miss Pierce both Crandon's hands and his head. Walter had Goodall, Miss Pierce and Brown each put a personal article on the table. He recognized Goodall's as a watch, Miss Pierce's as a face-powder box, Brown's as a thermometer in a case.

Whether by the Harvard enterprise of May-June or by some less easily identifiable distraction, Walter's attention was turned away from the matter of identifications after these three preliminary performances; and he returned to the subject only on July 26, 1926, in the Cabin séance of which the complete record appears on page 000. On this occasion, the picture was rather that he gave us the identifications because he hadn't the physical force at command to give us anything better. And, as I state on page 000, while my control of the Psychic was irreproachable and while confederacy was made ridiculous alike by the range of sitters it would have needed and by the manner in which the identifying statements flowed from Walter, there was ample evidence that the teleplasmic tactile process was at work. The objects placed on the table were handled by *something*.

The identifications (which of course we must carefully distinguish from mere telekinesis of objects contributed by sitters) became now a regular part of the mediumship. They were given on August 3d and 8th, from the records of which dates I quote, and on the 14th, the record for which appears in full elsewhere.[5]

[Aug. 3d.] Then followed a period of identification of objects put on the table by the sitters, under strict double control of the Psychic and Crandon, together with luminous control of the hands. Every recognition by Walter was correct.

For Cotton: "A big jack-knife." Correct, except that Cotton does not call it big. But Walter says it is bigger than most pen-knives.

For Cotton again: "Time to take the collection."[6] This statement was accompanied by many raps with the object, which proved to be a coin.

For Hill: "A bracelet, tattoo marks, leather, keys." Correct as named. Here, however, was an extraordinary fact. Hill had on sleeves reaching quite to his wrists; but he *does* wear, out of sight on his right arm, a locked bracelet, and there

[5] See p. 233.

[6] This statement, as the other ones similarly given, was made by Walter in identifying the object.—J. M. B.

are tattoo marks on this arm. Litzelmann and Hill alone knew of the bracelet; Hill himself alone knew of the tattooing.

For Litzelmann: "It is warm, leather, a tobacco pouch." Correct.

For Richardson: "Paper; letter; one-half—no, one-quarter—inch long." Correct, a sheet of Braille. Its presence in the room known only to Richardson.

For Mrs. Richardson. "A side-comb." Correct.

[Aug. 8th.] Walter next turned his attention to the matter of identification of strange objects in the dark.

For Davis: "A nice jack-knife." Correct.

For Hill: "Take back your paper money." Correct; a dollar bill.

For Mrs. Hill: "A hair pin; a wire one." Correct.

From the 14th, I need not repeat here the passages of the dictaphonic record that have to do with identifications. I do need, however, to put emphasis upon Richardson's contribution here—the deck of cards. It led to discussion with Walter, culminating in his promise to identify individual cards out of a pack. The process of selecting a card from the pack in the darkness of the séance, which is essential in the prevention of fraud by substitution or confederacy, also brings it about that when it is finally chosen and presented to Walter, no sitter knows its identity. In this fact, as well as in the immediate measures taken to eliminate fraud and in the character of the frauds that must be eliminated, the card test is so essentially divergent from the identification of personal objects that it may well be set aside for discussion in a separate chapter.[7] The wooden letters[8] invented by Richardson for cognition tests may likewise be set apart, for precisely the same reasons; and we then deal here only with the more personal type of identification, revolving about objects contributed by sitters. These, too, offer scope for statement by Walter of the contributor's identity or of the psychometric background of the object contributed. This he does not always undertake, nor always achieve with the same degree of success; but as we shall see, he often makes a good score, and where one or two such incidents might be explained away as the product of chance coincidence, I think most readers will find that we have too many of them for such treatment. Likewise, he now and then

[7] Chap. XXIII.
[8] Chap. XXVIII.

finds himself able to make some statement about an article which seems clearly beyond the knowledge of any sitter; or to deal in such fashion with the identification as to throw some light upon the problems surrounding his own personality. We have the following items:

[Aug. 27, 1925.] Of the first thing put on the table by Richardson Walter said: "I don't care for that; it's something like raised flowers. Take it away." It was a Braille map of South America. Of the second article Walter said: "Those letters are too small, and besides, I have no skill at reading them. I don't like it; take it away." It was a book with raised letters [ordinary ones, not Braille] for the blind. Then Hill put on the table an object for identification and Walter almost at once declared it to be a pencil sharpener. This was correct. Then Litzelmann put something on the table, and Walter commented: "Open your mouth, Chief. Are you ready? It's good." Richardson opened his mouth and Walter put a lump of sugar in it.

[Aug. 29th.] De Wyckoff then said he was going to put a bill on the table in the dark, and asked Walter to name the denomination. He said he had many bills in his pockets, but did not know the denominations. Walter immediately named the bill as a ten. De Wyckoff then put out another bill, and Walter immediately named it as a ten also, and added: "The first is a yellowback; this one is a greenback." This was all found to be correct.

[Aug. 30th.] Under conditions of double control, Walter told De Wyckoff the denominations of bills which he placed on the table. Dudley then put an object on the table, and Walter identified it as a "pocket book with an unusual snap to it." Zeliqzon then put an object on the table which Walter identified first as a quarter, and then added: "No, that's a penny; a Canadian cent." All these identifications were correct.

[Oct. 4th.] Walter then proceeded to identify objects from the pockets of the sitters. In each instance the success was 100 per cent, although for Sturtevant he said: "This thing is a case or holder; probably a thermometer." In fact it was a pencil such as none of us had ever seen, resembling closely a [clinical] thermometer case. Asked to tell how much he used the sense organs of the Psychic, Walter replied: "You may blindfold her and stuff her ears and I can work just as well."

[Oct. 16th.] Walter identified objects belonging to the sitters, when these were placed upon the table.

The concentration upon the glass cabinet[9] now interfered with further prosecution of the identification specialty, and this is not again met for nearly three months. When it is resumed, in February, it is usually carried through under such improved conditions of control that, in the interests both of classification and of chronology, we may set apart another chapter for the continuation of the story.[10] For the present, we may make the comment that these obviously tactile identifications depend with extreme obviousness upon the validity of the hand-control; and we may point out that Walter never attempted to make good on his suggestion of the 4th October, just above. All further comment may be deferred to the point where we again take up this thread.

[9] See Chapter XXV.
[10] See Chap. XXVIII; and following this, Chaps. XXXVIII, XXXIX.

CHAPTER XXIII

Identifications of Playing Cards

By the Editor

In the preceding chapter I have referred in passing to the presentation to Walter, on August 14th, 1925, of a deck of cards as object, *in toto*, for identification. Some sitter, probably Richardson, was moved to ask him whether he could identify individual cards from the deck; he indicated a desire to try it, some other time. The occasion came on the very next night, August 15th. As usual, I had stayed over, after my serious sittings, for the informal week-end gathering. The record tells the story:

> It was apparent that Richardson's more or less jocose request of the preceding night that Walter read playing cards in the dark had rather piqued Walter; for he now called for a pack of cards. A pack was handed to Brown, and on request Brown put on top of the bell-box any card which he happened to select in the dark. Walter announced the value and suit of the card, and it was handed to some particular sitter to hold. Each time, Bird made a record of the card as named by Walter, and of the sitter to whom it had been passed. At the end of the sitting Bird read his list, and each sitter produced the card corresponding to the list; in every instance Walter was correct. After the sitting Bird tried in vain to identify cards by means of a luminous head-band such as the Psychic wears.

The above record is faulty, in one respect. Describing this séance in the Journal of the A.S.P.R.,[1] Crandon says: "in this way Walter named eight cards, making no errors in the denominations of pip cards, two errors as between kings and jacks which he complained presented a tough problem, and one error as between spades and clubs." This latter version was drawn from my own memorandum record; and aside from my general confidence in the correctness of this, I have an actual memory of the facts in the present instance. Walter *did* make the errors which my memorandum describes, and which are so strongly suggestive of a pseudo-visual process. As the playing-card perform-

[1] June, 1926; p. 326.

ance began to be standardized into a regular feature of Margery's séance room, Walter rather got into the habit of rejecting face cards, because of the difficulties which they present to him. Such rejected cards he ordinarily throws on the floor, asking for another in place of the discarded one; and this discrimination between pip cards and face cards he always makes accurately.

The present test is of interest first because of the conspicuous success which Walter scored in dealing with a new problem; and second because of the clean-cut fashion in which it points the way to a more determinative procedure. The most serious deficiency in the staging on the 15th lay, of course, in the history of the deck of cards employed. I knew nothing definite about this deck; so far as my best knowledge and belief were concerned, it was a deck that had been in the house for an indefinite time, and that had been taken upstairs by Richardson or Brown or Crandon so that we might be prepared for this test if Walter offered it. This will immediately suggest, to any person of conjuring experience or indeed to any moderately ingenious laymen, a procedure which would have been applicable on the present occasion, and which in the most general terms would be describable as follows:

The performer abstracts x cards from the deck, secretes these on his person, and memorizes their value and order. The deck itself, lacking these x cards, is given to the sitter who is to officiate as Brown did on the occasion just described. As he, in the dark, places random cards from the deck, one at a time, on the table, the performer must defeat the hand control sufficiently to recover his concealed cards, one by one, and substitute them for those thus handed out. A variation would consist in using an accomplice, who would hold the stacked cards and effect the substitution, while the performer remained under rigid control. At the end, after all the "identified" cards have been restored to the deck, the performer still has the cards that have been handed out during the sitting. The deck is therefore still short, and its examination must be prevented until after an opportunity has been created for the return of the missing pasteboards. Any number of cards up to x may be identified; and the performer may give the completely successful reading which the method makes possible, or he may aim at a proper psychic atmosphere by introducing minor errors into some of his identifications.

Just as obvious as the trick is the prevention. Let a comparatively strange sitter bring into the séance room a new, sealed deck, with the

revenue stamp intact. Let him break this seal only in the darkness of the séance room; let him then shuffle the cards and pass them out, one at a time, for identification. Let him retain possession of the stock until after the light is given at the end of the séance; let him then determine how many cards and what cards are missing. Let the several sitters who have custody of the identified cards *then* return them to him; and let him at this time verify not only that these are the cards needed to restore the deck to completeness, but that they are, in pattern, etc., the identical cards from this deck. If this be done, all substitution tricks are ruled out to the point where it becomes idiocy to talk about them. And if we employ enough different strange sitters as masters of ceremonies in successive sittings, any talk of systematic confederacy between these sitters and the Psychic, under which the shuffling is only apparent and pre-arranged cards can be handed out by one who knows the way in which a new deck of cards is assembled for packing, becomes equally idiotic. As I emphasize in another place, not *all* the Lime Street regular and casual sitters may be regarded as confederates.

This, then, leaves open only one line of attack upon the validity of the identifications. Is it not possible for the Psychic to sense the denomination and suit of the cards by other than psychic means? Four possibilities must be considered here: normal or hyperesthetic tactile impressions gathered after hand control has been defeated; normal visual impressions in the absence of what to a normal sitter would be total darkness; and hyperesthetic visual impressions got in what the normal sitter *would* find to be a complete absence of light.

The most immediate deficiency of the present sitting comes in the third of these categories. The record indicates that the Psychic was wearing the usual luminous controls. It also indicates that after the sitting, I failed in the attempt to read cards by the light from such controls, worn as she had been wearing them. Subsequent experiment indicated that the reason for the failure lay in the adoption of a slightly wrong technique; it is a perfectly simple matter for one wearing a luminous head-band to get enough illumination from this on a pip card for accurate reading of the denomination and for approximately accurate reading of the suit. One cannot, so far as my experiments indicate, do much more than guess between kings, queens and jacks. This finding becomes the more serious when we realize that it checks up exactly with the errors that Walter made on his first performance. It becomes imperative to do away with the luminous

control entirely when giving identifications of playing cards; and we shall see that this became the Lime Street custom.

When this has been done, however, the theory remains open that instead of using clandestinely a source of light known to be present, the operator has fallen back upon clandestine *presence and use* of a light-source not known by the sitters to be there. This theory is a more complicated one, to the extent that the performer would have to defeat the hand control in order to manipulate her flashlight, small luminous plaque, or whatever other source of light she be pictured as employing; while to use the head-band she would have to do nothing more than bend her head over close to the card as it lay on the table. Provided she could produce and use effectively a light of the sort visualized by this theory, however, such procedure would be better conjuring practice than use of the head-band.

Whether she could do so would constitute a delicate question. Tricks of dark-room card-reading more or less similar in their superficial aspects to the phenomena with which we here deal are done commercially. I have not seen these under conditions which were sufficiently clean-cut to rule out one type of fraud and define in an observer's mind another type as the one under use. I am told however that these tricks *are* done in the presence of precautions which are completely adequate for the exclusion of confederacy and substitution; and if this be true, the use of a small secret light of some sort seems the only way out. But it is most unusual to hear the psychical skeptic proclaiming his ability to exclude substitution or confederacy or any other particular fraud; he is more in the habit of basing his negations upon his alleged *inability* to detect or exclude trickery.

Even if we reject the claim that the trick is customarily and successfully done in this way, however, we must be willing to consider this way of doing it as a possible hypothesis of fraud in the present connection. So considering it on its merits and inquiring what these are, we may observe first of all that it brings up the question of hand control in acute form. Certainly if the Psychic is to use a light for illumination of a playing card and if she is to prevent the other sitters from perceiving this, she must have both hands free to bring card and light together somewhere in the folds of her garments. But her sitters are much closer to her and much more nearly on all sides of her than would be the case with any commercial performer; so we may strongly suspect that her consistent use of this trick would lead rather consistently to observation of some sort suggesting to the sitters that

an unauthorized light was present. We shall note one or two occasions when observations which are interpretable in this sense were made; but I think the evidence as a whole is distinctly against the theory. I make no further or more definite comment until we shall have come to a point where the identifications are being done under a mechanical control which shall throw new security over the status of the Psychic's hands and feet during the séances.

With reference to the theory of tactile hyperesthesia, I made inquiry of the United States Playing Card Corporation. I asked them, first, whether the glazed surface was applied to the face of the card before or after the printing of the face. If before, so that the black and red ink overlies the varnish, one might suppose that the edges of the pips would be sufficiently marked to appeal to the hyperesthetic sense of touch. If after, as one would infer to be the case, there could be no rough or abrupt edges to the pips; the only pertinent question would then be whether the ink of the pips was thick enough to create a raised area the additional thickness of which might be felt hyperesthetically. The varnish would not fall quite so thickly over the infinitesimally thicker zone of the pip as it would over the infinitesimally thinner blank areas, so that the additional thickness of the printed parts of the card would be masked; nevertheless, one needs expert testimony as to its tactile detectability. Under date of May 19th, 1927, I have the following statement from the New York office of the playing card manufacturers:

> Replying to yours of the 17th inst., would say that the color face printing of our playing cards is done before the varnish flow is applied. This color coating has no appreciable thickness that might be apparent to the eye or touch.
>
> In our experience we have never known of anyone's being able to read suits or denominations of our cards by the sense of touch, with the single exception of our Braille card intended for the use of the blind. In fact we do not consider such a thing possible..

The matter of visual hyperesthesia I suppose we shall always have with us; it is most improbable that any room possessing windows and doors is absolutely dark in terms of ordinary visible light, and it is quite certain that no room above-ground within miles of a center of civilization is free from wave-lengths of the ultra-violet persuasion which might conceivably arouse a visual response in a given subject's optic nerves. For present purposes, I fear we shall have to take a

categorical stand here, laying down this postulate: If, in a room where normal vision gives no slightest silhouetting of bulky objects, Margery is able hyperesthetically to read the denominations of a playing card, this faculty is by definition a psychic one. There must be some point where normally hyperesthetic sensibility stops, and supernormality begins.

Following the performances of the 15th and 16th (p. 81) Crandon consulted with me on the possibilities of fraud left open; and the next reading of cards was carried out in such fashion as to eliminate these. The date was August 18th and the record reads as follows:

> He next proceeded to his presentation of the card reading. Cotton had in his possession a new pack of cards with the Government revenue seal intact. This pack was now opened by Cotton in the dark, and the whole pack put in his chair under his leg. Cotton then put one card on the table, picked at random by him from the pack; and in about three minutes Walter announced the value and suit. The card was now taken by Gilmore, and kept by him; and Gerke kept the "log" showing in each instance the name of the holder of the card and the identity of the card as announced by Walter.[2] Walter repeated the reading until each sitter had a card in his possession. The card reading was done with the Psychic in trance. There was no light of any kind visible to any sitter in the room. When the light was put on at 10:15 P. M. it was found that every reading by Walter was correct. Gilmore now collected the identified cards and the remainder of the pack; and he showed that the pack was lacking precisely the cards identified, and that with these cards each suit was complete. At the end of the sitting the Psychic complained of ache in her eyes. Walter says that he does not "look" at the cards in the way we mean when we use the word, but that he sees them through his eye plus some use made of the Psychic's visual apparatus.

Through what I am entirely convinced is oversight, the above record fails to clarify the facts in one respect which might be regarded as important. It will be realized that there was no prior examination of the deck; Cotton brought it in with the seal intact, and on breaking the seal assumed that the contents were in good order. One would, I think, infer from the record, if one made any inference at all, that Cotton himself had supplied the deck. In point of fact it had been purchased by Crandon, and by him turned over to Cotton immediately

[2] It is easy enough to manage this, in the dark.—J. M. B.

before the séance. It would then have been possible for Crandon to have removed the seal, abstracted several cards, and replaced the seal; after which the trick could have been done as outlined above—provided we assume another error in the record or the procedure, which would have permitted the cards in the Psychic's possession at the end to be "switched" again for those in Cotton's possession, before restoration to the deck. The point is one that is met in numerous later séances; and I think it equally significant to say that my information about the history of the deck comes from the Richardson record of August 27th; a document placed in my hands by Crandon himself. If the failure of his own record to cover the ground were other than accident, it is evident that he would not thus circulate another record that so completely covers it.

Walter's next return to the matter of card identification was on August 27th, and there were a lot of complications and points of interest, so the Richardsons went to the trouble of drawing up a full statement. This I give, rather than Crandon's less complete record:

> At a Margery sitting at 10 Lime Street, Boston, Thursday evening, August 27th, 1925, an experiment was performed of sufficient importance to justify independent and isolated record.
>
> As is well known, the phenomena occuring at these sittings have been almost exclusively of the physical type. The one here recorded belongs to that immediate domain, partly objective and partly subjective. The genesis of the idea embodied in this experiment was in the production some weeks since by Richardson of a package to be identified by Walter in the dark. At that time Walter first said that the package was a book; then corrected himself, saying that it was a box containing something.
>
> "Cards," said Richardson, "Can you name them Walter?"
>
> "Have a heart, Chief," said Walter.
>
> The article was in fact a box containing a pack of playing cards. Later a pack of cards belonging to Crandon was used for experimentation in the dark,[3] the correct identification of individual cards being made in several instances. Once subsequently a new deck, purchased by Crandon, and brought to the sitting with seal intact, was used with equal success.[4] From that time on this form of experimentation had not been tried at these sittings, and nothing more had been said about such experimentation.

[3] August 15th; see above, p. 292.

[4] August 18th; p. 297. See, also the comment immediately above, on the history of the cards.

On Friday, August 21st, Richardson noticed in a shop window, a pack of Jumbo playing cards; and he bought them in the original sealed container. He did not mention this to any member of the group, not even to his own wife. Twice he brought this pack of cards to the sittings, done up in another package, the shape and size of which would afford no clues to what was therein. He had been accustomed to place this package under his chair when he took his place in the circle, in case an opportunity might come up to use its contents.

At the sitting here recorded, Walter suddenly made a facetious remark to the effect that it was high time that the eggs upon which Richardson had been setting should be hatched, and that he, Walter, was afraid that in the recent heat wave they would spoil. He suggested that they be brought out for experiment. Whereupon Richardson brought out the large package with some difficulty, got it open in the dark, and took out what was subsequently found to be the deck of large cards in a container. While in the dark he broke the seal and the inside paper wrapping. At random he took one of the large cards and laid it upon the table. He did not say what it was that was laid there, but remarked to Walter that he did not know whether it was right side up or not, to which Walter replied that that made no difference to him. He identified this card shortly as an unusually large playing card and as the deuce of clubs. Litzelmann was directed to reach forward and get the card and keep control of it until the end of the session. Another was brought forward and identified as the jack of spades. This was given into the custody of Hill. The next card brought out entailed some delay. Suddenly Walter said to Richardson:

"You old sinner, you thought you would fool me, did you? This is covered with printing, with the word GUARANTEED at the top".

That card was likewise given to one of the group to keep in his possession. The process of identification went on until each person had a card in his control.

Through the entire sitting there was no light whatever. There were no luminous bands. There was no red light, and of course no white light. At the end of the session the red light was turned on, enabling the cards to be identified. Every card was found to have been correctly named, including the "guarantee" card. Each identification had been written down as it occurred by Conant, who sat outside the circle. Immediately upon the checking up of the identification, Hill took the entire deck with the container out of the séance room, where it was carefully examined by all present.

The deck was what is known as "Jumbo Bicycle" cards, manufactured by the United States Playing Card Company. The backs were red and of the type known as "rider" backs. The dimension of each card was 7 x 4½ inches. It comprised fifty-four cards: four complete sets of thirteen, a Joker, and the "guarantee" card, which is an advertising card. The "guarantee" card had printing on it, and the lettering of the word GUARANTEED was in Old English, and stood alone at the head of the printing. The letters were 5/16 inch in height, and the length of the word about 2¼ inches. All of the cards which had been identified, and in addition virtually the entire fifty-four cards, were carefully examined and were ascertained to be free from any mark, embossing, scratches, or pinpricks, which would serve in any way as a guide to the sense of touch in determining the identity of the card.

Although this experiment is of the type that can fairly be said not to require rigid physical control, it may be noted that the following precautions were taken:

1. The room itself was entered before the sitting by several of the circle and no accomplice was found.

2. During this sitting the door to the room was locked on the inside in the usual way, after which entrance cannot be had from the outside because it is impossible to unlock the door from the outside as the keyhole does not go through.

3. Complete control of Margery's hands was maintained by Richardson and Crandon during the entire experiment.[4a]

4. The hands of every sitter were controlled in each case by his neighbor's continuously.

5. Conant, who sat outside the circle, stayed continually in a position directly back of Hill, with pencil and paper. He was talking at intervals with Hill and the other members of the circle in such a way as to render it practically impossible for him to leave his seat and in any way contribute to the work of identification of the cards.

6. The light which was used for the first time at the close of the sitting was a new colored medium, a blend of red and orange, which excludes white rays entirely. This was still further dimmed by the intervention of red tissue paper. When this colored light fell upon the red cards which were identified, such as ten of diamonds, it was found that it virtually annihilated the red printing upon the cards, so that it was extremely difficult to identify with

[4a] There was no "double control" and no check of any sort upon Crandon's control of the Psychic; so the conditions need not be regarded as adequate unless one deliberately chooses so to regard them.—J. M. B.

the normal sight the red cards until they were taken out into pure white light.

As a departure from the usual line of phenomena hitherto exhibited, and as apparently justifying a working hypothesis that there may be a super-normal power of visualization, or some sense with which we are not perfectly familiar, this incident is made a subject of record.

We, whose names are hereto affixed, hereby affirm that we were each personally present at this experiment, and that the description of the same here given is correct in every detail.

(Signed) MARK W. RICHARDSON, M.D.
JOSEPHINE L. RICHARDSON.

The card-identification was again a feature of the séance of August 29th. The record tells us:

> The whole pack was shuffled and held by Zeliqzon. He then put one card in the dark on the table, and in about two minutes Walter declared that it was the ten of clubs. Zeliqzon then tore off a part of this card and gave one piece into the custody of a sitter. This experiment was repeated three times; and at the end of the sitting it was found that every identification was correct.

This record, of course, is deficient in that it makes no showing as to the previous history—good or bad, as the case may have been—of the cards; and none in the matter of their examination prior to the performance. The tearing of the identified card was doubtless done on the spur of the moment by Zeliqzon, under the impression that he was guarding against substitution. But the opening for substitution in connection with these identifications, as we have seen, would come earlier in the game; this marking of the cards after identification means nothing. It is interesting also to note, in this and other records, that the identification is seldom, if ever, an instantaneous process or even a rapid one. Always or almost always it is a matter, as here, of considerable time and ostensibly of considerable effort on Walter's part. The deficiencies of the preceding record are very largely made good in those of September 1st and 3rd, which I now quote to the extent of a paragraph each:

> Litzelmann brought to the circle a newly bought deck of cards, showed the seal to all the sitters, and then in the dark opened the pack and put one card from it at random on the table. After about two minutes Walter named the card and it was given into

the custody of one of the sitters. This was repeated for six cards, and a record kept by Litzelmann of each alleged identification and the person in whose custody the card was placed. At the end of the sitting it was found that every identification was correct.

Coughlin[5] had brought with him a new pack of cards, with the government seal intact. He now[6] broke the seal and put one card at random on the table. In about three minutes Walter identified it. It was put in the custody of [J. H.] Brown and the record of identification made by Dudley. This experiment was repeated until each sitter had a card in his care. At the end of the sitting, every card proved to have been identified correctly. Dudley now put on the table an advertising page torn out of the back of a magazine in the dark. It had lain on the table for about two minutes when Walter declared the page to read: "WORLD-WIDE TOURS." This was put in some sitter's care, and another sheet, again selected by chance, put out. This was repeated four times. At the end of the sitting it was discovered that in every instance Walter had read correctly the important title words on the printed page. Walter seemed to enjoy this experiment, and kept saying: "Ain't we got fun?"

This variation of the identification experiment owes its invention to Dudley's ingenuity in following out the suggestion embodied in Walter's performance on August 27th, in reading the word "GUARANTEED." It will be appreciated that it presents the same opportunities for substitution as the card version; but that, when this possibility is excluded, the random character of the selection is equal to that with the cards; the possible answers comprise almost an infinite range instead of one of merely fifty-two elements; and the proof of validity is of precisely the same order.

For October 4th and 6th the card test was made, and on both dates the record is rather above the mean in adequacy. Again I give a paragraph to each date:

On request Walter then proceeded to try out the cognition of cards. Sturtevant had brought in a fresh pack; he broke the government seal in the dark at the sitting and put one card on the table. After about five minutes Walter named it and it was given into the custody of a sitter. This was repeated with four cards,

[5] A total stranger, which Litzelmann of course is not.—J. M. B.

[6] In darkness, as a preceding passage of the record makes clear; but a specific statement of the total absence of *all* light is lacking.—J. M. B.

each being given to a different sitter after being named. The sixth card occupied Walter longer, and Crandon at one time thought he saw a psychic light in Margery's lap. Walter then said: "This is no playing card. It is a blank card with two words on it." At the end of the sitting each identification was correct; and the last card was as described, the two words being "EXTRA JOKER."

Walter then proceeded to read five cards picked separately from a fresh pack brought by Litzelmann and opened in the dark by Dennett. This was entirely successful. Walter now instructed Dennett to bring next time an envelope filled by another person with large-type advertisements from the backs of magazines; and Walter would read them in the dark.

The earlier of these last two records carries what some critics will regard as strong suggestion that there was clandestine use of a light by Margery. One who so holds will meet very easily the objection that the observation in question was made by Crandon himself: the light was used bunglingly, this critic will say; Crandon sensed the bungling, feared that some other sitter would see the light, and brought it up himself as the best means of allaying suspicion. In point of fact as I have said several pages back, if this fraud were being used it would seem that it ought to be observed more often and by more of the sitters than appears to have been the case; and of course, the whole question of hand-control is involved, in a way that becomes critical when we find comparable phenomena occurring under conditions which bar the raising of this question.

During the concentration on the glass cabinet and the development of techniques for sitting therein,[7] the card identifications were temporarily dropped. When attention was restored to identification acts, after the new year, certain objections to the use of playing cards were given new consideration. These carry with them a certain inevitable atmosphere of parlor magic, making it more difficult than it should be to take seriously any act in which they are used. They are so small that control against substitution must always be a matter of some concern; and their standardized, machine-made character adds to this uncertainty. In connection with any attempt at such control, the full sealed deck must be used; making it an automatic certainty that the elements offered for identification involve merely the choice between the fifty-two known cards of the deck. There can be nothing

[7] See Chapters XXV, XXVI.

spontaneous and no surprise. The disadvantages of this against a situation where the sitters may offer the most bizarre elements for identification, are evident. It is equally clear that the wooden letters [8] introduced by Richardson, while of limited range, meet all objections; for on any given evening, an arbitrary choice may be made by some sitter, which of the letters to bring into the room. Their only drawback is their obvious and serious amenability to normal processes of touch. If the use of the Psychic's hands can be prevented with any degree of certainty, the letters are better than the cards; if it cannot, advertising pages cut at random from magazines are better than the cards. So when identification acts were resumed in the next period of mediumship it was with these objects and with articles personally contributed by the sitters, rather than with playing cards; the history of the latter ends here.

---

[8] See Chapter XXVIII.

CHAPTER XXIV

Teleplasmics in the Informal Sittings

From the Séance Records, with Comment by the Editor

To this date, it will be realized, the purely teleplasmic side of the mediumship has been reserved for serious sittings with serious investigators. The more ordinary groups have had more or less experience, it is true, with luminous silhouetting of the teleplasmic hand; but this has always been incidental to the use of the hand in telekinesis. Red-light display of masses of teleplasm, with or without an anatomical context, has not been given save to Dingwall, to Richardson and to me.

Starting late in July, 1925, after my séances of the 23rd–25th had brought this sort of thing to the highest point it had reached since Dingwall's departure, it began to be offered more generally. The first indication of the new order, in fact, occurred on the 22nd, the night before my arrival. The record here tells us that, while Walter was manipulating the Code bell-box with its luminous plunger,[1] this plunger fell out of its seat in the box:

> and Davis held it in his hand while Walter took it from him. At this moment the Psychic groaned as though hurt; and later Davis told us that he had squeezed the terminal gently as it touched his hand, showing in some way that this is connected with the central nervous system of the Psychic.

The conclusion here drawn would seem to be partially justified, since under any theory of fraud, if Davis did not recognize what he squeezed as a human hand or foot, the Psychic would probably have no means of knowing that it had been squeezed. Criticism would have to hang upon the plea that the coincidence between a squeezing or other contact of the teleplasm by human hands and the groans of the Psychic should be observed many times, and that negative observations should be made going to show that when it is not thus squeezed she does not groan while when she does groan there is this or some other ascribable reason, before any conclusion so definite as the one of the above record could justifiedly be drawn.

Display of the teleplasm in ordinary séances continued after my July series of sittings. Its next presentation, on the 28th, was to a

[1] See pp. 118, 123, 339, note 1a and accompanying text.

group which, as the record emphasizes, was one of quite unusual character. The presence of De Wyckoff, Mrs. Pierson, the Bonbrights, Dudley, Westwood and Dunipace on one evening did indeed create an atmosphere of experience and sympathy which is seldom present in Margery's somewhat heterogeneous collections of sitters. The record enumerates the sitters, and then tells us:

> Walter came through almost at once, and gave a brief lecture for the benefit of those who were new sitters. He explained the size and relation of the astral body to the physical, and urged all the sitters in the light of the physical phenomena not to forget the significance of it all and its spiritual side. The triviality of the event imports nothing; its meaning we should have constantly before us. He finished by saying that he would show them various physical phenomena in red light and in darkness, and would then show in part the mechanisms involved. The group of sitters was a particularly interested and earnest one, and seemed to furnish just the right atmosphere for the production of happy results.

Thoroughly typical displays of bell-box ringing and of telekinesis of the various séance paraphernalia were then given; after which:

> Under direction, the circle and those outside it gathered closer to the Psychic. Trance came on; and Walter gave us five periods of five seconds each of exposure of great masses of white teleplasm, connected by a fine cord to the right ear of the Psychic. It was seen first on the right shoulder, then down the front of the Psychic to her lap; and finally it was spread out like seaweed over the westerly end of the table-top. It then disappeared, leaving no trace. The sitting ended at 10:35; and the Psychic was then conducted, with hand control, into a lighted room by two woman sitters and there searched thoroughly with no results.

Following this display, arrangements were at once put into effect for photographing anything of the sort which Walter might again offer. This promptness bore fruit on the very next evening; and inasmuch as the sitting was given over wholly to the teleplasmic exhibit, we may present the record here in full. The date is July 29th.

> Although the new visitors were having their first experience at a sitting, they have followed this case for months as printed and reported and were, therefore, more like old sitters.
>
> Walter came through almost at once and immediately put the Psychic into trance and within five minutes we had instructions to



PLATE 21. THE PRESENCE OF DE WYCKOFF AT THE PSYCHIC'S LEFT, AND THE APPEARANCE OF THE LUMINOUS CLOTHESPIN ABOVE THE CABINET (SEE PAGE 165) IDENTIFY THIS AS ONE OF THE PHOTOGRAPHS TAKEN ON JULY 28TH, 1925. ALTHOUGH BADLY OUT OF FOCUS, IT AND THE FOLLOWING VIEW ARE REPRODUCED TO INDICATE THE GENERAL CHARACTER OF THE TELEPLASM ON THIS DATE.

UNIV. OF WIOM.



PLATE 22. THE PHOTOGRAPH OF PLATE 21 IS PRESUMABLY THE FIRST ONE TAKEN ON JULY 28TH, AND THIS WILL THEN BE ONE OF THE TWO LATER ONES. THE THIRD IS SIMILAR TO THIS ONE IN ALL ESSENTIAL FEATURES, AND BECAUSE OF THE BAD FOCUSSING MAY THEREFORE BE OMITTED. IT SHOWS THE PSYCHIC'S HEAD FORWARD, WITH THE TELEPLASMIC STREAM CASCADING ACROSS THE TABLE.

UNIV. OF MICH.

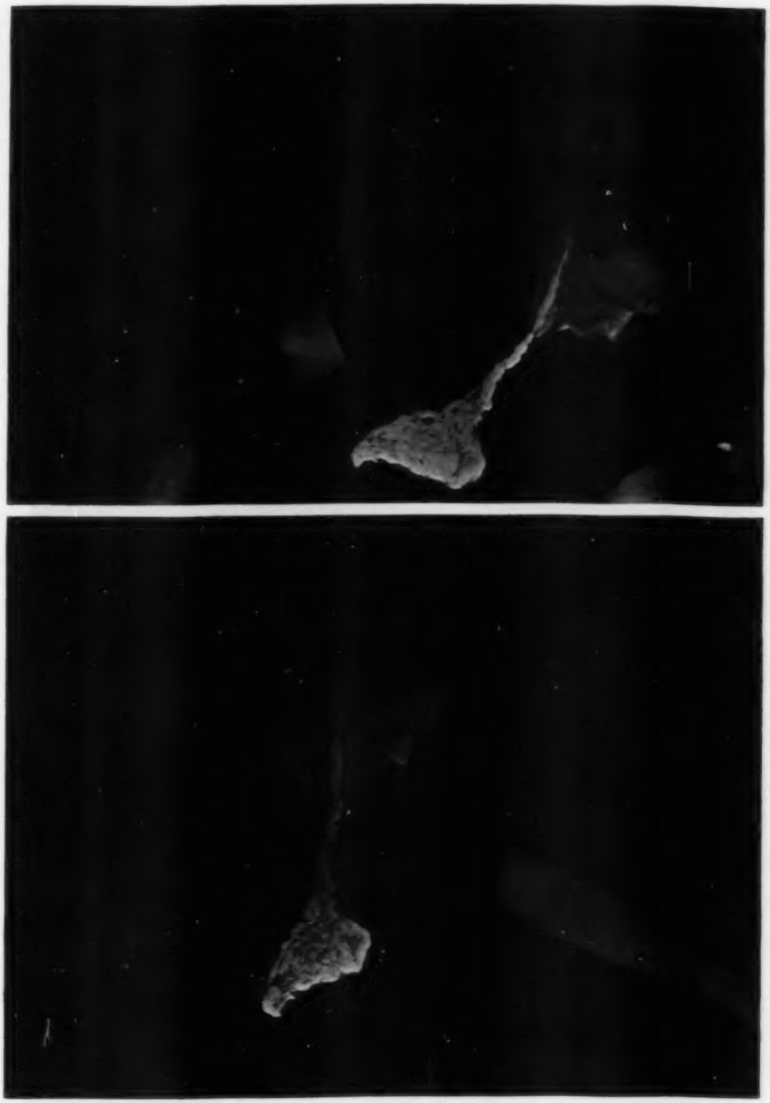


PLATE 23. THESE TWO VIEWS WERE EVIDENTLY TAKEN SIMULTANEOUSLY FROM DIFFERENT QUARTERS OF THE ROOM. THEY ARE PERHAPS IDENTICAL WITH THE VIEW OF PLATE 22, OR PERHAPS FROM THE SÉANCE OF AUGUST 5TH OR 6TH; IN SPITE OF THE INABILITY TO DATE THEM, THEY ARE INCLUDED BECAUSE OF THEIR EXCELLENT DETAIL.

UNIV. OF MICH.



PLATE 24. TENTATIVELY IDENTIFIED BY DR. CRANDON AS FROM AUGUST 5 OR 6, 1925, THIS VIEW IS SHOWN BECAUSE OF ITS DISTINCTIVE FEATURES. IT SEEMS TO PRESENT A TELEPLASMIC ORGANIZATION SIMILAR TO THAT OF CHAPTER XV, BUT IN A STRUCTURAL FORM MORE LIKE THOSE OF CHAPTER XVI.

UNIV. OF MICH.



PLATE 25. TELEPLASM OF THIS CHARACTER, PRESENTED BY WALTER AS HAVING SOME CONNECTION WITH HIS APPARATUS OF SPEECH, MARKED THE DINGWALL SÉANCES OF EARLY 1925 AND SOME OF THE INFORMAL SITTINGS OF LATER MONTHS. THE PRESENCE OF THE LUMINOUS CLOTHESPIN (SEE PAGE 165) SUGGESTS THAT THIS VIEW IS OF ONE OF THE LATER OCCURRENCES.

UNIV. OF MICH.



PLATE 26. THE SAME EXPOSURE AS THAT OF PLATE 25, BUT FROM A DIFFERENT ANGLE AND AT A CLOSER RANGE.

UNIV. OF WICH.



PLATE 27. THE UPPER VIEW IS PROBABLY FROM ONE OF THE LATER DINGWALL SÉANCES. THE LOWER ONE APPEARS TO BE A CLOSER AND BETTER VIEW TAKEN AT THE SAME TIME AS PLATE 21. THEY ARE SHOWN TOGETHER TO MAKE CLEAR THE CONTRAST BETWEEN THE WHITE TELEPLASM WITH DARK CORE AND WITHOUT CORE.

UNIV. OF MICH.



PLATE 28. VIEW SIMILAR TO THAT OF PLATE 25, BUT NOT SIMULTANEOUS WITH THAT ONE. AT THE PSYCHIC'S RIGHT ARE SEEN DR. CRANDON, MRS. RICHARDSON AND DR. RICHARDSON; THE SITTER AT HER LEFT IS UNRECOGNIZABLE; THE LUMINOUS CLOTHESPIN SUGGESTS A DATE IN JULY, 1925 OR LATER; BUT NO POSITIVE IDENTIFICATION BY DATE CAN BE MADE.

UNIV. OF WIOM.

give bright red light for five seconds. Then we beheld again the white teleplasm coming from the right ear and spreading down the right side of the neck. From that time on we had ten or twelve exposures to it; at times covering the face, at times spread out down as far as the groin, again hanging in strips across the face, again gathered in a mass on right shoulder. At one time her head was thrown forward on the table and the teleplasm could be seen stretched out like a beautiful white seaweed all over the table. When her head was down thus, her face was towards the east and Walter's voice giving instructions could be heard distinctly coming out as from the back of her head. Walter said later that he wondered if anyone noticed that. We were given opportunity to take three flashlight photographs and each time three cameras were set: one with fused quartz lens, the other two stereoscopic; one on the east and one on the west. Late in the sitting the hand of each of the sitters was allowed to be put on the table and it was touched by the cool clammy teleplasmic mass.

This was quite the most wonderful opportunity we have had of viewing the head teleplasm. The substance resembles grossly many of the pictures of Eva C. in Schrenck-Notzing's book, but the texture varies at almost every view we have of it, like lace, like soap flakes, like dough, like noodles, like seaweed, like vegetable ivory flowers.

The sitting closed at 10:30 P.M. and the Psychic gradually woke up in increasing red light.

The procedure of arranging with Walter beforehand when the teleplasmic "show" was to be given, and having the photographic contingent on hand for the occasion, continued to prevail; so the next teleplasmic session, on August 5th, was as carefully staged as the preceding one. The record tells us:

The Psychic was searched by Mrs. Richardson before and after the sitting, with negative results.

Walter came through in about three minutes and seemed to be cheerful. He said the Psychic's nerves had been a bit jangled, which fact did not contribute toward big results. Nevertheless, in about ten minutes trance came on, Walter continuing to talk with us for purposes of "stalling."[1a] He gave Cotton a lot of word-pictures of his [Walter's] present surroundings, occupations, duties, etc. He said he was composing a new poem called "The Weavers." It begins: "Oh Weavers, whose intricate design." He

[1a] Lime Street slang for clearing the psychic decks for action.—J. M. B.

said it would be prose poetry. He said that last night he and his gang, one the chief mate and the other the engineer, sat around after we had left, swinging their legs and laughing themselves to death. He would not tell us what they had been laughing at. There were others in the gang that we did not know. He said he hoped we would stick to this effort to photograph the Psychic's voice apparatus[2] until we got it right; it was worth doing.[3]

He then proceeded to let us have four views, of five seconds each, of a mass of white teleplasm on the right shoulder, connected with the right ear. Gerke thought he could see a structure similar to several superposed vertebrae. Then a flashlight photograph was taken (three cameras). After that the Psychic's head went on the table, facing east; and Walter's voice came from the back of her head. Then in red light we saw a structure six inches high as if made of white wax. To some it seemed as though there were something like a mouth on top thereof.

As indicated by the record for August 1st,[4] the above sitting and that of the following evening were a deliberately organized attack upon a particularly teleplasmic problem; and a part of the argument was the use of substantially the same circle throughout. The record for the second number in the series (August 6th) is substantially parallel with that for the first:

At the early part of the sitting Walter had very little to say because he was busy preparing the physical phenomena. He seemed to be full of cheerfulness and self-confidence. At about 9:15 P.M. he gave us our first look in red light and after that, in all, gave us about twelve views of the teleplasmic structure. His plan is, by consecutive sittings with the same group, to show us all the stages in development of the completely independent talking mechanism.

First we saw a large mass, perhaps seven by four by three inches wide, of white teleplasm on the right shoulder and chest, apparently connecting with the right ear. Then it was seen still there, but in addition there was apparently a separate mass on top of the Psychic's head. Then the lower mass was seen alone next, but it had grown and seemed to be somewhat rounded. A photograph was then taken. After the photograph the mass be-

[2] This was the theme of the present series of séances; see reference to August 1st, below.—J. M. B.

[3] This paragraph is included, not merely in order to give the full record, but because it is so thoroughly typical of Walter's lighter vein, as regularly displayed during the warming-up portions of the seances.—J. M. B.

[4] See p. 264.

came radiant for about three minutes, showing that it absorbed light. Then the Psychic's head was thrown on the table and the mass was seen spread in front of her face and toward the east. It was rounded, like a white balloon or thin skull with a drapery of white vegetable ivory structures over it. A flashlight was taken. Then the Psychic sat up again and the mass was seen much bigger, perhaps six inches in diameter, on her breast bone. Both when it was on the table and again when the Psychic was erect, definite long breathing could be heard coming from the mass. The breathing was a deeper respiration than the Psychic's snore which could be constantly heard; the two were not synchronous, and occasionally they overlapped. Richardson and Crandon successively were allowed to feel of the mass as it lay on the chest, and, as each of them felt, it seemed as though there were some soft vibratory objects more or less like lips under a soft rubbery mass. These lip-like structures kept regularly beating against the exploring hand. Richardson was then allowed to feel of the Psychic's mouth, which was six inches above the mass just described. Another flashlight was taken.

Walter gave instructions to the same group to meet on August 12, 13 and 14 and to ask Bird for these nights. He then launched forth on a royal entertainment in the subjective way, started by certain questions. Mrs. Richardson and Hill will each send in a report of this part of the sitting.[4a]

In accordance with Walter's instructions of the preceding record, the teleplasmic side now was suspended until my next visit; although something of exception to this statement might be made in behalf of the sitting of the 9th, at which the familiar silhouetting of the hand-like terminal was given with unusual freedom; the record tells us:

Walter then . . . produced in about fourteen minutes a complete visible right hand which could be seen over the luminous doughnut and finally over the coördinate board. First he made us put the handkerchief over the board because it was so bright.[4b] then he showed the complete hand, six by four inches, and then crumpled the handkerchief and lifted it. Mrs. Parker then suggested that he spread the handkerchief out over the coördinate board, which he did with great precision, pulling and patting it just as one would the counterpane of a bed.

[4a] And which will presumably not come within the scope of the present compilation.—J. M. B.

[4b] See final paragraph, p. 213; and other pages there cited.

My full dictaphonic notes of Chapter XVI will chronicle the action, teleplasmic and otherwise, of the sittings of the 12th, 13th and 14th. They will, I think, support the statement that the second of these séances furnished the peak, to date, of the teleplasmic side of the mediumship. They will also inform the reader that, following exposure to four flashlights on this date, Walter on the 14th represented his teleplasmic structures as pretty thoroughly disrupted; and that it appeared to be a matter of doubt just how soon he could have them in order again. This theme ran consistently through the ensuing sittings. Thus, on the 17th, "Walter came through in about fifteen minutes and said that his force was low and directed us to leave the red light on and go downstairs for half an hour while he gathered new force. We did this, and Walter came at once, apparently with good force."[4b] Again on the 18th, "Walter came in about ten minutes rather faintly and said that he had not yet fully recovered from the effects of the white light, but that if we would be patient he would get his teleplasm rebuilt in due time." On the 19th he gave a very definite picture of being engaged in the reconstruction of his structures; and I judge that the long hiatus from this date to the 27th was dictated by him on these grounds. As late as September 10th and 11th, he advanced the white-light exposure of August 13th as reason for his inability to go through with a scheduled demonstration of the vocal side of the mediumship. And it was not until October 25th that there were signs of a return to the teleplasmic displays. Even then, this return was only a partial success:

> A new record was on the victrola, and Walter came through in good spirits and said he had a lot of power. He talked for a brief time, then proceeded to physical manifestations.
>
> He called for the luminous coordinate board,[5] and exhibited over it his hand, first a left and later a right; under strict conditions of double control of Crandon and the Psychic.[6] He lifted the hand up, laid it on the table as on a piano, and then directed each sitter in order to put his hand palm down on the luminous co-

[4b] It is perhaps not entirely clear that the whole group went downstairs, leaving the séance room empty; returning later to resume the séance.—J. M. B.

[5] See page 89.

[6] The reader must be cautioned, here and in many other similar passages, not to read into the text of the record any implication of the existence of tactual foot-control. Foot control throughout this period was practically never by other means than the luminous bands; and this should always be borne in mind where there seems the slightest possibility that a free foot could have produced the phenomena recorded.—J. M. B.

ordinate-board; whereupon he touched and caressed each of these hands. The feel was of intense *and lasting* cold. The substance of the hand was rubber-like, but it was full of sinewy strength. He caressed the heads of several, and was preparing to exhibit the hand in the red light; when he suddenly broke in: "Leave the dim light on and go downstairs quickly. Something unexpected has happened."

The séance was not resumed; and there was no further sitting in Lime Street until November 7th, the Psychic being in Buffalo and Niagara Falls for most of the interval. The records do not indicate that there was ever an opportunity to get Walter's further testimony as to just what had broken up the present séance. And the next teleplasmic display came after such a long interval, and with so much intervening history, that we shall have nothing further on this aspect of the mediumship until we come to Chapters XLI and XLII.

CHAPTER XXV

The Glass Cabinet and Wired Control

By the Editor, with Citation of the Records

Throughout the summer of 1925 there was much discussion by the Crandons and their friends as to what lessons and benefits might be derived from the Code-Hoagland episode. This discussion naturally took two directions: on the one hand it revolved about the séance-room philosophy, and on the other it dealt with specific procedures which might be profitably inaugurated. On both these heads, the experience with the young men from Harvard was turned to ultimate good ends.

The philosophy of the situation created by the Code-Hoagland procedure and their published report was sufficiently well covered in an article which I contributed to the A.S.P.R. Journal for July, 1926; and inasmuch as it is a matter of a fairly brief extract from this article rather than the complete text, I depart from the usual procedure of this volume and give in full the extract in question:

> In the published history of the case, control of Margery's extremities has always been personal—that is, by the good old-fashioned procedure of holding or maintaining contact with them. An avenue of escape from this procedure, often explored in this as in other cases, lies in the search for a phenomenon that requires no control at all. Walter has had his shot at sealed containers, endless cords, and the like. He has equally had his shot at working in a continuous and sufficient light. In neither direction has he done anything that encourages the hope of ultimate finality through such means.[1] Let us then consider the deficiencies of personal[2] control, and just what we might evolve to evade these.
>
> The major deficiency lies in the fact that proof of validity depends upon our willingness to accept the controller's words for facts of paramount import. The difficulties go deeper than at first blush appears. It is all very well to say that one who investigates seriously must select as colleagues those in whose honesty and ability he has confidence. But no such necessity rules in any other

[1] Not so true at the date of publication of the present volume as it was when written.—J. M. B.

[2] The term covers, of course, the use of the controller's feet and head, indeed of any part of his anatomy that can be brought into play; not merely his hands.

field of science. The physicist, the astronomer, the head of a group of workers in any other field, is never in a position where he must accept, without possibility of appeal or verification or correction, the critical contributions of his colleagues or his assistants toward his final result. If we define psychical procedure so that this necessity arises, we violate scientific convention and repel many workers whose interest we might otherwise enlist.

For scientific work of all sorts revolves about probabilities. Every observation or inference that gains acceptance, by the individual worker or by science at large, wins credit because the probability of its accuracy comes to appear greater than the probability of its error. But psychical research deals with questions of probability whose criticality is matched in no other field. The metapsychist must consider the probability that there exists a fundamental property or faculty of space and of the human organism which science has not yet recognized; and at the same time he must deal with the probability that any particular person reporting his control is one hundred per cent accurate and one hundred per cent honest. Both these probabilities defy precise numerical determination; they involve the human equation; the emotions and prejudices must enter into any attempt to evaluate them; the procedures necessary to establish them as having been realized must be subject to violent controversy.

If Crandon is in control, and if he renders a report implying the validity of the phenomena, we expect that a certain proportion of the critics in all intellectual honesty will find it more probable that he is mistaken or even lying, than that this defiance of common experience can be. If control is taken from him and given some other person of greater detachment, the probability of erroneous reporting should take a smaller value in any fair judgment; but will it take a value small enough to overcome the probability that common experience is final? With some critics we know that it will, or at least that it may. With others, hard-won experience teaches us that it will not.

We must reconcile ourselves to the existence of a large class of people to whom life-time philosophies are so dear that no matter whom we might put in control—the President, the King, the Pope himself, the objector's own wife or mother even—it will seem more probable that this person is mistaken or even lying, than that ordinary experience can be transcended as it is in the séance room. What better evidence of error or prevarication could one ask than willingness to testify to something that "in the nature of things" could not have occurred? I condemn such a critic only when he is

not candid enough to see and admit his bias; or when he expresses *a priori* satisfaction with my control, only to turn the other face and charge me with fraud when something happens which he had taken for granted would not happen. That is neither wise nor fair, and it should be avoided. But with the conscientious objector who honestly confesses that he regards new human testimony as more fallible than generalizations from old testimony I have all patience, even though I regard him as fundamentally wrong; and I regard it as part of the problem of metapsychics to devise procedures that will drive him from his refuge.

We have, moreover, two concrete instances in Margery's history which teach us that this impervious skeptic, when *not* intellectually honest, will go so far in his determination to combat the phenomena, as to allege carelessness or even dishonesty against himself. Such a "skeptic" can be neither cured nor converted and we need seek to do neither. But we must protect the medium against him, and this we cannot do while clinging to personal control. The investigator too must today get away from this control, for his own protection; for Houdini and Code have taught us that the claim of fraud based on personal control is no more final than the claim of validity so based. Honest exercise of personal control probably gives, as Geley felt, a greater personal conviction than any substitute; but personal conviction must be sacrificed in behalf of general scientific procedure.

Now none of us likes to be shut up, or tied up; and any substitute which we may propose for personal control must necessarily be mechanical, and bring with it some degree of confinement and discomfort, mental if not physical. Margery is no freer from claustrophobic shrinkings than anybody else; and while she had always expressed a complete willingness to go to any lengths to improve the validity of personal control, she had insisted that she would never submit to being tied up or confined mechanically. But Code's conduct added to Houdini's stressed the danger of permitting any person in the room to enjoy a unique experience, about which he could lie or err with no possibility of correction; and personal control is nothing but a summation of such experiences.

There was a lot of philosophizing of this sort in Lime Street during the summer months of 1925, and Dr. Richardson did a lot of hard thinking about the specific problems of design for a mechanical control that should afford the maximum of rigor and endurability. The idea which he finally worked out to the point of application involved a new

cabinet, of radically different style from the old one. It was constructed during the Psychic's absence in Buffalo in October–November, and was ready for her on her return. We must first firmly fix its bare physical features.

The dimensions are six feet deep, three feet wide and seven feet high. There is a solid wooden floor, independent of the séance-room floor, hinged at the back to permit raising it in its entirety for inspection of the space beneath it, but otherwise integral with the cabinet. The roof too is solidly built of wood and solidly screwed to the corner posts. Two sides and the back are entirely of plate glass, save for these corner posts, and for wood panels dividing them into upper and lower panes, and in the case of the sides also into front and rear halves. The fourth side of the cabinet, in front, matches the others in construction, but is hinged so as actually to serve as a door; and it is provided with latch, lock and key.

It will therefore be seen that instead of three sides plus a loose cloth top, the new cabinet has six integral sides. It is a complete and self-contained box. Conceivably the Psychic could sit in it, near the front, with door open and with a circle maintained by herself and the sitters, as in the open cabinet. Equally, she could be completely locked in the glass box; and in this event, conceivably phenomena might occur inside the cabinet with her, or outside it in the room with the sitters. There was no definite plan as to which of these alternatives would be followed; that was for Walter to decide.

What was planned, however, regardless of how the sitting might be staged in other details, was a complete mechanical control of the Psychic's five extremities. At corresponding points in the wooden panelling at the two sides are three pairs of rectangular ports, four inches by four and one-half. Each of these is provided with a cover, hinged at bottom and closing at the top with a snap-lock. At adjacent points in the top of this cover and in the wooden frame immediately above are eye-bolts, so that when the ports are closed they may be wired or sealed. Each port-cover is fitted with a chain that prevents its falling open past a horizontal position; and when they open, they open outward. The reader who is a bit ahead of the story will visualize the Psychic's hands as emerging from these ports. It will be equally clear that she may sit in a forward, central or rear position in the cabinet, and let her hands project through the corresponding pair of ports.

A word of description and discrimination will here be necessary for

most of my readers, revolving about the technical distinction between eye-screws and eye-bolts. We are all familiar with eye-screws—screws with a metal eye for a head, so that after they are screwed into place a wire or cord may be passed through this eye for the suspension or fastening of some object. The term eye-bolt involves something a little different, which I can best explain by dealing with the present particular case rather than with the general one.

Picture an ordinary screw-eye, but with straight shank like a bolt instead of tapering shank like a screw. Picture a hole bored through a wooden member of any sort, and the eye-bolt passed through this hole and projecting considerably beyond it. Picture the hole as sufficiently larger than the eye-bolt to permit the latter to turn freely in it. Picture now a nut threaded upon the projecting end of the bolt, and screwed down close to the wood but not in actual contact therewith, so that the bolt with its nut are still free to rotate as a unit. Picture finally a process analogous to the heading down of a rivet, whereby the threaded end of the bolt which projects beyond the nut is bashed down upon this nut so that the latter may no longer be screwed off. The bolt and nut, considered as a unit, may still be rotated in their hole; but further than this, they constitute a single member, quite inseparable. This member may be freely turned in its hole but cannot be withdrawn therefrom; and one may twist and turn on the exposed eye as long as one will, nothing will happen but this same harmless and aimless rotation of the bolt in its seat.

Suppose the wooden member in which this bolt were thus secured to be one of the outer boards of the cabinet. Picture now another board about to be placed face-to-face on this, to serve as the inner lining of the cabinet. If we will bore or chisel a circular counter-sunk hole part-way into the inner board at the point where this overlies the nut of the preceding paragraph, the latter will fit into this countersink and will maintain the ability to rotate. And we now reach the point where I may make the specific statement that the eye-bolts in Margery's glass cabinet are thus patterned and thus inserted. It is a tricky and expensive job, but when it is done we have this assurance: the eyes, which to the casual gaze look as though they might so easily be screwed out of place, can be rotated in their seats forever without in the least degree coming out or coming loose. If you want to remove one of these eye-bolts, you must destroy the encircling wood-work.

Now the primary purpose of the glass cabinet is to provide a means of lashing the psychic for control of all extremities in such fashion

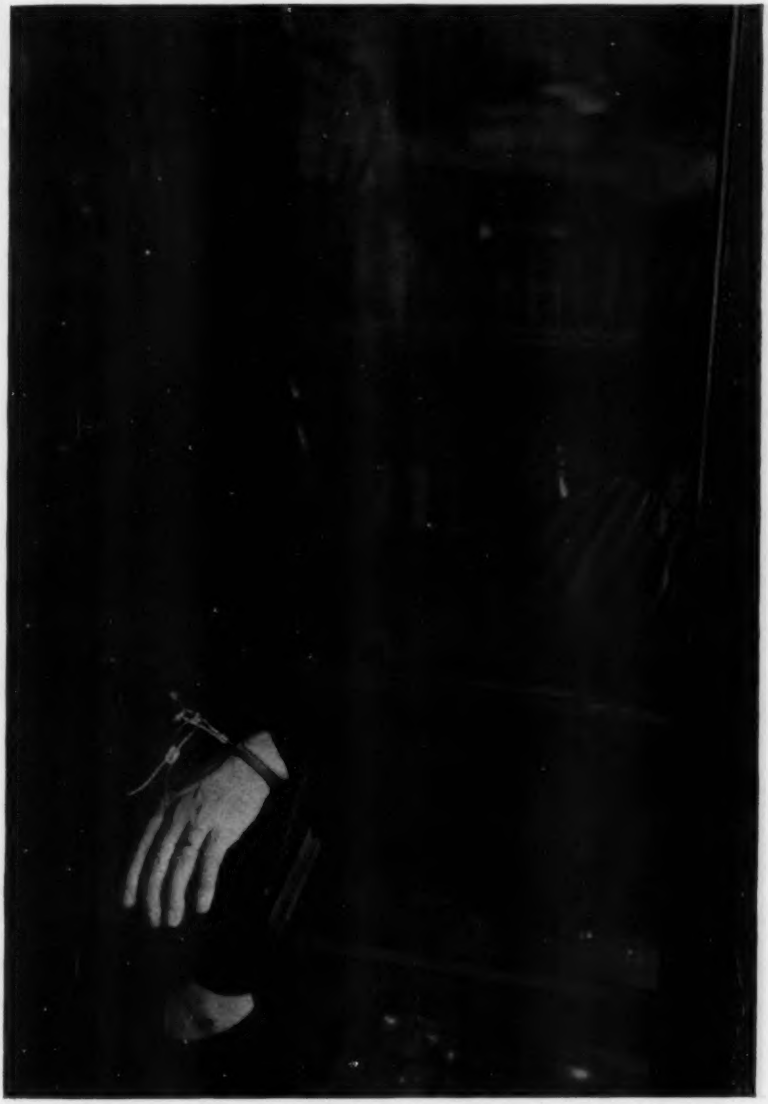


PLATE 29. GENERAL VIEW OF THE UPPER HALF OF THE GLASS CABINET, WITH THE MEDIUM LASHED IN PLACE. THE REFLECTIONS FROM THE GLASS PANELS ARE CONFUSING BUT THE PSYCHIC'S POSITION INSIDE THE CABINET AND THE RELATION OF THE HAND TIE TO ITS ENVIRONS WILL BE CLEAR.

UNIV. OF MICH.

that no rational claim can be advanced in behalf of the possibility of her escape. The general necessities in this connection will be clear if one will read my accounts of my sittings with Evan Powell and Nino Pecoraro.[3] It will there be seen that wide separation of the medium's hands; the use of a separate length of rope (or wire) for each point of tying; avoidance of any turn of rope (or wire) that passes about the medium's body or about *anything* superfluously; and a stretching of the medium's extremities to the greatest possible extent, constitute the fundamentals of this game. Also it will be understood that the medium quite possibly possesses strength to break out of any bonds which we may dare impose upon him; and that our task is not so much to prevent this, as to be very certain that escape could not be gained in such fashion as to leave the bonds intact against his subsequent reentry into them.

The eye-bolts which I have described in the panelling outside the cabinet and adjacent to the ports provide the points of attachment for the hands. When these are properly moored to the eye-bolts in question, the protruding shelves furnish support for them, so that the discomfort of having them hanging in air, supported only by the lashings about the wrists and dragging down on these with their entire weight, is avoided. The points of attachment for the feet are similar eye-bolts, a pair of which is set, about eight inches apart, in the floor of the cabinet at each of the three positions. The means of lashing contemplated in the plans and employed continuously since the glass cabinet has been in use is No. 3 picture-wire of the ordinary multi-strand type. This, as everybody knows, is soft enough to be easily tied by hand and cut with scissors, but will not stretch appreciably under any ordinary load and presents a high tensile strength against breaking. This wire of course could not be put, bare, about the medium's wrists or ankles without cutting her. Accordingly flexible rubber tubes are provided, of diameter somewhat less than a quarter-inch. A pair of these is carefully cut to a length slightly less than the circumference of the Psychic's wrists, and another and longer pair is similarly made for her ankles. The wires are threaded through these; then, at the point where the two ends of the rubber fail to meet in passing about the wrist or ankle, one may tie the bare wire into a hard knot.

The usual procedure in lashing Margery into the cabinet is to take

[3] My *Psychic Adventures*, Chapter X; *Scientific American*, February, 1924.

a fresh piece of wire for each wrist and ankle, cut on the spot from the roll by the person who is to do the tying. This is cut, by approximate measure, long enough to pass around the member in question, to be tied into a secure knot, and to leave projecting through this knot ends long enough to pass to the appropriate eye-bolt and be again tied. The exact procedure of the tying, of course, varies with the individual doing it. Always the wire is cut, threaded through the rubber tubes, and tied on the wrists and ankles in the full normal electric light of the bedroom. These bracelets and anklets the Psychic then wears into the séance room, and the second part of the tying is done there, after she takes her seat in her chair in the cabinet. Some sitters make a workmanlike job of this; others do not. Some hesitate to draw the wire from the wrist to the eye-bolt as tight as it can be drawn; others do not. Obviously no generalization can be made covering anything beyond the means provided for the tying; plus the fact that in my presence the Psychic has always encouraged the tightening of these wires to the utmost, and more than once has insisted that they are not tight enough. The tendency of sitters of course is to tie the ankles as tight as the wire will go, and to slack off a bit on the wrists. Experiment with a sitter has made it clear that the presence of heels gives an alarming degree of freedom to the wired feet; the feet can be scrouged over sideways, and the full height of the heel at once and automatically becomes slack wire. Not as a result of this experiment, but always from almost the beginning, Margery invariably goes into the glass cabinet in stockinged feet. Not all movement of the feet can be inhibited; no matter how severely one pulls on the wire before tying it, automatically the feet may to some degree rotate about their eye-bolts as a pivot. With reference to the hands, I can say most emphatically that I have on occasion tied them so that they could not be retracted into the cabinet through the holes, from their normal wired position outside on the shelves. I have not always been able, even with Margery's keen cooperation, to tie them equally well—the wire is not quite as manageable as one would like and complete success in tying the wrists depends upon small variable factors that one cannot readily isolate. We must therefore be rather dependent upon the verdicts of the immediate observers as to the satisfactoriness of the hand control on any given occasion.

In the glass cabinet as originally designed, a soft cloth collar was provided for head control; this was secured by wire or cord to an eye-bolt in the ceiling. Cleats on the cabinet floor make it difficult



PLATE 30. ENLARGED CLOSE-UP OF THE HAND-TIE IN THE GLASS CABINET. THE LEAD SEAL HERE USED WAS ABANDONED AT A RATHER EARLY DATE IN FAVOR OF KNOTS IN THE WIRE. THIS PICTURE WAS TAKEN AFTER THE PSYCHIC HAD BEEN WIRED IN THE CABINET FOR ONE OF THE FIRST SITTINGS HELD THEREIN.

UNIV. OF MICH.

but of course not impossible for the Psychic's chair to be shifted during the séance. This is of minor importance, however. A shift could not be thought of as giving any freedom with hands or feet, wired to fixed points as these are. It might give some freedom of the head. But even this is doubtful. In the original design, just described, a forward shift to bring the head nearer what will ultimately be found to be the theater of action would tighten the head control; in the later design for head control to which we shall come, a backward shift would alone be possible, and this would take the head away from that theater.

This seems to complete the description of the glass cabinet as a physical factor; a full set of photographs is given to supplement the printed word. The manner of use, the conditions surrounding phenomena, etc., are sufficiently variable so that they can be taken account of only from séance to séance.

The new cabinet was introduced to Walter in two sessions on November 7th and 8th which were so very informal that no record was made of the sitters present. Crandon's memorandum tells us merely:

> On the Psychic's return [from Buffalo] there was a sitting November 7th and another November 8th. These sittings were in no way official,[4] but involved a try-out of the new plate-glass cabinet devised by Richardson and donated by Dennett.[5] Walter's first comment was "Another box!" But as he proceeded he seemed to like it, and said that it would be particularly favorable for the development of complete apparition. He said the trouble, if any, was that he would get too much force in it. This seemed to be confirmed by the fact that he frequently ordered the glass door to be opened; and when it was open a crack he would push it violently open to about ninety degrees with a force estimated at thirty-five pounds. He had no difficulty in reaching his terminal out through the small hole in the front door and ringing the bell-box. The first official test of the new cabinet was set down for November 9th.

The record for the 9th gives considerable space to a description of the cabinet. In so far as concerns matters which we have not already covered, it tells us that all the ports were sealed except the two in which the Psychic's hands were wired and the one in the front door. The Psychic sat in the forward position. In place of tying the wire

[4] The word applies to Richardson's program of sitting.—J. M. B.

[5] As this remark indicates, after Richardson's design was complete, Dennett paid for the construction of the new cabinet.—J. M. B.

ends to the eye-bolts, these ends were passed through lead seals of the sort used on freight-car doors; this procedure in fact lasted for some weeks. The Psychic wore low shoes into the cabinet with luminous bands that went over the instep and under the bottom of the shoe. This of course would prevent the removal of a shoe without detection, since the band of light was partly on the shoe and partly on the stocking; to which latter, the record tells us, the bands were tightly sewed. The record goes on:

> Walter came through quickly. One of the first phenomena was a loud push of the door, which had been held partly open in order to hear Walter's whisper. The door having then been closed, there was considerable movement of the unlighted megaphone, which had been placed inside the cabinet at the Psychic's right. Then without warning the Psychic said that Walter was trying to take off her shoes, which he did in a very short time, ripping off the luminous bands. The door having been partly opened, Walter placed the shoes in succession in the opening, whence they were removed by Richardson.
>
> Walter said he was having considerable difficulty from two factors. First the closed cabinet concentrated one kind of force in such fashion that he could hardly control it. In fact, he was afraid he might break the cabinet to pieces. There was also a second factor, which prevented his doing fine work such as picking up small objects. As regards the first factor, often when the door was partly open it would be swung forward with a good deal of force. In fact once when Richardson tried to shut the door he had considerable difficulty in overcoming this force.
>
> As regards levitation of objects, the luminous doughnut was placed in the opening of the door for a considerable period of time without Walter's being able to pick it up. Finally, however, after about an hour's interval, he drew it into the cabinet but it fell immediately upon the floor. Later he was more skillful and each sitter had the following experience. He was told to take the illuminated doughnut in his hand and hold it through the opening of the door inside of the cabinet. In this position, Walter bent the doughnut back and forth, tapped on it with his finger and at times touched the hand of the sitter with his terminal which felt soft, boneless and rather cool. Finally, in each instance, Walter succeeded in grasping the doughnut and carried it in beautiful circles all over the anterior portion of the cabinet. The excursion of the doughnut often times reached as high as the Psychic's head and seemed to go slightly back of her head. Finally in one instance,



PLATE 31. THE LOWER PART OF THE GLASS CABINET, FROM IN FRONT WITH THE DOOR OPEN; TAKEN AFTER THE PSYCHIC HAD BEEN WIRED IN THE CABINET FOR A SÉANCE. THE DETAILS OF THE FOOT CONTROL AND THE VERY SMALL SCOPE FOR MOVEMENTS OF THE FEET ARE CLEARLY SHOWN.

UNIV. OF WISH.

the doughnut was passed out of the right lateral opening and fell upon the floor.

Walter then called for the large megaphone but when it was introduced into the cabinet it was so bright that it made him very angry. His tone of voice was very sarcastic and he seemed to think that we should have known better than to put such a bright object in the cabinet. This megaphone was therefore removed and replaced with a paper megaphone which had less bright lines on it. This megaphone gave Walter a great deal of difficulty. He could not seem to grasp it and he was not able to levitate it. Later in the evening, however, the brightness of the big megaphone having been diminished it was placed in the cabinet. Walter raised it to the level of the Psychic's head, carried it in all directions forward and backward and finally dropped it on the floor. This he did two or three times in succession. During this and most of the other phenomena the door was locked. During all of these levitations both Crandon's hands were held by Mrs. Richardson. Under these circumstances, of course, the Psychic's free hand was still controlled by the wire fastenings.

About 11:30 P.M. the sitting ended. Immediately with the aid of white torches the wire controls of the Psychic's feet were examined and found to be intact. As a result of her experience, Walter predicted that there would be found considerable swelling of the hands and legs as the wire cut into the flesh quite a little.[6] Such was the case. The wire hand controls were then examined and found to be perfect as was also the bandage on the head. The wire controls were then cut and preserved for future reference. The seals on the unused doors were examined and found to be intact. This sitting, therefore, showed that even though the Psychic's extremities and head were under absolute control, Walter with his extra terminal was able to levitate not only an illuminated paper disc, but also a large and quite heavy megaphone. Of course during all these phenomena Walter's terminal could be seen against the brilliancy of the illuminated objects. During the major part of the sitting the Psychic was in trance and her snoring could be heard even outside the cabinet. The loop of bandage around her neck seemed to choke her to a certain extent and although the sitters became somewhat worried Walter said not to mind, that he would take care of it all right.

---

[6] The rubber tubing was an afterthought, introduced in view of this experience. It not only protected the Psychic, but enabled the wire to be drawn much more satisfactorily tight.—J. M. B.

The practice of putting the Psychic in trance for the glass-cabinet sittings became almost at once standard. I am very confident that this is done to make her oblivious to the presence of her bonds; since the phenomena given in the glass cabinet are in large part the same as those given in the old cabinet, without trance. That she could go through a major part of an hour in the glass cabinet with the wire controls, in full consciousness, I wholly doubt; the trance however is a convenient means of making the control tolerable, and at the same time making possible its application with a rigor that one would hesitate to employ with a conscious subject.

There was no intent to confine the mediumship to the glass-and-wire control or to the phenomena obtainable therewith; but this theme was pursued to the exclusion of all else for some time. In many ways the new procedure was experimental, and subject to revision from night to night. But it was taken as a matter of definition that the new control replaced rather than supplemented older techniques. We come finally to sitters who feel that they need the luminous-band control in addition to that of the wires, as added guarantee of the integrity of the latter. Since this demand means a coupling of two mechanical controls and not a mixing of the mechanical and the personal, we shall find that when made it is usually granted; but for the present it was not made and the desirability of the combination did not occur to Crandon. The protective rubber tubing was not used on the 9th, as we have seen, but was on the 11th as we shall see in the next chapter; whether it was used on the 10th is not indicated in the record for that date, with which we close this chapter:

> Trance came on while the light was still on and before the circle was formed. This followed the complete tying up of the Psychic's five extremities, as described in the sitting of November 9th, namely, with wire and lead seals and a halter for the head. Examination of the Psychic's mouth was made after the tying up and was negative. Mrs. Richardson superintended the dressing of the Psychic which consisted of a single garment.[7, 8]

[7] Plus stockings.—J. M. B.

[8] A hostile critic has inquired, on reading this chapter whether Crandon is ever searched, as well as the Psychic; if not, what is to prevent his passing apparatus to her after the séance is under way. The very charge here contemplated is brought later, as part of the necessary mechanism of fraud in the glass cabinet, by all adverse critics. Crandon is not searched nearly so often as the Psychic, but occasionally this privilege is afforded the male sitters. So far as his confederacy of the sort indicated is concerned, there are of course many occasions when he is absent, or present and effectively insulated.—J. M. B.

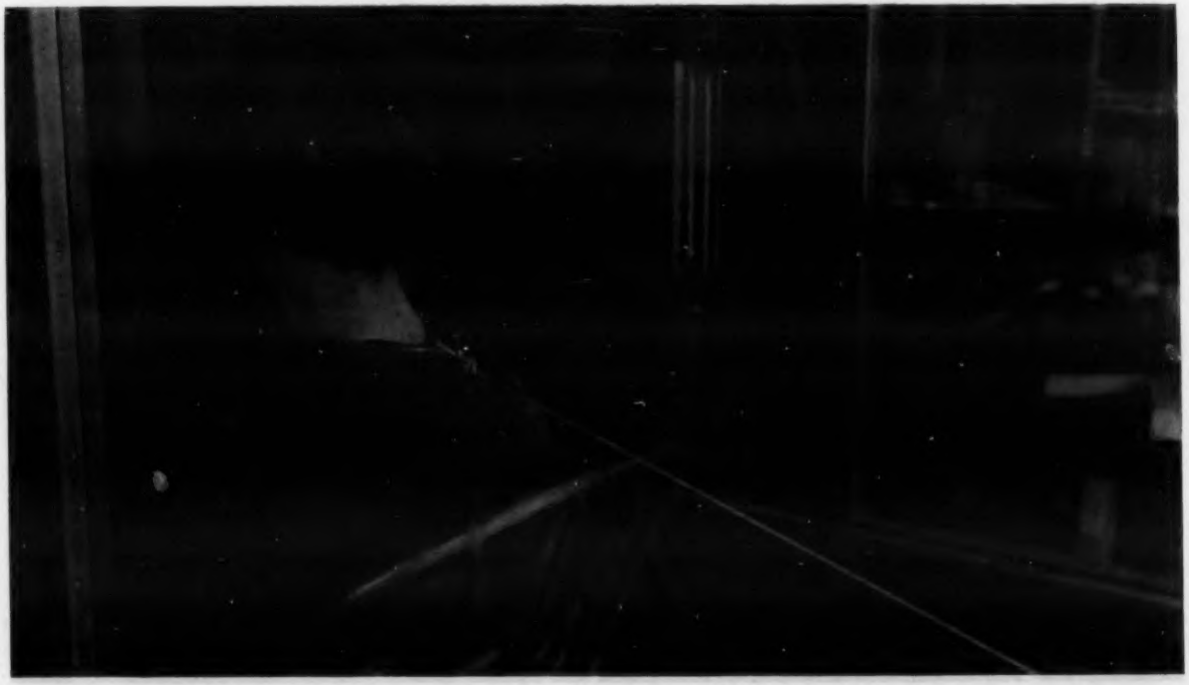


PLATE 32. SPECIALLY POSED PHOTOGRAPH, SHOWING THE ROUTINE ARRANGEMENTS FOR HEAD-CONTROL IN THE GLASS CABINET. TAKEN AFTER THE SUBSTITUTION OF THE LEATHER COLLAR FOR THE CLOTH BANDAGE; SEE PAGE 331. THE DIFFICULTY OF LIGHTING THE INSIDE OF THE CABINET FOR PHOTOGRAPHY THROUGH THE GLASS SIDES EXPLAINS WHY THIS VIEW WAS POSED RATHER THAN TAKEN IN CONNECTION WITH A SÉANCE.

UNIV. OF MICH.

Under these conditions then the glass door was closed and after a few words of greeting Walter said "two new reporters present. All is lost." Under instructions Gerke held a luminous doughnut about six inches through the front door hole (4 x 4½ inches). Walter fiddled with it for a few minutes and his terminal could be seen touching the doughnut. Then he took it gently from Gerke's hands and waved it all about in the cabinet, up to the ceiling and as far as eleven inches back of the plane of the Psychic's head, and finally thrust it out through the right-hand frame hole of the cabinet into the hands of Crandon and Barnes.

This experiment was now repeated complete for Flynn; that is, he held the doughnut through the hole in the door. At this time the doughnut was levitated in all about four minutes. Through the hole in the doughnut could be seen the blunt knobby end of Walter's terminal protruding about two inches. The doughnut at one time fluttered against the door-glass; and then, on request, Walter rapped on the glass with his terminal, with an end projecting through the hole.

Crandon was now instructed to hold the Scientific American bell-box in through the partly opened doorway and to put the luminous doughnut on the flapper. This was done and Walter proceeded to ring the bell repeatedly, his terminal being visible on the doughnut as he pressed down the flapper.

The large luminous megaphone was now put in the cabinet and the door closed. The megaphone was promptly levitated with great skill and nicety, and wandered about like a huge fish in an aquarium. It was finally lifted over vertically directly behind the Psychic's head and was then laid horizontally on her left arm and was then thrown over her head to the back of the cabinet.

Later Conant was instructed, by Walter, to crawl into the cabinet on the Psychic's left to get out the megaphone, because the light on it disturbed the force. Walter said that at that time he was standing at the Psychic's right, out of Conant's way.

He then played a lot with the door, opening and shutting it. Gerke had hung a paper doughnut, ten inches in diameter, like a Christmas wreath inside the cabinet door. Walter proceeded to tear this apart in one place and then allowed a red flash light to be turned on to show it. At this moment of flash, which was repeated, Barnes observed a white mesh, apparently teleplasm, over the Psychic's face in trance.

CHAPTER XXVI

A New Procedure of "One-Man Sittings"

From the Séance Records

Emphasis has just been put upon the fact that in starting the use of the glass cabinet, no set rules were laid down beforehand. Alike on Walter's part and that of the sitters, the procedure was visualized as wholly experimental. The séance of November 11th saw the inauguration of an experiment of sufficient distinction and importance to merit a special chapter. Those present were Richardson, Flynn, Barnes, Crummy, Miss Conklin, Dudley, Conant, Gerke and Crandon. Flynn is a well-known free-lance writer, who was present on a tentative assignment to write the case up for *Collier's Weekly*, if he found it sufficiently interesting for that purpose. Barnes was a regular member of the staff of the Brooklyn *Eagle* on similar assignment. Barnes's story appeared in the *Eagle* for December 27th; and Flynn had at least three articles in *Collier's*, during 1926, on this case and on mediumship in general. We may let them tell the story of the present evening:

> I proposed that in order to rule out all question of help from either Crandon or any other sitter, some measures be taken toward that end. The Psychic suggested a one-man sitting with no one in the séance room but herself locked in the cabinet, and me outside. Crandon advised a preliminary sitting of the Psychic, the doctor, Richardson and myself to ask Walter's counsel.
>
> Walter's voice came through promptly. He directed that the Psychic be locked in the new glass cabinet and that I stand outside the cabinet, all lights out. The doughnut was to be in readiness. The door of the séance room was to be left open, with the hall lights out and the other persons in the hall so that they might witness the sitting from that point. I was directed to listen to Walter's instructions. He would, as he announced, "run the show." The doctor was instructed to remain out of the room. The circle was then broken.[1]

[1] Several persons on reading proof of this have felt that the sequence of events was not clearly indicated; and have wondered whether it were not possible for Crandon to pass a reaching rod or other apparatus to the medium in the interval of more or less confusion suggested by the words: "the circle was then broken." This statement in point of fact applies to the end of the informal conference sitting with Walter. The sequence was that they all sat down in old-fashioned style in the open cabinet and chatted with Walter about the evening's plans. This pre-

After this the Psychic was lashed in position in the new glass cabinet. I witnessed the putting on of the wire controls. These consisted of stout picture-wire carried through rubber tubing to protect the Psychic's skin. One was securely fastened around each wrist and each ankle. These wire bands were then fastened to wire staples screwed into the floor and into the slots for the hands in the side of the cabinet as already described in minutes of preceding sittings. These wires were sealed with lead seals. I personally inspected in white light all of these fastenings and saw that they were secure. The Psychic's head was controlled by a band of surgical tape around the neck and carried taut to the ceiling, where it was fastened to a staple. During these proceedings, which were carried out by Gerke in my presence, Crandon was on the floor below.

The door of the cabinet was then locked, the phonograph started by Gerke and the room cleared of all persons save myself. The door of the séance room was left open and was guarded by Barnes. Other sitters were reported in the hall. The doctor was brought upstairs and reported in the hall outside the séance room.

At this time I was in the séance room alone, with the Psychic locked in the cabinet, lashed as described to the controls. I sat in front of the cabinet with the luminous doughnut in my pocket. I then put out the red light.

Walter came through very promptly. After a brief period he asked for the doughnut which I put through the slot of the cabinet door. Within half a minute I felt Walter's terminal tapping the doughnut and then saw it moving over the surface of the doughnut. Then he passed the terminal across my fingers. I then saw the terminal floating through the hole in the doughnut and then Walter commanded me to "let go." The doughnut was lifted from my fingers and floated gracefully around the cabinet. It soared a foot or eighteen inches over the Psychic's head and around the outer limits of the cabinet close to the glass. While this was going on

---

liminary session was brought to an end; after which the usual motions of getting the regular séance in the glass cabinet under way were gone through, quite as though the group had only now come upstairs. Indeed, page 326 makes it clear that the Psychic was searched; and page 325 carries several statements showing that Crandon was sent downstairs and kept there during the preparations that now ensued for the formal séance. If only there were a clean-cut statement placing this search between the informal and the formal sittings, the critic would apparently be left with no leg to stand on. As it is, as the price of maintaining the oblique hypothesis, the informal séance itself and not the interval following it must be pictured as the occasion for guilty passing of apparatus from Crandon to the Psychic, and the search of the latter must be placed prior to the informal sitting.—J. M. B.

the Psychic, in obedience to Walter's instructions, began to count.[1a] She counted in an audible voice with clear articulation up to fifteen, when her voice faded out. Up to this time she had not been in trance, but when she reached fifteen her voice became faint. Afterwards it appeared that she had been put into trance at this point.

After a graceful, sweeping levitation of the doughnut, it fell to the floor. Walter directed me to open the door and pick up the doughnut. I did, placed it on the little shelf in the front door slot and locked the door.

Walter then said someone else might come in for a repetition of the one-man sitting. Barnes applied as a candidate. He then took my place at the cabinet while I retired from the séance room and guarded the door.

I should add that before the Psychic entered the cabinet, Miss Conklin reported that she had examined the Psychic when she undressed and before entering the dressing gown in which she sat and reported that the Psychic had nothing concealed on her person.

[Signed] JOHN T. FLYNN.

Barnes made his statement with Flynn's before him, apparently, and avoided a duplication of effort. He tells us:

During the time that Flynn occupied the stool in front of the glass cabinet, I guarded the door and can vouch for the fact that during this period no one entered or left the room. Crandon stood in the hall near the door and grasped my arm during most of this period. We conversed from time to time during the period.

When Walter requested that some other person take the stool before the cabinet I volunteered and took the stool. Flynn retired.

I asked Walter what I should do. He requested me to place the paper disc inside the cabinet (holding it in my hand). After the usual intermission Walter grasped the disc and, as formerly, levitated it about the room. Walter then thrust the disc through the opening on the right side of the cabinet. I failed to discover what had happened to the disc. Walter asked for Richardson, whom I called. Richardson presently explained to me that Walter had thrust the disc through the opening.

[Signed] RALPH W. BARNES.

The record for this date may be completed by the testimony of Richardson, who makes the following statement:

[1a] To demonstrate that her mouth was not engineering the levitation.—J. M. B.

During levitations of the luminous doughnut in the glass cabinet I was in the hall, holding Crandon's hand. After Flynn and Barnes had had their tests, I took my place before the opening in the front door. At Walter's request, I put the doughnut into the opening; and after a short period of bending and tipping, Walter's terminal grasped it and waved it gracefully in all directions, mostly in front of the medium. Finally, on request, Walter dropped the doughnut into my hand, within the door, from a height of at least a foot.

[Signed] MARK W. RICHARDSON.

The procedure of "one-man sittings" thus spontaneously brought into being was recognized as an admirable one, and was continued on November 13th. The record for this evening reads:

For now the fourth time[2] the one-man sitting was repeated, under the strict conditions of lashed control of the Psychic. All her extremities were controlled in the manner already described in the last three sittings. Then Osborne was left alone in the room. All others, controlling each other, stood in the doorway. Osborne handed the luminous doughnut in through the hole in the locked front door of the plate glass cabinet. He then reports, and all of us in the doorway confirm the fact, that the doughnut was seized by an obvious black-appearing terminal and was levitated as high as the ceiling in the cabinet over behind the Psychic's head to right and to left, in graceful curves for a period covering four minutes. This was then repeated for Franchois; and after this on request of Walter the luminous megaphone was put in the cabinet, the door closed and it then went through all its usual beautiful gyrations from front to back like an angry fish and was finally thrown over the Psychic's head to the back of the cabinet.

The VCO machine was then brought in, tested by Osborne, the tube passed through the hole in the door, the special tube put in the Psychic's mouth and then the door closed and locked. After a few seconds the Psychic blew up the luminous floats to an extreme degree of disparity, whereupon Walter spoke and whistled freely, saying to Franchois "How's that, you son-of-a-gun?"

This ended the phenomena for the evening, but Walter went on to talk in his usual modest way on the topic that he didn't know everything and that the opinions he expresses are only the opinion of one man; that you may get as many pictures of the fourth plane as there are discarnates to tell about it.

---

[2] Counting the Barnes and Flynn episodes of the 11th as two, and the present experiments by Osborne and Franchois as two more.—J. M. B.

The record for the 14th shows some tendency to take the physical arrangements for granted—a tendency into which Crandon ultimately fell completely, after a temporary rally. The range of phenomena in the glass cabinet was increased by at least one number, as the following record for this date indicates:

> Walter came through promptly and greeted each one. The Psychic had already been lashed with the wires and sealed as she has been every night of this week. The controls were declared faultless by all strangers present after personal examination. Walter then proceeded to give a one-man sitting for Judge Foss, and again for Wilcox; and during this time all the others were accounted for in the doorway but kept out of the room by one person.
>
> After this the big megaphone was put into the cabinet and levitated and finally lifted high above the Psychic's head and dropped behind it. During the doughnut levitation, Judge Foss reported it as five feet ten inches from the floor and at least two feet behind the Psychic's head at times.
>
> The VCO machine was then brought in, and the sole tube was handed in to the Psychic, after its patency was proved by Judge Foss. The door was then closed, the Psychic blew up the machine, and while it was in a condition of disequilibrium Walter talked and whistled freely.
>
> At Walter's request then, we moved to the old cabinet and he talked at some length with the sitters along his usual ethical lines. The sitting closed at 10:10 P.M. and all sitters agreed that they were willing to sign the minutes.

For November 15th there was a presentation of the glass cabinet to some of the older friends of the mediumship; and there resulted a séance record carrying the signatures of all present. To some degree it duplicates what we have already had, but we have just criticized Crandon mildly for failing to do this very thing. We may therefore give it in full:

> Walter came through in one minute, the Psychic being lashed with wires and seals as before. The lashings were examined by all and pronounced satisfactory, whereupon Walter proceeded to give his one-man sittings and levitations for Murray, for Dr. Brown, and for Mr. Brown, all others being in the corridor at the time. The following notes were then drawn up with the signatures as here recorded.

We, the undersigned, hereby certify that the following is a true account of what took place on the evening of November 15, 1925, at the home of Dr. L. R. G. Crandon, 10 Lime Street, Boston, Mass., between the hours of nine and ten P.M. The medium having removed all clothing in the presence of a lady and robed only in a kimono, stockings and slippers was subjected to the following control.

Loops of picture wire passed through rubber hose (to prevent injury or discomfort to the skin) were knotted on each wrist and ankle with fast knots drawn so tight that withdrawal of the hands and feet or any of these was found to be impossible by test.

The medium was then seated in a glass panelled cabinet, the only openings to which, apart from the door, were hinged portholes about six by four inches in size and a similar opening in the glass door. The ends of the wire were then, in each instance, passed through the eyes of eye-bolts firmly fastened to the floor and sealed with lead seals in respect to the ligatures of the ankles. The hands having been thrust through the openings at either side, the wires binding the wrist were likewise sealed through similar eye-bolts on each side of and outside the cabinet. The head of the medium was then held in an immovable [3] position by a soft bandage tied in a fast knot behind the neck and this attached to the ceiling of the cabinet.

The medium was then examined in white light by each of the sitters and the ligatures found fast, intact and prohibiting motion in any direction by either the limbs or head except within a radius of three or four inches. The door was then closed and all, except one of the sitters, left the room but remained standing in the doorway in such a position that the cabinet was in sight of all. The single sitter remaining in the room passed an illuminated paper ring into the cabinet, which was thereupon seen to be raised inside the cabinet to a height of above five feet, to pass to the right and left of and finally completely around the medium, the door being closed.[4]

Later the circle being formed and manual control maintained, the door was opened and a large illuminated megaphone was placed

---

[3] Relatively, of course, not absolutely; and much more nearly immovable in the fore-and-aft sense than in that of sidewise swaying. Again, since the control is applied to the neck, movement of the head by pivoting at the neck is always possible, and could in fact be prevented only by a rigid hold of some sort upon the forehead zone.—J. M. B.

[4] It is of course often possible, in the dark, by waving a luminous object back and forth in simple curved arcs, to give the illusion that a complete circular motion is present. The record in the nature of the case can do no more than record, or imply, the sitters' conviction that such was not here the case.—J. M. B.

within the cabinet and was seen to be raised and made to pass around the medium in the same manner as the ring had been.

The circle of all of the observers being again formed and manual control of the hands of the Psychic being maintained, the tube of the voice control machine was inserted through the opening in the door. The illuminated floats were seen to remain in position. The wires controlling the hands and feet and the bandage restraining the head continuing in the same position as above stated. While the floats maintained a position in the tubes showing no escape of the air pressure the voice of Walter was heard and recognized and carried on a considerable conversation and at intervals indulged in a whistled obligato with the phonograph record.

At the conclusion the wires and bandage were again carefully examined in white light and found with the knots and seals intact and bearing no indication of having been tampered with. This account was thereupon immediately prepared and signed by us as soon as drawn up.

Signed: WENDELL P. MURRAY.
E. W. BROWN, M.D.
J. H. BROWN.
J. FRED ADLER.
R. H. GERKE.
K. E. BROWN.

The next séance was three nights later; and again the glass cabinet was featured, with the one-man procedure applied to two more sitters who had not previously enjoyed this. The record:

Séance at 10 Lime Street, November 18th, 1925. Present, to left: B. Eddy, Bishop, Kent, Mrs. B. Eddy, Marshall, Miss Seabury, Gerke, Crandon. Walter came through promptly, greeted the newcomers in his characteristic jocular manner, and gave a little sermon on the necessity of our understanding the meaning of these sittings; that they are no good to anyone unless they signify the existence of psychic force apart from any question of spiritualism. He added: "You may call me a secondary personality and hypnotic impersonation, or an exterior motivation. I will not complain; only report honestly what you see and the conditions thereof."

He then proceeded to give a one-man sitting to Eddy and Bishop in succession. The Psychic was submitted to the usual wire lashings and head control. The glass cabinet was closed, there was no one in the room but the one sitter. The presence of

all the others in the corridor behind him was attested by Bishop and at the second experiment by Eddy. Under these conditions, Walter took the luminous doughnut from the hand of the solitary sitter, levitated it all about throughout the inside of the cabinet, and then handed it back to the sitter. All those standing in the doorway could see the luminous levitation. Then all filed in and stood in front of the cabinet. Eddy put the big luminous megaphone in the cabinet; door was closed. Crandon and Gerke were accounted for. Under these conditions, Walter levitated the big megaphone which cavorted around like a fish in an aquarium. During all these experiments the Psychic was in deep trance. Apparently Walter was able to get force from an entirely new group.

The VCO machine was now used in the glass cabinet. Walter spoke and whistled freely when the Psychic's mouth was fully occupied by the tip. The tip was observed before and after to be in her mouth. Then under instructions we all moved over to the old cabinet and Walter did the ringing of the bell-box while it was held high by Bishop in good red light in the presence of all. Bishop and Eddy put their hands all about the bell-box as it rang intermittently high in the air. Bishop turned round 360 degrees, but the phenomenon nevertheless continued.

The preceding record is of considerable importance, but comment upon and demonstration of this will have to go over until Chapter XXIX; for the development to which the November 18th procedure points was postponed, owing to the immediate concentration during December upon the one-man performance. I may in fact give without further comment the four following records:

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, December 8, 1925. Present, to left: Cotton, Dudley, Newman Gray, Crandon. Before the sitting Cotton tied the loops on hands and ankles with square knots, using number three picture wire. The Psychic then entered the glass cabinet and Cotton tied the loose ends of ankle and wrist wires through the eye-bolts and sealed the loose ends with lead seals. He then fastened the head by a piece of heavy twine to the eye-bolt in the roof, coming down to a leather collar which he locked on the Psychic's neck with a padlock. The possible excursion of any extremity did not exceed two inches.

The sitting then began and Walter came through promptly. He jested and then talked earnestly for the most part to Cotton, saying that all the churches should be one; based on the central idea of good behavior by all of us, because this plane is merely one

for the development of character. He urged us to try to get the spiritual point of view which is that most of the things which worry us here are not worth it. He said you must only be sorry for those who do not see this light and try to help them.

We then proceeded to try out the VCO machine. The single tip was passed through opening in the front door by Cotton and put by him in the Psychic's mouth, she remaining lashed as before. The door was then closed. Shortly the Psychic blew up the machine and then Walter proceeded to whistle and talk with perfect freedom; the luminous corks remaining ten inches apart in level. Under these conditions, Walter finished by giving the following poem:

Live thou each day as if it were thy last.
Unerring forces are at work unseen by you.
Take thou no hurried look into the past.
Live thou each day as if it were thy last.

Walter then proceeded to give a one-man sitting to Cotton. The rest of the sitters were in the hall and the door was guarded by Dudley. Cotton now put the luminous doughnut through the small hole in front door. After a while we all could see Walter's terminal playing with the doughnut and finally Walter seized it, levitated it across the cabinet as high as five feet above the floor and down to two feet from the floor. The whole levitation lasted three and one-half minutes, and at the end the doughnut was thrust by Walter out through the opening in the west side of cabinet. At the end of levitation the Psychic was in trance.

We now transferred to the old cabinet and Walter talked and whistled and joked and gave us a general good time until 10:15 P.M.

We note that starting with the above séance we have a leather collar padlocked about the Psychic's neck, as a surer means of head control than the tie of cloth previously used. For the present, the rope from this collar runs to the top of the cabinet, as before. Ultimately (see pp. 345, 360), by way of final improvement in the head control, this rope will run to the back of the cabinet.

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, December 11, 1925. Present: Mrs. Brainerd, Miss Spence, Bixler, Harlow, Mrs. Harlow, T. Hyde, Crandon. Bixler tied the wires on the Psychic's ankles and wrists to the satisfaction of himself and everyone else present and then tied these wires to the eye-bolts in the glass cabinet. He locked the leather collar on the Psychic's neck and lashed it to the eye-bolt in the roof. The excursion of any extremity could not exceed three inches.

The VCO machine was first tried but the collar made the Psychic cough so much that the experiment was postponed.

Then a one-man sitting was given first to Harlow and second to Bixler, all others being accounted for outside the room in the hall. The Psychic was in trance. The lone sitter put the luminous doughnut through the opening in the front door. Walter's terminal could be seen grasping the doughnut and he then took it. He ordered the lone observer to stand and thereupon Walter levitated the luminous doughnut all over the cabinet as high as five feet six inches, both to right and left and over the Psychic's head to eighteen inches behind her head, and finally threw it out on the floor, probably through the west hand-opening.

The big megaphone was now put in the right front door of the glass cabinet by Harlow and everyone being accounted for behind Bixler and everyone standing, the megaphone was seen to levitate and dive about all through the glass cabinet like a fish in an aquarium.

The head was now released and the VCO machine brought out. Mrs. Brainerd put the glass tip in the Psychic's mouth, the hands and the feet remaining lashed. The front door was then closed and locked and after a time the Psychic blew up the machine into position of instability and Walter then proceeded to whistle the tune which was on the victrola, then "Yankee Doodle" and then the "Red, White and Blue," and then talked freely. At the end of this time the wire controls were inspected by Bixler and Mrs. Brainerd. All were pronounced to be as originally made. The Psychic was then released and the sitting was adjourned to the old cabinet.

Here after a time Bixler was told to pick up the bell-box, walk about the room with it and turn 360 degrees. This he did. During that time the bell-box rang with irregular intermittency. The experiment was finished when the box came accidentally in contact with Mrs. Brainerd's head. Walter invited them all to come again to see more advanced phenomena.

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, December 12, 1925. Present: Graham, Mr. and Mrs. [Charles C.] Woolley, Newman Gray, Crandon. The Psychic was fastened in the usual way with steel wire by Graham and Woolley. Whereupon Walter came through with great cheerfulness, levitated the doughnut within the cabinet for each of the gentlemen separately while all the others were accounted for in the doorway. He then levitated the three-pound luminous megaphone under the same conditions. The voice-cut-out machine was then used with 100 per cent success.

After this we moved to the old cabinet and Walter rang the bell-box while Graham lugged it about the room as far as seven feet away from the Psychic, at all levels. It rang intermittently and irregularly.

Sitting closed at 10:30 P.M. On going downstairs Graham [5] sat by the Psychic and was able to visualize to her satisfaction a complete picture of the home of her birth and childhood with many details. He was also able to see and describe accurately two dogs who existed at that time.

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, December 18, 1925. Present: B. Eddy, S. Eddy, G. Eddy, Richardson, Mrs. Richardson, Crandon. Walter came through promptly with very strong whistle and voice. He had some difficulty and humor in placing the various Eddys. He finally called our newest visitors Sherwood, Hardwood, Oak, and finally Oakey. We had fifteen minutes of conversation and whistling till Walter got his force gathered.

Under direction of Walter the VCO machine was now brought out. The door of the glass cabinet was held open by a stool. The Psychic had already been lashed, all five extremities, and after a while she blew up the machine. Whereupon Walter whistled, trilled, whistled "Yankee Doodle" on request and recited his stanza beginning "Live thou each day as if it were thy last," etc., with much emphasis on the last word and especially clear enunciation of the *st* in last.

Then S. E. sat in front of the cabinet with the luminous doughnut. G. E. was in contact with the lashed left hand and S. E. from time to time was in contact with the right lashed hand. S. E. had fastened or observed the fastening of all the Psychic's extremities and the sealing of all the wires before the sitting. The other sitters were in the hall, B. E. standing in the doorway and answering for the presence of all the other sitters behind him so that no one was in the room but the Psychic, the two Eddys and Walter. S. E. held the doughnut in through the front door hole. Walter flirted with it a while and then took it and levitated it beautifully all over the front portion of the cabinet as high as five feet and to both sides. It was finally dropped and then the experiment was repeated.

Next the door of the cabinet was held open with the stool. The luminous three-pound megaphone was put in the right front corner. All observers retired to the doorway and were accounted for. Whereupon Walter levitated the megaphone all over the front half of the cabinet and finally threw it out with great force.

[5] See pp. 84, 396; also open reference No. 12, Vol. 2.

When the Psychic had come out of her trance we moved to the old cabinet. Whereupon after some talk Walter said that his force was pretty well gone and closed the sitting at 10:30 P.M.

The procedure typified by the above record is evidently a new one, one of general applicability, and one adding greatly to the evidential values of the séances. The whole complicated question of a confederacy from various quarters of the circle, employing more than one accomplice in a given sitting and shifting the immediate locus of the fraud from moment to moment to meet the momentary conditions of observation enjoyed by the innocent sitters, goes at once and permanently into the discard with the inauguration of this séance-room technique. The whole question of Crandon's essential rôle in the phenomena becomes likewise a dead issue. The lone sitter gains a personal assurance against circular confederacy which is unmatched by any other conceivable séance arrangements; and his personal assurance is transferable to his reader or his auditor to a larger degree than is the case with older procedures of sitting. The detached critic who realizes that the hypothesis of fraud can be maintained only at the cost of a very extensive confederacy among the sitters finds this confederacy now taking on added characteristics of universality and spontaneity which must give him greater hesitancy in the promulgation of this theory than has ever before been forced upon him. The absence of the circle enables the lone sitter to concentrate completely upon what is *going* on as of the séance action proper, and his report, alike of phenomena and of control, can therefore be much better trusted than in the routine circular séance. Indeed, it becomes difficult to catalog all the advantages of this style of sitting, all the points of pre-existing doubt which it meets or helps to meet.

From the date of the last record, above, the one-man séances ceased to be so much an end in themselves, and we therefore bring the chapter to an end at this point. The reader will find, however, as he goes on, that the procedure is retained for use at numerous junctures where it is of particular availability; and that in fact the one-man séance or the one-man phenomenon occurring as an episode of a general séance, is now a regular part of the Margery case.

CHAPTER XXVII

The Bell-Boxes: to November, 1925

From the Séance Records with Comment by the Editor

We have described the SAB (Scientific American bell-box) in all detail in Chapter X; and in this same chapter, plus a brief space at the end of Chapter XI, we have brought its routine use in the séance room down to July 9th. We have now to trace the history of this and such other bell-boxes as performed after that date, and down to a point where we may again find reason for interrupting the narrative. And the first thread which we must here pick up is that of the ringing of the Hole Bell-box without visible means of access to its mechanism. This trick, which we first met in Chaps. XI and XIV for a time seemed about to become a regular part of the Lime Street menu. It was done again on July 21st, "under strict conditions of double control with anklets, wrist-bands and head-band all visible where they should be. Hunt held the Psychic's two hands and Granger held Crandon's two hands and head; and Walter rang this bell repeatedly the number of times requested by various sitters." One must now raise a serious question as to the means employed by Walter for this act. Even the hostile critic, I suppose, will concede that all normal means of entry to the box are sealed, and that for fraud of any sort only the Psychic's feet are available. Manipulation, with these, of a wire at least eighteen inches long, in such way that both ends of this wire shall simultaneously make contact with small screw-heads, would be a remarkable performance in full light. Doing it in darkness seems quite out of the question. So we are reduced to a choice between a teleplasmic conductive member running from one end of the box to the other, and a supernormal means of entry to the box by Walter. But he has failed to gain supernormal access to so many closed containers that I strongly prefer the former alternative. An apparent drawback thereto would lie in the fact that operation of the gimmick circuit with a wire always leads to visible sparking, which has *never* occurred, within any sitter's observation, when Walter rang the box. But the assumption that sparking would occur with a teleplasmic bridge between the two contacts, as freely as it would with a bridge of

copper wire, is a large one and one that may well be contrary to the facts.

This picture of the genuine psychic use of a machinery introduced for purposes of deceit is a highly diverting one. We find it repeated on July 22nd and 27th, under the same conditions. Concentration upon teleplasmic phenomena then threw the telekinetic aspects into the shade for a while, and my discovery of the gimmick in the HB ensued before it could be restored to its place in the séance routine. With this discovery, of course, it was permanently excluded from the séances, though it remains in Crandon's possession as an exhibit of extreme interest. Complete reference to its history occurs on p. 189.

While this HB and other Harvard apparatus was in the house and before it began to find its way into séance use, there ensued a brief series of demonstrations with the SAB which were quite noteworthy. Five successive evenings on which it was used (not five successive séances) saw something novel in the way of conditions or performance. The dates, and the portions of the records pertaining to the SAB, follow:

> June 27th (1925): Walter proceeded to work on the SAB in red light. He rang it in red light the number of times requested by Hill and Dudley, respectively. Then he ordered the red light on again, and we were able to see the slow, complete excursion of the flapper.
>
> July 5th: Walter had the SAB examined by the newcomers,[1] then rang it the number of times requested in red light by Hubbs, Brown, Jr., and Mrs. Hubbs; with 100 per cent success. He then had Murray pick up the box three times in red light and turn each time through 360 degrees. During the first episode the bell rang; during the second it did not; during the third it did. During the second episode, while Murray was turning around Brown rang the bell [by normal depression with his hand], to show that it was operative although Walter was not working it.
>
> July 6th: Walter showed the bell-box ringing in red light in response to a request made after the light came on. Hodges and Mrs. Hodges in succession lifted the box and turned through 360 degrees, the bell ringing after being lifted. Walter had Hodges put his finger in the angle between the contact board and the top of the box, and he then rang the bell, pinching Hodges's finger by the depression of the flapper.

[1] The usual procedure with bell-box work, of course.—J. M. B.

July 8th: Walter proceeded to ring the SAB the number of times requested by each sitter in order, the request being made in the same period of red light with the ringing. He then had Foss pick up the SAB, and it rang intermittently while Foss was turning around. This was repeated for Mrs. Southworth. Walter then asked Foss to put his finger between the contact board and the top of the box, and Foss could feel the flapper press on his finger as the bell rang.

July 9th [Crandon's record]: Walter came through with a ring on the SAB in the dark. Later he rang it the number of times requested by Bigelow and Bird, with perfect success. Finally, he permitted the following test, for which he took eight minutes of preparation in darkness after the details had been agreed upon. In red light Bird called for two longs and a short; these were given; in the same continuous period of red light, Bird and Richardson examined the box for connections as it stood on the table, then removed it, withdrew with it into the bedroom, and examined it thoroughly with negative result. The red light was on continuously from before the request and the ringing, until after the box had left the room.

July 9th (my record): In red light, with the bell-box on the table, I called for two long rings followed by one short. These were given. In the same continuous period of red light Richardson and I examined the box thoroughly for connections, finding nothing. We then removed it from the table, took it out of the room, and examined it externally and internally in full white light, with negative result. Red light in the séance room continuous from before my command until after the box had left the room.

The experiments in which a sitter's finger is squeezed by the descending flapper are not reported with all possible clarity. This pinching was effected as a separate episode, with the box standing on the table and ringing in a new interval of red light; *not* while it was held aloft. It can accordingly be claimed that the ringing in the sitter's hand is done by tampering with the spring, that on the table by means of a mechanical connection to the flapper. But this latter claim suffers severely on the 9th; I doubt that such a thread could be disconnected in red light without the move's being observed, and I am certain it could not be left connected during my examination of the box on the table, without detection. In any event, we make progress when we drive the skeptic to picture a lightning passage from one fraud to

another in the *same* séance; this is considerably more difficult than an initial selection of a single fraud to be employed on a given date.

The next item to which we turn consists in a slight change in the design of the SAB: the addition of a spot of luminous paint on the top of the contact board, so that motion of this board might be looked for in the dark, or eclipse of the spot by Walter's terminal observed. The spot was not large enough ever to give any picture of the eclipsing terminal, so such eclipse could never add anything to existing knowledge or existing indications of validity. Motion of the flapper, moreover, if observable *only* through motion of the spot, will have occurred while the box is standing on the table in the dark; and will not meet any theories advanced by any sane critic as to how *such* ringing is engineered. One might hope, through careful watching of the spot, to observe an *absence* of motion that would defeat the theory under which the Psychic manipulates the spring as the box stands by in darkness; such manipulation would involve some motion of the contact board, even if there was a second free hand to prevent this from being too noticeable. But the record conveys no indication that this observation was ever attempted. We may, therefore, ignore the bright spot.

On this date (July 14th, 1925) there occurred bell-ringing without any feature requiring description. The same is true of the 19th, Dudley acting as "engineer"; except that we might mention the successful prosecution of the test under which the bell refuses to ring when carried about after Walter has "removed his force." Hereafter we shall regard this test as part of the routine, and omit it from special mention. The performance of the 20th, in the dark, was notable for the control:

> During this ringing Hill had the Psychic's left hand and knee, and her head-band could be seen where it should be. Litzelmann held her right hand and Crandon's two hands, and Crandon's chin rested on Litzelmann's hand. The Psychic's two anklets were visible, and her two feet rested on Litzelmann's feet.

For a few days here, "the Code bell-box with the luminous covers and luminous plunger" was used in Lime Street. This was an improvement upon the Harvard version of the Dingwall bell-box,[1a] in which not only the horizontal platform but also the vertical shank of the plunger

[1a] Pages 118, 123, 305.

was made luminous. It was among the apparatus donated to the Lime Street séance room by Code,[2] and I infer that its novelty appealed to Walter. He rang this on the 20th, his hand being visible grasping the plunger; and again on the 21st and 22nd, with the same result.

Routine ringing of the SAB without feature occurred on July 21st (Hunt and Granger engineering, 22nd (Bullard and Davis), 28th (Mrs. Bonbright), 30th, 31st (Misses Conklin and Clancy); August 8th (Davis, Mrs. Davis and Hill), 9th (Davis and Mrs. Davis), 17th (Bentley), 30th (Zeliqzon); September 20th (Mrs. Price and Dudley), 26th, October 2nd (Saunderson), 3rd (Fessenden) and 16th. During this period the following excerpts from the record involve something a bit beyond the ordinary:

> July 27th: After some preliminary trials in the dark, Walter rang the SAB the numbers of times requested by De Wyckoff, Fogg, and Miss Boring, respectively. Then in good red light Miss Boring picked up the SAB, and after it was in the air it began to ring intermittently and irregularly while she turned a complete circle standing, and set it down on the table. It then stopped ringing in the same period of red light, without intervening darkness.[3]
>
> August 3rd: He proceeded in red light to ring the SAB the number of times requested by Cotton. This he did twice successfully, then allowed Cotton to pick up the box; it rang and stopped in the air while Cotton turned a complete circle.
>
> August 15th: It rang intermittently while he [Foss] had it in the air and turned himself completely around, the whole phenomenon beginning and ending in good red light.

I include the episode of the 3rd in spite of its ambiguity; it does not clearly appear whether the ringing stopped permanently while the box was still in the air. On the 15th I was present, and the ringing did clearly come to a stop while Foss held the box poised above the table prepared to lower it thereto. If this were due to the release of pressure against a tricked spring as the downward motion began, I should certainly expect to get one tinkle out of the bell through reaction as the motion comes to a more or less abrupt end against the table;

---

[2] Page 125.

[3] One might plead that the interval between her picking it up and its starting to ring was infinitesimal, and that the very irregularity of ringing supported the claim that a tampered spring was jarring into and out of contact. But why, then, did it stop ringing *after* it had been deposited on the table?—J. M. B.

but nothing of the sort happened. And if the spring is not sensitive to *this* jar, how can it be sensitive to jars received while being held free in the air?

> Sept. 1st: In red light Abbott then picked up the SAB and as he stood with it in his hands it rang intermittently, the whole phenomenon beginning and ending in red light.

This is again ambiguous, like the entry for Aug. 3rd. The fact that similar ambiguity exists in the record for Aug. 15th, but that I can there testify to the favorable facts, is sufficient justification for including the other two records under the suspicion that they may represent the same sort of action. For Sept. 3rd we have the same ambiguity in connection with a ringing engineered by Coughlin.

> Oct. 23rd: Walter gave instructions for the red light to be turned on again, and Hamilton was told to pick up the SAB. At this moment Crandon was called to the telephone and was out of the room for about four minutes. During this time Hamilton carried the SAB over to the window at least ten feet from the Psychic, and it kept ringing intermittently and irregularly throughout the trip. On his return to the circle he passed the box, still ringing intermittently, to his neighbor, and so it was handed around to every sitter, continuing to ring intermittently throughout.

As has been chronicled elsewhere, Margery was out of Boston during the last days of October and the early ones of November; and when she returned home the glass cabinet was in use. On two occasions the bell-box was rung with Margery wired into this. On the very first dates on which the glass cabinet was used, Nov. 7th and 8th, we have seen that, with the door of the cabinet closed and the bell-box on a table outside, "Walter had no difficulty in reaching his terminal out through the small hole in the front door and ringing the SAB." And on the 10th, under somewhat different conditions, it again rang: "Crandon was instructed to hold the bell-box in through the partly opened doorway and to put the luminous doughnut on the flapper. Walter then proceeded to ring the bell repeatedly, his terminal being visible on the doughnut as he pressed."

After these two dates the bell-box was not used in the glass cabinet; and we therefore defer giving its further history until we have brought other aspects of the mediumship up to the 1926 stage.

CHAPTER XXVIII

The Wooden Letters: A New Instrument for Cognitions

From the Séance Records with Comment by the Editor

Concerning one feature of the glass cabinet little has yet been said, because we have not yet had occasion to use it. For such phenomena as in their very nature require a table provision must be made. In place of an independent unit with legs, it was elected to supply the cabinet with a shelf-like member, freely removable, to fit in place across the opening of the doorway. When thus inserted, the shelf is 30 inches off the floor, 11½ inches deep from front to back. It projects into the cabinet to exactly these 11½ inches, since its outermost edge is flush with the front of the cabinet. In this position, the distance from the knees of the lashed Psychic to the inner edge of the shelf is 9 inches. From the point at which the wire lashings bear on her wrist to the nearest point of the shelf is, at either side, 8½ inches. I mention the wrist in this connection rather than the hand or the corner of the port, since any effort to reach the shelf with her hand would be made by a pivotting at the wrist, using the loop of wire as a fixed bearing point.

For the séance of January 5th, 1926, a new idea (Richardson's) for identification phenomena was for the first time presented to Walter. The entire séance was given to this, so I may quote the record in full:

> The Psychic was lashed with wire at all five extremities, as usual. On the shelf in front of her, in the dark, thirteen large wooden letters such as children play with were distributed in an order more or less known to Hill but to no one else. These were four inches square over all, and one inch square in structural cross-section. The Psychic did not even know the nature of the objects on the shelf. The door of the cabinet was closed.
>
> Trance came on almost at once and Walter spoke and whistled in a most cheery and alert manner. He spoke of a song his Mother used to sing him asleep with. He then said: "It made me so sad that I cried and after that she sang 'Juanita' which was almost as bad." Whereupon he began whistling "Juanita" against the victrola music. He said he would play with the letters and keep us entertained but he was really busy on his big stuff.

Among the letters put on the shelf were enough to make up the name Walter and that was the only word any of us had in mind. Nevertheless Walter said shortly, "Judge, why didn't you put another L in? I have HEL." Whereupon we heard letters falling to the floor in the back of the northeast corner of the cabinet. Shortly more letters fell and Walter said: "You will find H E L in the back corner; you will find M A between the Psychic's feet." All this was done with the door of the cabinet closed and then he suddenly ordered it open, saying that there was too much force in it, and he feared he would break the glass. Then the Judge said, "Is there a number there, Walter?" And Walter after a while said, "Yes, Judge, here is a 2." Later several of us failed to distinguish this 2 from a 5 in the dark, but in the light it was easy. Hence Walter did in the dark what was only easy for us in the light. He then handed Mrs. Richardson an S, telling her what it was. He then threw another under Dr. Richardson's chair and told him it was a T. All these identifications were 100 per cent correct.

We had no plan for segregation of letters which he might spell words with and the method used was his own. There was no light at any time during the sitting and at the end all the lashings were found to be intact.

The identification of the letters rapidly became a feature of the new "standardized séance,"[1] but in so far as it is necessary to describe any further the performances of individual sittings, I propose to abstract them and give them in the present chapter. For January 13th:

Walter shortly said: "Now while I am getting things ready, put some of the wooden letters on the table." Kearns thereupon went into the back room alone and took out about a dozen wooden letters, brought them into the dark séance room, and put them on the shelf table in front of the unconscious Psychic. Thus no one in the room could know what the letters were except Kearns. Walter had the door shut for a while and then ordered it open and picked out in series a J, a 3 and a W, throwing them at the feet of Kearns. The identifications were all correct. During this episode and immediately after it the integrity of the wire lashings was confirmed by B. Eddy.

January 14th: The shelf table was then put in and letters were put on it by Hill, known only to him. Walter then shuffled the

[1] See Chap. XXIX.

letters about a lot, talking to himself as it were as to what word, if any, he could spell out of the nine letters and one number which were on the table. After about five minutes he threw out to Hill, naming each letter as he threw it, the letters S A K E. He then threw a G to Mrs. Frothingham and a C to Crandon, naming each before he threw it. The identifications were correct in each instance.

January 18th: Morse went in the dark into the back room and brought back, without looking at them, a bunch of the large wooden letters. These he put, still in the dark, on the shelf in front of the Psychic, and Walter proceeded to throw them one at a time at Morse, naming each one as he threw it successfully.

January 21st: Under instructions Miss Ball went to the back bedroom and brought back a handful of the large wooden letters, which she piled on the shelf without knowing what letters they were. Walter then proceeded to throw them back at Miss Ball's feet, naming each one as he did so. He did this correctly in every instance but one, where he called it an S and it was a 2. Miss Ball said, "Is not that a 2, Walter?" And Walter replied, "I guess it is. I am an opportunist."

January 23d: In the dark Hill then took a double handful of large wooden letters and put them on the shelf in front of the Psychic. Walter proceeded to throw out three of these letters, one at a time, naming each one as he did so; namely, T, 8, and C. Each cognition was correct.

January 24th: Walter then went on to identify the wooden letters. He got mixed on two, calling D an O. The interesting part of it is that the outline of the hole in both was an identical octagon. He mixed a C and a G also. Six others were correct.

These six excerpts seem sufficiently to characterize the identification performance; we need not quote the records further save in so far as they indicate some element of novelty or unusual rigor. Nor need we cite all the evenings on which identification of letters was done; these will be cited in another place.[2] Notable incidents in connection with the letter work include the following:

February 4th (1926): "Besides the lashings, tactual control of the Psychic was maintained continuously by Gerald and Rand."

March 4th: It is customary, as the detailed quotations above indicate, for the sitter who selects the letters from the stock, and puts

[2] Chapters XXIX, XXXVII.

them on the shelf in front of the Psychic or (later procedure) in the basket, to grasp them carefully between two fingers in such fashion as to insure no knowledge on his part of their identity. But this very absence of knowledge, while it rules out telepathy in explanation, also suggests the prior concealment of other letters known to the Psychic and the substitution of these. So on the present date, to rule this out: "Walter then directed Van Arsdale to put on two more letters in the dark, but this time to know what they were before he put them on (the shelf). These Walter identified with his usual speed."

March 8th: "Then [after the routine identification of letters unknown to any sitter] he identified two letters which Reilly picked out in the dark *with knowledge* of what they were."

March 13th: The above variation was repeated with Morse handling the letters.

March 23d: The record for this date is of considerable importance, for on it was based a double change in procedure. It reads:

> Walter came through promptly in good spirits and went to work on the cognition of the wooden letters. This he did with 100 per cent perfection, and then had a sitter put on two letters which the sitter knew. These were promptly recognized also and thrown out. Two letters were put out through the right-hand hole.
>
> After the sitting Davis tried in vain to beat the VCO machine. But he was able with head triced up as the Psychic's is, to pull his head forwards far enough to pick up the letters with his teeth. Walter, in later conference, suggested that we put the letters hereafter in a basket on the floor of the cabinet and also fasten the Psychic's collar horizontally backwards to the back panel of the cabinet, thus meeting this criticism.[3]

To one versed in the ways of sleight-of-hand and misdirection of attention, there is a distinctly suspicious element in Walter's *double* suggestion of the above record. The one innovation of fastening the Psychic's collar horizontally to the back of the cabinet instead of vertically to the roof, as heretofore, would be ample to meet the weakness in control developed by Davis. When Walter supplements this suggestion with another one that moves the letters from the place in which they have always been deposited to another, the keen critic must wonder whether this is not so that, having been obliged to give up the means previously used for getting hold of them, the Psychic may be

[3] See pp. 332, 360.

able to get hold of them in a new way: to be specific, with her hands. The basket in question has a long handle, and it is not immediately obvious that, with her hands lashed, she might not be able to get a finger hold on this; after which it may be that she could work along the handle until she got the basket in her lap and the letters in reach of her groping hand. The wire control is severe, and the honest critic would only want to experiment in an effort to see whether this would work. Fair or unfair, however, the critic must have his attention drawn in this general direction by Walter's double change in the conditions, which was put into effect for the next séance. But very fortunately, in this and the immediately following sitting, the suggestion is cleanly met; for on the 26th:

> The Psychic having been lashed as usual but with the new head control, Walter proceeded not only to name correctly and levitate unknown letters from a basket on the floor of the cabinet, *but also letters from the shelf in front of the Psychic.*

If we are to think in terms of fraud here, we need a reaching rod and a confederate; this seems the unanimous verdict of the skeptics. The necessity for the tool is fairly evident. That for the assistant arises out of the fact that even were the Psychic able to secrete it about her person in such way as to evade whatever search she might undergo—a variable factor and therefore a dangerous one—her bonds would probably prevent her from infallibly bringing it out and into use and disposing of it after use. For all this the simpler and safer measure by far would be a confederate to pass her the rod and to receive it back from her when she was through with it. One attending all the glass-cabinet séances would be very much impressed with the fact that neither Crandon nor any other single person nor even any small number of given persons would always have this opportunity; but of course with respect to Crandon or any group of two or three persons one at least of whom could be found on the roster of each séance, the records in the nature of the case cannot make any showing of innocence against this theory. I suppose it may even be advanced against the one-man sittings; though with more difficulty there than in general sittings. Except by specific testimony by some sitter that at a given séance or séances he kept active watch for such a move and was able to satisfy himself that none was made, I do not see how the suggestion on which I here comment could be disposed of. And I suppose that if this testimony were given, the elastic skeptic would

fall back on the claim that, *at these sittings*, the Psychic had the rod in her own possession from the beginning, and was able to bring it into action.

On the 27th both the shelf and the basket were again used as depositories for the letters; and Walter made but one error in eight identifications, mistaking a W for an N. And some of the letters which he recognized he disposed of by thrusting them out through the right-hand port hole. This is pretty well filled with wrist, and would be further filled with partly retracted hand if it were attempted to get the letters out through it by normal manipulation of the hand.

On April 1st he did the letters with equal success from the floor and from the shelf. After this, for numerous dates from April to September, detailed records are given in Chapters XXIX and XXXVII which include among other things the letter-identification act. In general it may be said that this act shows no further development that is not amply covered by these full records. So with the reminder that Chapter XXXVII lists all the occasions on which the letters were used and for which the complete records are *not* elsewhere given, we may close the present chapter.

CHAPTER XXIX

The Standardized Séance, in Two Parts

From the Sèance Records, with Comment by the Editor

The record for November 18th,[1] 1925, shows the first approximation to a procedure which crystallized in early 1926, and which has ever since that date been habitually followed in what Crandon characterizes as introductory or elementary séances, designed to initiate and instruct persons with no wide experience in psychical matters or no previous contact with this mediumship. The routine finally hit upon for these séances is usually carried through with no material deviation. It involves putting the Psychic into the glass cabinet under all appropriate precautions; after which she goes into trance and so remains while there are produced levitation phenomena and identifications of personal objects or wooden letters or both. She then awakens from trance and while the wire controls of her hands and feet are maintained, her head is freed from its collar for her greater comfort while a performance with the VCO is given. At the conclusion of this test, there is due and solemn inspection of the controls, followed by release of the Psychic. The entire company then moves across the room to the old cabinet, where are presented in intermittent red light the bell-box (SA model, ordinarily) and perhaps other phenomena.

This idea of combining the basic features of both cabinets in a single séance is a bold one, and of course quite a departure from ordinary séance practice. It originated, as stated, on November 18th, and the words of the record: "Under instructions we moved over," leave no doubt that the procedure was Walter's own invention. It will be seen that these sittings combine two types of *control* for telekinetic phenomena; they do *not* afford a mixture of the telekinetic and teleplasmic aspects. These, Walter always has and presumably always will keep pretty well apart.

An adequate summary of the standardized séance in its ultimately crystallized form was given in the Journal of the A.S.P.R. for July, 1926.[2] Here we are concerned with the historical and critical aspect, and to some degree with a greater showing of details. The

[1] See page 331; last paragraph of this record.
[2] Page 404.

concentration upon the one-man sittings in the glass cabinet persisted throughout December;[3] the sitting of January 5th was given over[4] to an experiment of another sort. But starting on January 13th, 1926, there was a group of sittings in which Walter had on his mind nothing more serious than the development of the standardized séance; and he pursued this theme with success. On the date named the Psychic was disrobed and examined by Mrs. Ellis, and was then lashed into the glass cabinet by several of the strange sitters in concert. There followed identifications of the wooden letters as described in detail on p. 343; and the record tells us that "during this episode and immediately after it the integrity of the wire controls was confirmed by B. Eddy." Then:

> Ellis was now told to put through the small opening in the front door a luminous doughnut, and to hold this in his hand. All the other sitters were gathered behind Eddy in the doorway of the room. Shortly Walter's terminal seized the doughnut and levitated it all about in front of the cabinet as high as four feet from the floor. Controls were examined before and after this performance.
>
> Walter then called for the luminous three-pound megaphone to be put in the right front corner of the cabinet and the door to be left open. All sitters being gathered in the doorway and accounted for, Walter levitated the megaphone as high as the Psychic's head, waved it about and threw it out of the cabinet with great violence.
>
> At the end of this experiment Walter was heard to talk, the voice being located about 18 inches to the east of the glass cabinet and outside the cabinet. He had never done this before.
>
> The Richardson VCO machine was now brought forth and put on the table in front of the open door of the cabinet. Walter woke the Psychic out of her trance. Kearns, having tested himself the patency of the machine, put the glass tip in the Psychic's mouth. All sitters now gathered in the doorway of the room and were accounted for. The Psychic blew up the machine into a position of instability. Whereupon Walter whistled a beautiful obligato to the victrola tune and then said:
>
> "Live thou this day as if it were thy las-s-s-s-t."
>
> "A great gray goose flew across the river.
> It flew way across with its mouth full of liver."

---

[3] Chapter XXVI; in which, on December 11th and 12th (pp. 333–4), the germ of the standardized séance is again seen.—J. M. B.

[4] See page 342.

In some ways this was the most brilliant demonstration of the voice machine which we have had.

The lashings were now declared to be intact by all the visitors and were then cut and the Psychic entered the open cabinet. It was now after ten-thirty and the force was low. The Psychic's hands and feet were accounted for and Crandon's left wrist accounted for with luminous bands. The Psychic's feet were also in contact with Weston's and Eddy's, respectively. Despite this Weston had several touches, the bell-box was rung on the table, and loud raps were heard on the north wing of the cabinet.

Both in the glass cabinet and in the open cabinet Walter said two sentences during the evening in good red light, the voice apparently coming from behind and above the Psychic's head.

The standardized sitting now became the order of the next few days; and I may give without further comment the five records which follow:

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, January 14, 1926. Present to left: Richardson, Crandon, Mrs. Frothingham, Mrs. Richardson, Hill. The sitting was in the glass cabinet. The Psychic was lashed in with steel wire on her ankles and wrists; and her head was fastened aloft as usual.

Trance came on almost at once and throughout the sitting it lasted without a break. It was unusually deep with no restlessness. Walter came through almost at once in cheery mood and called attention to the deep trance; saying " She's dead. That's the way I can get her when you people are here. The conditions are perfect." The shelf table was in and on it the doughnut, basket and some wooden rings. Shortly Walter ordered all these removed and the basket put on the floor of the cabinet, door open, doughnut in basket. The basket was then levitated, danced all about, lifted above the Psychic's head at least two feet behind her head, *around the cord which fastened her head to the ceiling.* This was then repeated. Walter when asked whether he used two hands to pass the basket around the vertical cord gave no direct answer but said he would let us see it in red light some time.

[There now ensued the identification of letters and the activation of luminous paint; these portions of the record are given in full on pp. 343 and 390, respectively, and we need not duplicate this material here.]

The luminous plaque was then asked for and put in the cabinet on the shelf table but it, too, had not been lighted up and so could

not be seen. Walter said, "So you can not see it. Very well, I will make some lights of my own." Then areas of lights such as Walter had made before but much bigger could be seen to the left of the Psychic's left shoulder, with black lines here and there across them. These moved about freely and were taken over, on request, to the east side of the cabinet in order that Mrs. Stinson, who was present but not in the circle, might see. The biggest areas were estimated at 20 x 20 x 24 inches square; it was apparently a filmy light with no thickness. Walter said "that is my accomplice." He ordered it to get down to the floor and so it did. Walter said "Can't you see a profile?" Later he asked us to see a "little figure." We thought we might but it was a strain on the imagination. These "ghost lights" apparently did not reflect on the glass sides of the cabinet. At the end of it Walter said, "Wait till you see this kind of light six feet tall. I will make that one hair on the Judge's [Hill's] head stand up straight."

Throughout the sitting there was much levitation of small megaphone, of basket, and of doughnut, thrown in as it were by Walter as an incidental to other phenomena.

The record of the basket action, in the second paragraph of the above document, deserves passing comment. It is self-evident that we have here either a complete delusion of the sitters or a striking instance of genuine telekinesis; that with the Psychic bound as she was, continuous travel of the basket around and around the cord joining her neck to the ceiling is impossible on any basis of fraud. It is not always the case that a circumnavigatory telekinesis is necessarily valid, but in the present instance there are no circumstances permitting escape from this necessity.

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, January 18, 1926. Present to left: Dennett, Crandon, Morse, Miner. Mrs. Stinson present, not in the circle. Glass cabinet. The Psychic was tied as to extremities and head by the visitors, who declared the controls to be absolute.

Trance came on within a minute and Walter spoke in loud voice and whistled with unusual vigor. All phenomena of the evening were especially strong, doubtless explained by the fact that Dennett is more or less mediumistic. All other sitters having gathered in the doorway, Dennett sat in front of the glass door of the cabinet and put through the hole thereof the luminous doughnut. After a few minutes it was apparent to all that the doughnut had been taken from Dennett's hands. It levitated all over the cabinet and then was put out through the right-hand arm-hole.

Next the large luminous megaphone was put in the cabinet and under the same conditions this was levitated all over the front of the cabinet and high above the Psychic's head. Similarly the small basket with luminous paint on its handle was taken by Walter from Morse's hand and then levitated all about.

[There now ensued the letter identifications of p. 344, which we need not cover twice.]

Numerous lights were made by Walter to dance all about in the cabinet in front of the Psychic.

The Psychic was then allowed to come out of her trance and the VCO machine was brought into action. Mrs. Stinson went downstairs. Morse held his hand over Crandon's mouth, Dennett put the glass tip in the Psychic's mouth, then all stood back. Walter proceeded to whistle and joke and talk and recited poetry, ending up with "Tell this to the slippery, slithery scientists: 'Live thou this day as though it were thy la-s-s-s-t'." During this time the luminous floats were 14 inches apart in disequilibrium, a very striking and successful proof of the independence of Walter's voice from the anatomy of the Psychic.

We then moved over to the open cabinet and brought forth the SA bell-box. First Morse and then Miner lifted the box and turned 360 degrees with it, the box ringing irregularly and intermittently while they did so.

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, January 21, 1926. Present to left: Richardson, Crandon, Miss Ball, Dudley, Hill. The Psychic was lashed in the cabinet with steel wires as to ankles and wrists and with leather collar and rope for head. Walter came through shortly in cheery mood and almost at once directed Dudley and Miss Ball to change seats. He seemed to like Miss Ball and was soon calling her Maddy.

The Psychic was in deep trance almost at once and Walter directed that all the sitters but Miss Ball collect in the back of the room while Miss Ball passed through the opening in the door a luminous doughnut. This she did. After a few passes Walter took it away from her and levitated it all about the front of the cabinet and then put it out through the easterly side opening.

The next experiment was the levitation of the large three-pound luminous megaphone from a position on the floor in front and to the right of the Psychic, all over and about within the cabinet, and finally outside of it, where it was thrown violently on the floor. Walter now did levitation of the luminous basket containing the doughnut, lifting it from a shelf placed in front of the

Psychic, waving it all about, most of the time in a horizontal position.

[There next ensued the letter identifications of p. 344, under Miss Ball's supervision; and as on the few preceding dates, we avoid duplication by omitting part of the record here.]

The Psychic now came slowly out of trance and Richardson's VCO machine was put in position on the table in front of the Psychic. Miss Ball, having determined that the machine was in working order and that the tubes were patent, put the tube in Psychic's mouth in red light. We all then retired to the back of the room and the roll was called to prove it. The Psychic now blew up the machine to a position of disequilibrium and then Walter proceeded to laugh, whistle and talk freely for about thirty-five seconds, ending up with:

"Live thou this day as though it were thy l-a-s-s-s-t-t." This test was perfect. The voice was never louder.

Walter now directed us to have a very dim red light which really gave very little illumination, but Walter kept referring to it as "Now we are having phenomena in red light." We nevertheless look on the episode as encouraging us to believe that he will work towards red light. The red light was now turned on half strength and he did excellent levitation of the large megaphone, talking freely also in the red light. These phenomena mark distinct advances.

Walter now directed Mrs. Richardson to go down stairs and bring up the xylophone which is used for a dinner gong and she did so. It was put on the shelf in front of the Psychic in trance with the hammer alongside. Walter began to play it almost immediately, striking clear definite intentional notes. Miss Ball tried to hold everybody's hands at once. Then the door of the cabinet was closed and locked by Miss Ball and Walter still went on playing the instrument freely.

On request, Miss Ball put her nose in the doughnut on the shelf in front of the Psychic and Walter caressed her head and neck and then on her request made a second attempt and pulled her hair hard enough to hurt her.

The Psychic now came out of her second trance and we moved to the old cabinet. Here in full red light Walter allowed Miss Ball twice to pick up the bell-box and as she turned around a complete circle, standing erect and holding the bell-box in her hands, the bell-box each time rang intermittently.

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, January 23, 1926. Present to left: Holmes, Richardson, Crandon, Hill, Mrs. Baker. Sitting in the glass cabinet. Holmes made, watched or examined the application of all wires and of the collar strap. He conducted the Psychic into the séance room and after all extremities were fastened to his satisfaction he applied lead seals to the ends of all wires.

Walter came through promptly, the Psychic being in deep trance. He greeted the newcomers and the rest of us. After a time spent in talk he directed Holmes to hold the luminous doughnut in through the opening in the closed front door. This was done by Holmes's left hand while he kept his right in contact with the Psychic's left hand; Mrs. Baker was in contact with the Psychic's right hand. Walter did the levitation of the doughnut, taking it from Holmes's hand and carrying it all over the front half of the cabinet and finally dropped it to the floor. It was picked up and the experiment repeated and after good levitation he then put it out through the right-hand opening.

The large luminous three-pound megaphone was next put, by Holmes, in the right front corner of the cabinet and Walter proceeded to levitate it with door of cabinet closed. Then on request of Holmes it was repeated with the door of the cabinet open, Holmes having, at the time of the levitation from the floor, tactual control of the Psychic's two feet and left hand, Mrs. Baker at the time of the levitation also having tactual control of the Psychic's right hand, all wire lashings of course being as above described in addition. Walter then did levitation of the small basket with three luminous markers on the handle. Each piece of apparatus was put in the cabinet after passing through Holmes's hands to rule out the possibility that they were attached to strings or wires. In the dark Holmes then took a double handful of large wooden letters and put them on the shelf in front of the Psychic. Walter proceeded to throw out three of these letters one at a time, naming each one as he did so; namely, T, 8, and C. Each cognition being correct.

All apparatus was now removed and the Psychic was allowed to come out of trance by Walter. Richardson's VCO machine was brought forth, and the pipe was handed to Holmes who found it patent and in working order. He then put the glass tip into the pipe, he having had the tip in his possession throughout the séance. All sitters now moved to the back of the room. Holmes put the tip into the Psychic's mouth and put out the light. A roll-call was taken of all present who were found to be behind Mrs. Baker and Holmes. The Psychic then blew up the machine to a state

of disequilibrium and Walter proceeded to whistle and talk, and finally recited his poem which begins: "Live thou this day as if it were thy l-a-s-s-s-t-t." Then Walter asked Holmes what he should whistle. Holmes replied, "A hymn: *Onward Christian Soldiers.*" Whereupon Walter whistled that piece and then recited his parody on it beginning:

"Onward Psychic soldiers, marching as to war,
With the cross of science proudly borne before."

The test lasted forty seconds. The luminous markers remaining fully fourteen inches different in level. At the end of that time the light was turned on, Holmes removed the tip from the Psychic's mouth and immediately tested the tube to see if it were in working order. No criticism was noted.

The luminous doughnut was put on the shelf in front of the Psychic. Holmes put his nose in the doughnut and Walter proceeded to caress his hair.

With Walter's approval we now moved to the old cabinet and Walter instructed Holmes to pick up the box. As he did so it rang intermittently and Holmes standing turned around 360 degrees, the bell-box continuing to ring intermittently until he put it down. This was now repeated with Mrs. Baker holding the box and as it rang intermittently she walked towards the windows, 14 feet away from the Psychic; a beautiful and continuous performance.

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, January 24, 1926. Present to left: Ridgway, Hodges, Crandon, Rodenburg, Foss, Mrs. Hodges, Adler, Dr. and Mrs. Brown, J. H. Brown, Mrs. Stinson. The Psychic was lashed in the glass cabinet by the newcomers, who declared the controls to be perfect. With deep trance Walter levitated the doughnut, the big megaphone, the basket and then went on to identify the wooden letters. He got mixed on two, confusing D and O. The interesting part of it is that the outline of the hole in both was an identical octagon. He mixed a C and a G also. Six others were correct. He then proceeded to use the VCO machine with brilliant success beginning and ending in the red light. We then moved to the old cabinet and Walter proceeded to ring the bell-box intermittently in the red light while it was in the hands of Ridgway and Mrs. Hodges, respectively, while they turned around 360 degrees. Ridgway is tall and held the box at least seven feet in the air.

The séance of January 23d, above, marks the climax of control to this date. The procedure here permitted Holmes and Mrs. Baker

is tantamount to simultaneous use of the old personal and the new mechanical control. A certain type of skeptic is satisfied with nothing short of this; he requires the personal testimony to assure him that there is no trick of escape from the mechanical controls, and the mechanical control to assure him that there is no release from the personal control and no error in its reporting. We shall meet this skeptic again and again in the later history of the mediumship; so it will be of importance to bear in mind that his viewpoint has already been met, and by sitters whose detachment from the case and whose personal honesty cannot be questioned or improved upon.

Standardized sittings which require no particular discussion and no full reporting were given on numerous subsequent dates. Some of them will be referred to in some detail in other chapters, in connection with striking presentations of particular phenomena. For the present purpose we may complete the record by tabulation. The reader who seeks fuller information of the sitters present is of course referred to the chapter in the second volume giving this information.

Feb. 3d: D (doughnut), M (megaphone) and B (basket) levitation, letters, VCO; no record of responsibility for wiring; letters handled by Howard. In old cabinet: SAB (Scientific American bell-box), activation of luminous paint.[5]

Feb. 4th: D, B and M levitation, letters, VCO; lashing "by the visitors without aid or assistance"; letters handled by Gerald and identified under continuous tactual control of the Psychic by Gerald and Rand. SAB, activation (in old cabinet; this will be clear in the following entries and will not again be specified).

Feb. 19th: letters, B and M levitation, VCO, activation (all in glass cabinet); no record of responsibility for lashing; letters handled by De Wyckoff.

Feb. 21st: letters, B and M levitation, VCO; lashing by Pierson and letters handled by Pierson. SAB.

The séance of February 22d led to the production of a record entirely independent of Crandon's, and one of whose existence he has been ignorant until he finds it here in print. While the action was in no sense distinctive, the opportunity of presenting in parallel his record and the other one of which I speak is not to be overlooked. It is to be noted that the presence of the Smart-Aleck sitter did not interfere at all with the production of the phenomena. It will also be noted

[5] See Chapter XXXII.

that this sitter, in spite of his objectionable behavior, made a rather more than usually satisfactory skeptic, in that he did not wait until the next day or the next week or the next year to express his objections, but gave them vent on the spot. In so doing, he afforded Crandon opportunity to demonstrate that he does not wilfully withhold any pertinent fact from his records. He might be criticized for making his opinion of Bullitt a part of his record; but he has conspicuously come up to the mark by recording the failure of the phenomena to impress this sitter. Likewise he has recorded Sherburne's damaging discovery, even in the face of the facts that some, at least, of the other sitters remained ignorant of it, and that Sherburne himself admitted his belief in the unique character of his own whistling trick. With these remarks we may pass at once to the two records for the evening, after which the tabulation of ensuing dates will be resumed without further comment.

We, Florizel von Reuter and his mother, Grace von Reuter, hereby testify that we experienced a sitting with Mrs. Crandon, known in mediumistic circles as Margery, on the night of February 22, 1926, in Boston, at the residence, 10 Lime Street, of Dr. Crandon.

I, Grace v. Reuter, certify that I assisted at the disrobing of Margery, and thoroughly examined the dressing gown in which we wrapped her, after which I controlled her hands until she was led into the glass cabinet on a floor two stages higher.

There she was wired in the glass cabinet, hands and feet, so that any movement of extremities was impossible. Her head was bound to the ceiling of the cabinet by a thick rope which fastened around her neck, so that she could not move her head without danger of suffocation.

During the trance her hands were controlled by gentlemen present. The room was lighted by dim red light. We were permitted to examine the cabinet with an electric torch, also the room to exclude the possibility of hidden assistants. The door was closed and our chairs placed in front of it.

In spite of this rigid control, the following phenomena occurred:

a. Independent voice speaking, while Margery's voice was controlled by a "voice-cut-out machine."

b. Large megaphone with illuminated ends was raised in air and revolved.

c. Three wooden letters taken from a number of letters placed by one member of the investigating committee on a board in front

of cabinet were thrown out of the cabinet, the voice of "Walter" naming them as they fell.

d. The medium, after removal from glass cabinet, was seated in wooden cabinet and the bell-apparatus placed in front of her. Room darkened, the bell rang, but was considered nothing phenomenal. Later in red light, bell rang while apparatus was lifted in the arms of my son. During this experiment, the medium was not bound, and her right hand was controlled by the left hand of Dr. Crandon.

During the time that the red light was on, one could control perfectly that the medium made no movement.

At the end of séance, bell-apparatus was examined and found to be impervious to movements or shaking except when touched upon the lid.

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, February 22, 1926. The sitters present were: Bullitt, von Reuter, Mrs. von Reuter, Hill, Sherburne, Greene, Mrs. Greene.

The sitting was first in the glass cabinet. All the newcomers took part in lashing the Psychic but even then the silly skepticism of some of them made them constantly feel to see if her extremities were still bound during the sitting.

The first experiment was with the wooden letters, placed on the shelf in front of the Psychic in trance. They were put there by Bullitt. Walter quickly identified and threw out three letters. In spite of a search of the Psychic having been made by the two women, Bullitt was convinced that selected letters could have been held between the knees of the Psychic and thrown out.

The next experiment was levitation of the big megaphone which was done beautifully; all the observers being against the doorway, the nearest one being six feet from the Psychic.

The next experiment was with the VCO machine, all the important parts of it being carried out by Bullitt.[6] Later Sherburne, who has practiced at the trick all his life, whistling while he had a pipe in his mouth, was able to whistle faintly while the VCO machine tip was in his mouth. He is the only one who has ever been able to do it and the execution of the whistle in no way resembled the sharp clear-cut notes of Walter.[7]

The sitting then adjourned to the old cabinet and Walter rang

[6] von Reuter in conversation with me says this is an error; that he officiated here.—J. M. B.

[7] See pages 275, 360.

the bell-box in the red light with the box held successively by Mrs. Greene and von Reuter.

During the sitting Walter several times had to curse out Bullitt, who disengaged himself from his neighbor and was pawing around in the cabinet. Walter hardly dared to bring forth his rods because of this. Bullitt showed a mixture of ignorance of research, and the behavior of a smart-Aleck.

Feb. 26th: Letters, M and B levitation, VCO; no record of responsibility for lashing; letters handled by C. L. Hyde. SAB, M levitation, touches, identifications (of personal objects).

Feb. 27th: Letters, M and B levitation, VCO; lashing mainly by O'Brien; no record of responsibility for letters. SAB, touches; with respect to the latter the following excerpt from the record is pertinent:

> Under similar strict conditions [of double control] Walter pulled O'Brien's hair, and the latter declared that he thought this had been done by teeth. Thereupon the experiment was repeated with O'Brien controlling not only the Psychic's left hand but also her head; and Mrs. Baker controlling her right hand and both of Crandon's hands.[8] Under these conditions O'Brien got a pull at the back of his hair that made him cry out in pain.

Mar. 4th: Letters, M and B levitation, VCO; lashing "by the men"; letters handled by Van Arsdale. SAB, activation.

Mar. 8th: Letters, identifications, VCO; lashing "in the usual manner" by the visitors; letters handled by Sawyer. SAB, activation.

Mar. 12th: Letters, B, D and M levitation, VCO; no record of responsibility for lashing; letters handled by Bradley. SAB, activation.

Mar. 13th: Letters, M, B and D levitation, VCO; lashing by Little and Morse; letters handled by Morse. Raps.

Mar. 22d: Letters, M levitation, VCO; lashing by Swift and Baker; letters handled by Swift. SAB, activation, scales (for the first time in a standardized séance[9]). The megaphone levitation in the glass cabinet under wired control merits the following quotation from the record:

---

[8] Her position between Crandon and O'Brien made specific control of Crandon's head superfluous; he could not have got past her with it to operate upon O'Brien. —J. M. B.

[9] See Chapter XXXVI.

> Next, with the door [of the glass cabinet] closed, he lifted the heavy luminous megaphone. It took much force to do this, as it got stuck between the medium and the wall of the cabinet. While it was up in the air moving about like a great fish, one of the men sitters was in contact with each of the Psychic's hands, the door of the cabinet was closed, and Crandon was adequately controlled.

Mar. 23d: Letters, B, D and M levitation, VCO; lashing by Davis and Winslow; no record of handling of letters. SAB, scales. It was at this séance that Davis found it possible partly to beat[10] the head control that had been in use to that date. Following his demonstration, the séance of March 26th, in spite of its restricted personnel, was of a double importance. It saw the first trial of two innovations—one designed to meet Davis's discovery, the other to eliminate the possibility uncovered by Sherburne on February 22d.[11] We, may let the record speak for itself, referring the reader to page 275 for a full description of the remodelled glass tip for the VCO machine:

> Sitting at 10 Lime Street, March 26, 1926. Present to left: Mrs. Stinson, Crandon, the Psychic. This sitting was to try out two things: First, the new glass tip so arranged as to fill completely the orifice of the lips and thus make it impossible for the middle hole through which the machine is blown up to be anywhere in the mouth orifice except the middle; and, second, to test out Walter's cognition and levitation in the glass cabinet with the head controlled by a cord running from the collar back horizontally to a screw bolt in the back panel of the cabinet.
>
> The Psychic having been lashed as usual but with the new head control as written above, Walter proceeded not only to name correctly and levitate unknown letters on the shelf in front of the Psychic, but also to levitate and name letters correctly from a basket on the floor of the cabinet.
>
> The VCO machine with the new glass tip was now used. The machine was blown up and Walter proceeded to talk and whistle freely. He whistled "Old Black Joe" on request and then, when asked to recite some of his last poem, he modified it by saying: "Live thou this day as though you had a past."
>
> There had been at one sitting a lawyer, Sherburne, who for many years, as a chronic joke on his friends, had developed the ability to hold a pipe to one corner of his mouth and whistle with the other

[10] See pages 332, 345.
[11] See pages 275, 358.

corner. There is probably not another man in the next ten thousand who could do this, but he said: "I can only do it by putting your glass tip in the extreme corner of my mouth, with the end against the side of my tongue. If you could make a tip, the orifice of which is maintained in the middle of my mouth, you have me beaten."

Sitting closed at 9:15 P.M. after Walter had thrown four baskets all over the place in excessive good spirits.

The séances immediately following the above may be disposed of by tabulation of the bare essentials:

Mar. 27th: letters, M levitation, identification (of personal objects), VCO; no record of responsibility for lashing but it is evident to one familiar with Lime Street routine that a large share in this would be assigned Overstreet; letters handled by Overstreet. SAB, scales, activation.

Mar. 30th: letters, B and M levitation, identification, VCO; lashing by Johnston, MacIntosh and Furman; letters handled by Eddy. SAB, scales.

Apr. 1st: letters, B and M levitation, identifications, VCO; no record of responsibility for lashing or letters. SAB, scales.

Apr. 6th: B levitation, letters; no record of responsibility for lashing or letters. SAB, scales.

We come now to four standardized séances in connection with which the recording is on an entirely different basis from that met in those of the current chapter. Alike on this ground, and to provide a pause for survey of the exact development attained by the standardized séance at this date, we may terminate the present chapter here and give a new head to the four evenings in question. But before we come to these evenings, in Chapter XXXIV, we must bring certain other aspects of our story more nearly up to date, so that the chronological sequence may not suffer too much in the interests of the topical.

CHAPTER XXX

A Distinguished Sitter and His Reaction

By the Editor

John Haynes Holmes is pastor of the Community Church in New York; and I think all the other Unitarian and non-denominational clergymen of the metropolis would gladly echo the statement that of their number he is easily the most famous. He is likewise one of the editors of *Unity*, the Unitarian weekly. His attitude toward psychical research and Spiritualism has always been one of interest, but an interest which must be recognized as a very one-sided one. It had impelled him to keep up with the published reports of the case; and in response to Hoagland's *Atlantic* article it had moved him to an editorial, of which the following extract completely characterizes his outlook upon the subject:

> If anything could be definite and final, this is it. Margery, like every other medium ever adequately investigated, is consciously or unconsciously a fraud. To us this is an ineffable, an indescribable relief. If any medium ever proved his case, we should fall into despair indeed. For if the dead have no better occupation than tipping tables and ringing bells, if they have no higher mentality than that revealed in the communications vouchsafed us by the séances, then we do not want to die.

Following the appearance of this editorial, Holmes found himself involved in two exchanges of correspondence. The one was with Professor Keith, who replied to the editorial in a lengthy letter seeking to instruct Holmes in the generalities of psychical research. His reply was pretty cocky; for instance, it contained the sentence:

> My mind is at least closed to the extent that I shall never take the trouble to read anything further about Mme. Paladino, and in the same way I shall never waste another moment of time on Margery.

Professor Keith's reply to this letter pursued the matter quite relentlessly, and in the meantime Holmes had had some light from another source; so that when he published, in *Unity* for March 1st, 1926, his

entire correspondence with her, he did so rather by way of recording a liberalization which his viewpoint had undergone; and he signalized this liberalization particularly by means of a footnote to the above sentence, in these words:

> I am ready to withdraw this statement as unfair. I shall keep an open mind toward Margery until at least my own first-hand experience can guide me.

In the meantime, the second correspondence referred to above was well under way, between Holmes and Crandon. The latter had seen the November 6th editorial, and had at once been struck by the possibility that if the writer thereof could be persuaded to gain some first-hand knowledge of the subject, his strength of mind was such that he would not be afraid or ashamed to alter even so emphatic a published viewpoint. The extreme worthwhileness of an attempt to bring about such an alteration led Crandon to write Holmes, inviting him to attend a séance. The proposal was at first rebuffed in much the spirit of the above quotation from the Holmes-Keith letter; but the simultaneous progress of his correspondence with Crandon and Professor Keith, plus his own native intelligence and fairness, made him see that this attitude was too radical. There remained some very concrete doubts in his mind: such, for instance, as the question whether he was expected to report his observations as absolute facts, or merely as facts within his best knowledge. Further correspondence with Crandon cleared these points up; Crandon's very sane attitude toward the Walter personality appealed to him; and the upshot was that he attended his first Margery séance on January 23rd, 1926.[1] In the interval, he had put himself through an intensive course of reading in the attempt to catch up on the favorable side of the published discussion. In particular, he was impressed by the *M. H. V.* pamphlet. His first séance was not his last; but a chronological pursuit of his contact with the case requires that we set down next parts of an editorial which he wrote after his first visit to Lime Street, and which appeared in *Unity* for March 8th, 1926. Referring to his previous statement and then to *M. H. V.*, he says:

> After reading this pamphlet we feel in honor bound to state to our readers that, in our judgment, it opens up the whole question once again and thus completely discredits our previous editorial

[1] See page 354.

> statement. Margery has not been proved a fraud. On the contrary, the explanation of her marvelous performances on the ground of fraud seems to have completely broken down. The reality of what she is doing under strictest control is established, and the spirit hypothesis is one which must be at least considered. In saying this, we are shaking the convictions of a life-time. But we are interested in convictions only as they are consistent with truth, and truth is what we want. Incidentally, thanks to the courtesy of Dr. Crandon, we are ourselves having sittings with Margery, and thus seeing things for ourselves. For the first time we are witnessing phenomena which are impressive. What they mean we are not prepared to say, but our mind, like our eyes, is wide open.

One cannot sufficiently praise the candor and courage of this statement. Holmes's attitude toward the convictions of a life-time shines with particular brilliance in contrast with McDougall's.[2]

Holmes is a very busy man, and cannot get to Boston save at rare intervals. Ever since January, 1926, whenever he is in or near Boston he makes a point of getting to Lime Street for one or more séances; and his name recurs several times in the list of sitters. Nor has he shunned the burden of public and private support of the mediumship. Following the above editorial, he had a letter from Prince, imploring him not to "commit" himself until Prince had had an opportunity to inform him about the case; and attempts to drag him out by the coat-tails were also made in the name of Houdini and others. He has not consented to be dragged; without any display of prejudice pro or con he continues his interest in the phenomena, and his imperviousness to extraneous considerations such as public favor or private scandal.

---

[2] *M. M.*, p. 476.

CHAPTER XXXI

Another Committee

By the Editor, and from the Records

At some risk of repeating what has been said in Chapter XVI, we must now turn back to survey the situation created by my "official" séances of 1925; first of all taking account of my own viewpoint as brought into this program. My contact with the Margery case had been unique in more ways than I can conveniently catalog. When I was introduced to it in November, 1923, I was a comparative newcomer in psychical research. I carried a large presumption of general scientific competence, while being obviously free from any fixed ideas about the generalities of psychical phenomena. With reference to the particularities of this case I had equally clean hands, having been a total stranger to the medium and to all of her friends. From that date to the August sittings in 1925, I enjoyed more séances, a greater variety of phenomena, and an incomparably better opportunity for extra-séance observation of the Psychic and her immediate family and friends, than any other person whose initial qualifications in the three respects just mentioned could by any possibility be compared with mine. The very fact that the fraudulence of the mediumship cannot be maintained without giving me the position of accomplice in the séance room and press-agent outside it is ample evidence of all this. And this unique exposure to the mediumship has entirely convinced me of its validity.

A double duty is accordingly imposed upon me in my further contacts with the case. I must endeavor to obtain proof of validity which shall make the same appeal to the absentee critic as to the observer present through a long series of sittings. At the same time I must seek for all possible data on the precise nature of the phenomena, the precise conditions under which they do or do not occur, the psychic modus operandi, and the underlying prime causes. And prosecuting these two aims more or less simultaneously, it must be evident that I may meet complete defeat in the one direction while scoring a conspicuous success in the other. This was in fact what had happened to me during the summer of 1925. In the evidential phase my enter-

prise had been a failure; in its collateral scientific phase it had been a distinct and altogether worth-while success.

Now there had been, and in the nature of the case there could be, no definite plans as to the duration of my official study of the mediumship, or the number of sittings to be given me. These factors necessarily had to depend upon the course of events as we went along. There must, however, come a time at which we shall wish to pause and look behind us with the surveying eye; to ask ourselves how we are coming along; and particularly to decide whether we shall stop or go on. The vehicle through which all this was done was a report rendered by me to the Research Committee of the Society's Trustees, dated December 10th, 1925. In this I said:

> I call particular attention to the fact that no consecutive program was followed out. I had drawn up a statement of intentions, in great detail, which gave major place to examination of the telekinetic phenomena of the mediumship. This program was followed at the first three sittings, at which I had substantial direction of the procedure, to such degree that I did numerous things the use of which Crandon could not see, or to which he was more or less actively opposed. Thereafter, Walter's or Crandon's will was insidiously substituted for mine, in a way which I could never quite put my finger upon for purposes of effective resistance. The upshot is that my records of these sittings must be taken as detached documents. As such I feel that they are important and a justification of the work done. But of course my orderly progress with the case was defeated, and I feel that nothing was added to the pre-existing proofs of validity; with the exception of the independent voice, which stands better than it did by virtue of the work done with Richardson's machine. This, however, is only incidentally connected with my study of the case, and would have been done as well without my cooperation as with it.

The report went on to discuss matters of personnel. It had been hoped to secure for me adequate academic or technical aid, from persons who were not open to the objection of prior contact with the case. The summer season was the major factor in defeating this hope. Questions of control, of arrangement of sitters, of illumination, etc., were discussed, and recommendation made for future procedure. Then I dealt with the matter of investigational range, in the following terms:

> Of all investigators to whom the case has been exposed since the beginning I am in the unique position of not having any urge

toward the rapid promulgation of final conclusions of some sort. I have therefore been the only one who can study the case carefully and slowly, seeking no undue speed toward any particular end, but simply publishing my records of observed facts as I go along.

In every case where an investigator or a group of investigators has felt the urge toward a conclusion of some sort, their published conclusion has been unfavorable. It was so with the Harvard group of 1923, with the Scientific American Committee, with the McDougall-Worcester examination of late 1924, with Dingwall, with the Code-Hoagland enterprise. It is clear that this is inherent; nobody can rapidly reach and publish a favorable conclusion. The facts are too new and strange; the investigator must have a long time to accustom himself to them and to satisfy himself that there is some hope of an orderly explanation for them, before he can be expected to give a public pronouncement favorable to them.

Published unfavorable conclusions are of no permanent scientific merit save as they turn out to be in line with the ultimate facts. They are, however, here and now a serious embarrassment to me. They disturb the mediumship and interfere with its results. They set the public mind against the mediumship and against our work in general, thus setting us back in the sense of getting public credit for our results. This public discrediting of our field and our cases makes it more difficult than it should be for me to get adequate assistance at the points where my work impinges on other fields of science.

Further, I find that Walter and Crandon are not able to keep my work separate from that of other people who are investigating the case simultaneously. Three times I have gone to Boston for sittings by appointment, to have my investigation merged into Dr. Richardson's without my prior knowledge or my consent. I have no criticism of Dr. Richardson's aims or of his program. But I was doing something different. If it is impossible for Walter to follow two distinct lines of research at the same time, in two separate series of sittings, this is an argument, not for dealing with two investigations as though they were one, but for trying only to deal with one.

Partly in the text of this report and partly through personal interview, I put before the Trustees at this time my opinions as to the way in which the Society should proceed in its future work with the Margery case. I was under no handicaps in my pursuit of the sci-

entific problems involved; I felt it profitable to go to Boston whenever these called me there. But in the attempt to determine whether or no the mediumship were susceptible of a demonstration of validity that would meet the standards held out by intelligent skepticism, I was doubly handicapped. I was handicapped in the séance room by my friendship with the Crandons, as the report set out in detail. I was handicapped out of the séance room by my known conviction of validity, which in my case as with a long line of distinguished predecessors from Crookes down, is popularly distorted into a *prejudice toward* validity. So on every ground, it seemed best to confine my future work with Margery to the scientific aspects; and for the Society either to abandon the task of proving here and now, to the man in the street, whether the mediumship were valid or not, or for it to seek a new agency through which to attempt this proof. Such new agency might of course be an individual or a committee; all that was necessary was that, on the part of individual investigator or of committee members, there exist an open mind, an absence of recorded judgment, and a complete freedom from prior acquaintance with the Crandons.

While my report was in preparation, I had discussed all this with individual Trustees, and there was a unanimous feeling that further effort should be made for the publishable verdict. Before the report was submitted the matter had progressed to the point where the nucleus for a new Committee had been found, in the person of Dr. Henry Clay McComas, Professor of Experimental Psychology at Princeton. He seemed in every way eligible; he was distinctly interested; and he thought it probable that he could make acceptable recommendations for filling out the Committee. In the interim he went to Boston for a preliminary contact with the case. Crandon's record of this occasion (December 15th, 1925) is the only one available:

> Using the glass cabinet, the Psychic was wired in and fastened in the usual way by McComas. Walter came through promptly and McComas, after introduction, immediately asked if he could put his hand over the Psychic's mouth. To this Walter replied, "Some time but not tonight." He then proceeded to ask Walter about Walter's occupation and to this Walter replied that he was busy under orders working on a problem of communication in order that anyone might act as a medium. Pressed for details, Walter said it was a problem in wave lengths.
>
> We then proceeded to try for a sitting alone with McComas with levitation of the doughnut within the cabinet, the other sitters

being all in the hallway. This was tried for twelve minutes without results, the Psychic being in trance. This was the period of the catamenia and it was physiologically improper to sit. Nevertheless Walter now proceeded to use Richardson's VCO machine with all of us standing in the doorway. McComas tested the patency of the tube and put it in the Psychic's mouth. Several times her mouth got tired and he had to take it out for a rest, but finally the floats were blown up and Walter recited his poem:

"Live thou this day as though it were thy last"—and whistled at great length. The whole demonstration lasted a minute and a half. McComas then took the tip from the Psychic's mouth, tested it and observed that it was patent and in working order.

Walter now directed everyone to go down stairs except Richardson and with him had a private conference. On reassembling Walter instructed Richardson to hold the doughnut within the cabinet, whereupon Walter performed the general free levitation of the doughnut in the cabinet. One of the reasons of the difficulty tonight is apparently the fact that Walter had to use teleplasm derived from the right ear of the Psychic.

The Psychic was now released from her lashings by McComas who found all controls as they were before the sitting. We now adjourned to the old cabinet and after some talk Walter allowed McComas to pick up the Scientific American bell-box, turn 360 degrees and put it down again. This was repeated, the second time being very well done with irregular intermittency of the ringing.

While Crandon was out at the telephone and under conditions of double control, McComas received several touches.

As a resident of Baltimore, McComas is acquainted with members of the Johns Hopkins faculty. When it came to naming his colleagues for a Margery inquiry, he passed over his immediate associates of the Princeton faculty and nominated Dr. Robert W. Wood, Professor of Physics in the Baltimore institution, and Dr. Knight Dunlap, its Professor of Psychology. The former gentleman, particularly, is known as one of the leaders in his field for America. Nothing specific was known by me or any of my Trustees regarding qualifications or disqualifications of Wood and Dunlap for psychical research; they were accepted by the Society on McComas's judgment and say-so. The entire group went to Boston in late January, 1926; and on the 26th there was held an entirely informal séance for the purpose of intro-

ducing them to the medium and the mediumship. Crandon's record was the only one made:

> This was the first meeting of the Commission of Inquiry of the A.S.P.R. to study the phenomena of the Margery mediumship. This meeting, however, was only for getting acquainted and was not part of the official study of the case. Walter came through promptly, but slightly acid; partly reflecting the Psychic's strain and fear of a new Committee and partly because the company did not talk freely. The sitting was held in the old cabinet.
>
> It was quickly noted that Wood could only hear in part the whispered voice of Walter, and Dunlap heard nothing. Both these gentlemen admitted it, Wood saying he could hear the lightest whisper better than the rather strident whisper, and Dunlap saying that he had not heard a whisper since childhood.
>
> Walter now proceeded to work with the Scientific American bell-box. He instructed Dunlap to pick it up in the red light and he did so, turning round 360 degrees and then putting it back; the bell rang intermittently during this time. On a repetition of the experiment Dunlap held the box aloft between his eye and the light, Dunlap's back being towards the Psychic. The bell rang intermittently and finally stopped and then, while still in that position, Dunlap asked Walter to ring it again and he did so. This had never been done before.
>
> Walter then made the unlighted doughnut glow two or three times, and then after we lighted it up he moved it about on the table more or less. The Psychic was in trance throughout.

The necessity of some sort of working agreement as to what may and what may not be done by a group of investigators strange alike to the case and to Crandon is evident; and such agreement is always exacted by Crandon of a new investigator or a new Committee. In the present instance, the following document, which seems entirely self-explanatory, was worked out between the several parties and signed prior to the first official séance:

> CONVENTION between Dr. L. R. G. Crandon and The Commission of Inquiry of the American Society for Psychical Research organized to study the phenomena of the "Margery" Mediumship.
>
> 1. The Commission shall be represented by a chairman who alone shall be authorized to speak for the Commission in official contact with the case and in the conduct of the investigation.

2. The sittings shall take place in Boston but not all necessarily at 10 Lime Street.

3. Sittings are subject to cancellation when the Psychic's health makes it necessary.

4. Dr. Crandon or Dr. Mark W. Richardson must be present at all sittings. Dr. Crandon shall not be excluded without his own consent, but such consent shall not be arbitrarily withheld against the wishes of the Commission.

5. No psychic structure shall be touched or interfered with in any way and no light of any hue shall be turned on during the sitting except with the consent of the control (Walter). If either of the conditions of this paragraph is broken, the whole investigation shall cease at once and the episode shall be considered an admission that the Commissioners have broken their word as gentlemen and scientists.

6. The complete narrative of observational notes of each sitting, dictaphonic if possible, signed by all present, shall be handed to Dr. Crandon before another sitting takes place. Fraud or suggestion of fraud in the production of phenomena which does not appear in these notes shall be deemed non-existent and this is considered an acknowledgment of that condition by the Commissioners. But the Commissioners are under no obligation to include in such notes any statement of comment or explanatory hypotheses as to the true nature of observed phenomena. Fraud observed and noted in the record of any sitting shall be deemed to open the record of all previous sittings as to the possibility of unobserved fraud having occurred in such sittings.

7. Dr. Crandon shall have a copy of every photograph taken and he shall hold the copyright thereof. Dr. Crandon, however, agrees that the Commission shall have the right to publish the photographs in their report.

8. No news of publication of the progress of the study shall be issued except with the consent of every one involved. At the close of the study Dr. Crandon shall have the privilege of publishing the notes but only in their entirety unless the Commission does so within a reasonable time.

9. Use of the word Walter meaning "the control" and such expressions as "Walter's hand" and "Walter's terminal" etc. shall not be deemed by any of the contracting parties an admission as to the nature and structure of the mechanism so referred to.

10. It is understood that every aid and facility reasonably possible shall be afforded the Commission to pursue its study; suggestions made by the Commission as to the place of sitting, varia-

tions of control, adaptations and use of apparatus, arrangement of séance room paraphernalia, sitters, etc., shall be complied with so far as possible, and the reasons for refusing such compliance shall be made part of the narrative or observational notes if required by the Commission.

11. All matters in dispute shall be settled by a body consisting of two trustees of the A.S.P.R. and Dr. Mark W. Richardson.

January 27, 1926.

(Signed) H. C. McComas, Chairman
Knight Dunlap
R. W. Wood
L. R. G. Crandon

The Psychic's interests being, in Crandon's judgment, duly safeguarded by this document, the official séances were proceeded with. As a measure of recording economy, a separate statement of the control conditions in the glass cabinet was made, carrying the date, January 27th, of the first official séance. Through oversight, the séance record proper then fails to state that these conditions obtained; but it is clear from the separate statement that they did. This séance record was produced by dictation to a stenographer, present in a corner of the room with a faint red light, and a technique, new in this mediumship, was pursued under which all the Committee members indiscriminately dictated, each statement in the record carrying indication of its immediate source. The general statement of control and the record of January 27th follow:

The conditions of mechanical control for the first official sitting are what we may call *control by wire lashing.* It is understood hereafter in the notes of this Commission when that descriptive phrase is used that the *control* is in every detail similar to the following description. The expression *control by wire lashing* is meant and understood to be precisely as follows, throughout all subsequent notes of this Commission.

The Psychic is clad in a single garment (kimono), stockings and shoes. She and her garments are examined by a woman at the request of the Commission before and after the sitting and it is understood that if nothing of importance is discovered that nothing need be said in these records.

In bright white light now, there are tied around the Psychic's wrists and ankles long pieces of number three picture wire. The part going around the limb is protected against cutting the skin

by rubber tubing. All knots are either made, observed in the making or tested by the Commission. A leather collar is padlocked around the Psychic's neck by a Commissioner and the key kept in his possession.

The Psychic is now conducted by a Commissioner into the red lighted séance room and there seats herself in a Windsor chair in the Richardson plate-glass cabinet. The ends of the wrist and ankle ties are now threaded through and round fused closed-ring eye-bolts on the floor and through the sides of the cabinet respectively. They are securely tied, observed in the tying or inspected by the Commission and the ends threaded through American Railway Express lead seals and sealed by a member of the Commission. Heavy twine is tied by a Commissioner to the leather collar in knots peculiar to himself and the other end is similarly tied to a fused eye-bolt in the roof of the cabinet. The excursion for the feet is not over six inches. The excursion for the hands is not over two inches; for the head not over six inches forwards, nine inches sideways.

At the end of the sitting again in good red light the wire lashings and head control are inspected by the Commission and found to be as originally made, unless stated to the contrary in the records. The control lashings are then cut away by a member of the Commission.

McComas: At Walter's suggestion, the light was turned on and Wood got a bag full of solid letters and Wood put a couple of handsful of these letters upon a shelf which Crandon had placed in the cabinet during red light. Wood states that the letters were not identified by him when placed on the shelf.

McComas: One of the letters came forward, fell at my feet and Walter said it was the letter "K"; McComas stating it felt like the figure "4." According to Wood's watch, it is 9:15 P.M.

McComas: Another letter fell to floor. Walter said it was "O" and to McComas it seemed to be "O." Dunlap also guessed it to be "O" and put it in his pocket.

Dunlap: Walter says the red light has lit up all the luminous spots in the room.[1]

Wood: The letter "C" placed in the hands of Dunlap, his hands containing the luminous disc. Walter states it is the letter "C" and it is the said letter.

[1] See open reference No. 13, Vol. 2.

McComas: Holding the illuminated doughnut in the palm of left hand, placed the hand on the shelf and Walter said he gave me the letter " S " which proved to be the true letter.

Dunlap: Holding doughnut, knuckles on shelf, Walter gives me the letter " U " which is correct.

McComas: I have Psyche's right hand and Crandon's left hand; Dunlap has Crandon's other hand, and Wood has Psyche's other hand.

The letter " C " fell to the floor according to Walter.

Another letter fell to the floor which Walter said was " ZED "—McComas having Psyche's right hand and Wood controlling the Psyche's left hand all the time.

McComas: At 9:32 P.M., according to Crandon, Crandon removed the shelf.

Dunlap: Dunlap holding basket in front of cabinet felt a good, strong pull on basket. Dunlap held on and Walter let go.

McComas: I have control of Psyche's right hand; Walter takes basket and after moving it up and around, outside of cage, Walter drops basket on the floor.

Dunlap: McComas makes the estimate that basket was raised about 5½ feet, Wood estimates about 5 feet and Dunlap less than 5 feet.

McComas: Just before levitation of the basket, the luminous point nearest the cabinet disappeared on my side of the basket. I had control of Psyche's right hand throughout the episode.

Dunlap: Wood estimates the basket was in levitation ten seconds and Dunlap and McComas estimate less than ten seconds. Dunlap states pull seemed to be straight in toward the cabinet.

Dunlap: During holding of basket, pulling of basket and levitation of basket, Dunlap was controlling Crandon's right hand with his (Dunlap's) left hand and McComas controlled Crandon's left hand.

McComas: McComas has his left arm all around basket and cannot feel any strings or other attachments to basket and examining the 3-pound luminous megaphone can find no strings or threads attached to it. Crandon's left hand is resting upon McComas' right; Dunlap controls with his left hand the right hand of Crandon; Dunlap's left knee rests against the right knee of Crandon; Crandon's right foot is against Dunlap's left foot and Crandon's head is on Dunlap's shoulder.

Dunlap: Dunlap now has both of Crandon's hands.

McComas: Lifting the basket so that I held it by the top, and tilting it slightly sideways, I felt a distinct pull on the basket on

Psyche's right, which levitated the basket several inches and thrust it out of my hand.

Dunlap: McComas holding basket, he let go, it went back, came forward, down and up, taps and knocks. Both of Psyche's hands were controlled during this episode.

McComas: With door closed and locked, the key remaining in same, McComas reached through opening in door of cabinet, levitated basket until about a foot above wooden panel of door, when McComas distinctly felt strong pressure on basket at Psyche's right, the pressure being toward the east. In the first effort, the basket fell to the floor. This was repeated and on the second effort the basket was levitated at approximately a height of 5 feet and thrown toward the east back corner of Psyche's cabinet. Walter invited McComas to enter cabinet to retrieve basket. On hands and knees, McComas thrust his head in as far as Psyche's knee on Psyche's left side. In this position, Walter hit him on the head with the megaphone several times. The megaphone was originally on the west side.

Dunlap: Dunlap was controlling Crandon's hands, feet and head throughout the preceding experiment.

McComas: The episode of the basket was repeated and basket was thrown to the west back of Psyche as before. The basket in this episode went back of cabinet, came forward, and struck cabinet front several times. According to estimate of McComas, basket was in the air on the level of McComas' chin while standing, approximately 30 seconds.

Wood: Cold breeze felt on left cheek.

McComas: Megaphone now in levitation, now partly out of the cabinet, partly towards the luminous disc on Wood's head. Megaphone has big end pointed that way. McComas holding Psyche's right hand; Wood holding Psyche's left hand. Megaphone is now out of cabinet.

Wood: Megaphone out of cabinet, trying to hit luminous disc on my head; megaphone makes repeated contact with my forehead.

Wood: Holding luminous disc at door of cabinet, luminous disc taken from fingers and levitated for 20 seconds in the cabinet.

McComas: I have control of Psyche's right hand. We had a complete circle while levitation was going on.

(Signed) H. C. McComas,
Knight Dunlap,
R. W. Wood.

The Commission's second séance was held on the following night, January 28th. The action was largely blank, and what phenomena were obtained were preceded by a very long period of waiting. The conditions of sitting were different from those of the first official séance. Crandon's own record covers the action of the séance quite as well as the one dictated by the other sitters during the séance; and certain collateral facts and claims it covers better. With the obvious reservation that the members of the Commission would not accept all these collateral elements, we shall then save space and get along faster with our story by using Crandon's record:

> Sitting in the old cabinet: Miss Barbero, secretary, was seated at a table behind the cabinet with a dim red light by which to write.
>
> The Psychic's wrists and ankles were so sore from the tight wires of the previous night that she and Crandon sat tonight with luminous band controls sewed on and with the hope of getting some of the red light phenomena of which we have had so many examples.
>
> Trance came on almost at once but Walter did not speak for about twenty minutes, at which time he announced that he was going to try for visible teleplasm and asked for the luminous coordinate board. This was vitalized and put on the table. During the next hour Walter spoke but rarely and then to make fun of Dunlap who constantly felt for the Psychic's feet, or to admonish Wood to keep his hands still and where they belonged.
>
> A mass giving a silhouette extending as far as the second inch mark on the board was seen by all coming forth over the Psychic's edge of the table and going back. This was accompanied by groans suggesting labor pains. Nothing more was accomplished and Walter did not say good night.
>
> At the end of the sitting both Dunlap and Wood complained that the Psychic had held their fingers so tight that they were numb. The Psychic seemed greatly exhausted.
>
> About 1:00 A.M., the Psychic being asleep, Crandon was wakened by Walter[2] and he asked Walter why he tried for teleplasm at the second sitting with this group, who properly should not see it until they had had many sittings. Walter replied: "I was trying a little psychological experiment to see how these men would behave. Wood during the whole sitting kept pawing about over the abdomen and thighs of the Psychic. I did not dare bring out the teleplasm under these conditions. It was to stop this that the Kid held on so tight to Wood as to hurt his fingers. We will

[2] See open reference No. 14, Vol. 2.

sit only in the glass cabinet hereafter where we will be safe from such behavior. These men, excepting McComas, don't hear everything and don't talk. The result is a heavy air of concentration and boredom which is hard to work under. We will do the best we can."

A catamenial reaction in the Psychic followed January 29, ten days ahead of time; showing a physiological effect of the efforts of this sitting.

Before this sitting, while the Psychic was down stairs, the rest were gathered in the séance room. Wood put forward the idea that Walter recognized the letters by the sound they made when they struck the floor. This does not seem to be a tenable theory. The Psychic did not hear this remark nor did anyone tell her of it. Nevertheless, during the 1:00 A.M. conversation, Walter said, "What a fool idea that was of Wood's that I tell the letters by the sound they make on the floor. I always name them before they hit the floor." Here is a clear-cut case of Walter's knowing something of an event in the top room of which by no chance could the Psychic know.

Reference to page 374 will indicate how it was possible for Wood to free his left hand for purposes of exploration; Dunlap sat at his left. Inasmuch as I have done the same thing myself when the occasion seemed to demand it,[3] I am in no position to protest on general principles against Wood's action. Indeed, the absolute prohibition against the investigator's use of his hands is evidently one of those things which would be of great aid to the fraudulent medium, and the necessity of which in a genuine case is not immediately apparent. Especially in view of the large probability that the maintenance of the unbroken circle is entirely a subjective factor, it seems most rash to condemn a reasonable degree of exploration. On the other hand, our clear belief that where the phenomena occur genuinely they are the product of a teleplasmic machinery makes it self-evident that too much pawing about in the vicinity of the medium might have unfortunate effects. It is perhaps worth nothing that on the occasion cited in the preceding footnote, when my own pawing resulted in evidence favorable to the medium, there was no suggestion from any of her supporters that I was out of order; but it is equally true that my pawing was not extremely close to her or over an extremely wide region of space. In the absence of general principles upon which all parties may agree,

[3] See *M. M.*, p. 399.

this business of tactual exploration of the region around the medium must be considered on its merits every time it arises. That some adverse weight ought to be attached to the present episode may be granted but I am equally in no doubt that Wood, in pawing about the medium, would do so to an objectionable degree.

For the third Commission séance, held on January 30th, we may return to the record dictated by the official sitters. The séance, despite Walter's dictum to Crandon on the morning of the 29th, was held in the old cabinet with personal control of the Psychic; this the record omits to state specifically.

Wood: 9:10. I am holding Margery's left hand, her left foot is near my right foot, her knees are in contact with my right hand.

Dunlap: 9:10. I am holding Margery's right hand with my hand, knuckle down on her leg just above the knee, her right foot on my left foot. I have Crandon's left hand in my right and the combined hands are resting on Crandon's left knee.

McComas: 9:10. I have Crandon's right hand and it is resting on his knee, also his head is on my shoulder and he has a capital "C" painted on his sleeve. There is a luminous spot on Psyche's forehead, a luminous band on each sleeve and a luminous band on each ankle. The bell-box is on the table in the usual position, that is to say, the platform shelves toward the west (toward Wood).

Dunlap: 9:15. Wood rang the bell.

Wood: 9:25. Control very close; no manifestations.

Wood: 9:30. Psyche states that the circle is not properly completed as my hands are touching Dunlap's. Control changed so as to avoid contact of my hand with that of Dunlap. No sign of trance.

Wood: 9:40. No signs of trance; no signs of anything.[4] Asked Psyche if she was uncomfortable or wanted the controls changed and she said no, she could stand it as long as we could. Psyche laughs at this.

Wood: 9:45. Wood suggests that he and McComas change places, which was done.

Dunlap 9:52. Psyche's right hand contracting strongly, gripping my left hand, continuous contractions of the fingers.

McComas: 9:53. My control at present is, my right knee against Psyche's left knee, my left ankle against her right ankle and my fingers around her wrist.[4]

[4] Sic. See open reference 18, Vol. 2.—J. M. B.

Wood: 9:55. Wood suggested that the Psychic's knees be in contact with each other and it was done. Crandon said this would probably prevent the protrusion of the Psychic's teleplasmic rods which are supposed to issue from the thighs.

McComas: 9:59. The control of the two knees by my right hand has been discontinued.[5]

Dunlap: 10:05. Psyche breathing hard, squeezing my hand.

McComas: 10:07. Psyche's left ankle raised into my lap, my right hand upon Psyche's knee and I am holding her hand.

McComas: 10:17. Walter said, "No, she isn't. Hold your horses." My control consists in holding Psyche's left hand and Psyche's feet are in my lap.

Dunlap: 10:17. I am holding Psyche's right hand, resting slightly above her knee and her right foot is now on my left foot.

McComas: 10:20. Walter evidently trying to get force enough to do something. He says, "I never saw such a bunch of stiffs in all my life." He also says, "Talk about dead people; My God!"

McComas: 10:22. Some conversation between Walter and the members of the circle. Not to be published, says Walter.

McComas: 10:24. Margery's querulous voice said, "I am in awful pain, don't feel good anyhow." Walter replied, "Nobody gives a damn, if you are."

McComas: 10:26. I have both of Psyche's ankles in my lap and her left hand in my right hand.

Dunlap: 10:26. I have Psyche's right hand in my left hand, held upward in the air and it is moving somewhat as she twists.

McComas: 10:30. Something cold and moist slapped me on my hand. Just a moment after, Dunlap remarked that something cold struck him on the hand. I have both of Psyche's ankles in my lap.

McComas: 10:31. My hand just came in contact with a small, ribbed substance which was immediately removed from my hand. I have Psyche's left hand in my right.

McComas: 10:31. Cold, moist substance on my hand again.

Dunlap: 10:31. Psyche's right leg on my lap. Something cold tapped me on the finger.

McComas: 10:32. Cold, rod-like substance touched me on thumb and immediately disappeared. Psyche's head constantly moving. Psyche twisting and groaning. Both her ankles are now in my lap.

[5] See open reference No. 18, Vol. 2.

McComas: 10:35. Psyche constantly repeats, in querulous voice, that she does not feel good.

McComas: 10:36. Luminous doughnut is placed on the table and between myself and the doughnut appears a dark, round-like structure, which waves up and down. The rod-like structure has reappeared.

McComas: 10:37. Walter's voice: "Hold your horses, I will show you in a minute."

McComas: 10:38. The rod-like structure moved the doughnut a couple of inches toward Wood.

McComas: 10:40. Apparently, rod-like structure is lying right across doughnut. McComas requested Walter that it bend to right angle. Psyche twisting and writhing as the rod moves.

Dunlap: 10:41. Psyche moved Dunlap's hand over into contact with a cold, smooth, cylindrical something.

McComas: 10:42. Psyche reached over and pressed the back of McComas' hand on a cold, moist substance.

McComas: 10:45. McComas' hand directed to the substance, which he holds between thumb and forefinger, made some slight impression on same. It seemed like a cylindrical substance about ¾ inches in diameter with a hard, bone-like center or axis. Just before this instance, Psyche's voice said "I feel bad here" and pushed my hand up to the point on this cylindrical substance.

Dunlap: 10:47. The "thing" cold and smooth and soft on my fingers. Psyche's right foot now on mine.

McComas: 10:47. Psyche's left foot on my right foot.

McComas: 10:49. The rod-like structure moved the doughnut.

Wood: 10:50. Something touched my fingers again.

Dunlap: 10:50. The "thing" picked up the doughnut in Wood's hand and moved it around against my head.

Dunlap: 10:51. Psyche presses my hand against "it" again.

Wood: 10:53. My hand was on the table holding the luminous doughnut, teleplasmic rod fell in the palm of my hand, feeling like a rigid rod covered with soft leather. It was placed between my thumb and finger which were holding the doughnut. I squeezed it very hard, which produced no ill effect. The rod then slipped through the doughnut and raised it in the air.

McComas: 10:53. Psyche reached over and pulled my left hand over and placed it upon the teleplasmic structure.

McComas: 10:54. Released control of Psyche's right hand though the bracelet is now visible and has been visible throughout.

I now resume control of Psyche's right hand. During the interval in which I did not hold her hand, Wood did have her hand.

McComas: 10:55. Psyche has taken my right hand and laid it firmly on the "teleplasm." The "teleplasm" is now removed. In this case it was on her hand.

McComas: 11:00. Both of Psyche's ankles are in my lap. While speaking, felt a touch of "teleplasm" on my little finger. The "teleplasm" apparently against Psyche's right leg, above the knee.

Dunlap: 11:02. Back of my hand touched by "it" again. It is now touching my fingers.

Dunlap: 11:04. My hand was put over and between my fingers I felt of "it." It is cold, soft, with rigid ruler-like core. I cannot say whether it is a single or multiple core.

McComas: 11:05. Received rather sharp touch on left hand which is resting on the table, I should judge about a foot from her body, just the other side of Psyche's two ankles.

Dunlap: 11:07. The teleplasmic rod picked doughnut out of my hand, held it several inches above the table, moving it around. In levitation now.

Wood: 11:07. Holding both Crandon's hands during this levitation.

McComas: 11:09. Doughnut waving up and down, sideways; now seems to be nearer to me. Doughnut now resting on table. Psyche has taken right leg from my lap and put it on Dunlap's foot.

Wood: 11:10. Doughnut starting to rise from table with upward movement parallel with movement of luminous band on Psyche's head.

Wood: 11:12. Doughnut is now moving again without any movement of Psyche's head.

Dunlap: 11:12. While levitating, teleplasmic rod struck my fingers. A moment ago, rod touched my fingers again.

McComas: 11:14. Doughnut has dropped to the floor. Several minutes levitation of doughnut.

McComas: 11:15. At my request my hand was taken and placed upon "teleplasmic" rod. The "teleplasmic" rod was standing up in the air. My hand closed around it. Apparently it is very firm with a slightly ruffled effect.

Dunlap: 11:16. I have the rod in my hand. Psyche put my hand over and put the rod between my fingers, pushing my hand along so that the rod pushed through my fingers several inches. It was cold.

McComas: 11:17. "Teleplasmic" rod touched my cheek.

Dunlap: 11:18. On cheek, scratching my ear (McComas touching my hand), rapping me on the top of the head and on the back of the head.

Dunlap: 11:19. Walter rapped on the table with the teleplasmic rod, stating he was rapping on my head but he did not. (Joke.)

Wood: 11:20. During the rapping episode, I was holding Crandon's head in my left hand and Crandon's face was in contact with my hand.

Dunlap: 11:21. During the rapping phenomena and when I was touched with the rod on the head, I was holding Psyche's right hand and Crandon's left hand.

McComas: 11:21. During the time that the teleplasmic rod was striking at Dunlap's head, Psyche's ankles were, in my lap. One of them passed out at the time but came immediately back, then both of them were out and came back immediately. Psyche's body was twisting and turning constantly. Psyche turned around in her chair and was apparently over on her right thigh at the time of the strokes upon Dunlap's head.

McComas: 11:23. McComas feeling Psyche from thigh to knee finds tights. This search made at Crandon's suggestion.

Dunlap: 11:23. Dunlap finds that Psyche has silk bloomers (tights) on.

McComas: 11:25. Several times Psyche's left hand slipped through mine so that I had her wrist for a moment, but I have always been in contact with her hand or her wrist.

Dunlap: 11:25. I have had Psyche's right hand all the time as I recollect.

McComas: 11:26. Psyche said, "I have cramps here" and taking McComas' hand, placed it on her abdomen at about the umbilical region. McComas can feel a belt. (Dr. Crandon adds that the Psychic is at present unwell.)

McComas: 11:30. Psyche has one foot in my lap and one foot on the table and I have her left hand.

McComas: 11:31. Psyche's right leg went to the floor and came back again. Walter's voice informs me I am a liar.

McComas: 11:32. Psyche's two feet are down now resting on my foot and on Dunlap's foot.

McComas: 11:32. Just before Psyche came out of the trance, she drew my hand over, placed it on her stomach, just below the umbilical region and it remained there for possibly 10 seconds.

McComas and *Dunlap:* 11:33. We have broken our control.

The Stenographer (Miss Barbero) reported that she examined and found the Psychic unwell before the sitting and found her unwell after the sitting.

There was nausea and vomiting of the Psychic after the sitting. Sitting closed at 11:35.

(Signed) H. C. McComas,
Knight Dunlap,
R. W. Wood.

While all this was going on in the séance room, a sequence of events was unfolding outside the séances, the theme of which consisted of acute dissatisfaction by Crandon with reference to the conduct and qualifications of two members of the Commission. By way of demonstration that this attitude had nothing of the *ex post facto* element in it, I reproduce the following text of a letter written by Crandon to Walton, in the latter's capacity of Counsel to the A.S.P.R. and Chairman of the Committee on Research of the Society's Trustees. It was dated January 27th, and accordingly antedated the first formal séance as well as any production of dictated notes by the Commission. The full letter, omitting only salutations, etc., reads as follows:

> The first meeting of your Commission of Inquiry with Margery occurred last night. It was unofficial and only with the idea of getting acquainted.
>
> We find, to our astonishment, that Dr. Wood can only hear a whispered voice of a certain intensity and that Dr. Dunlap has not been able to hear a whispered voice since childhood. Both these scientists are distinguished and delightful gentlemen and were it not for the importance of this inquiry to the whole scientific world we should not speak of this impairment. We feel that the whispered voice of Walter, to say nothing of the occasional musical and other audible phenomena, is perhaps the keystone of the mediumship, and we feel little doubt that the whole inquiry will be slowed up or even perhaps be unsatisfactory because of this condition. In any case please make note that we make exception to this condition *before* there has been an official sitting.

With reference to Wood's dictation of 10:53 on January 30th, Crandon points out that the behavior here constituted a clear-cut violation of article 5 of the preliminary agreement. The Crandons likewise claim that the most serious results flowed out of this violation, beginning with the nausea and vomiting *chronicled at the end of the*

record. According to their statement, the catamenia originating out of the séance of the 29th was aggravated on the 30th and remained for seventeen days. During this period the Psychic was in bed for four consecutive days, and she suffered a loss in weight of nineteen pounds. For several days she had persistent crossing of the eyes, violent headache, and other alarming symptoms. No normal diagnosis of her illness could be made.

Against the allegations that they did anything harmful to the Psychic, the Commissioners have vigorously defended themselves. This defence has for the better part taken the direction of a flat denial that she displayed any illness or distress in their presence. In this denial they of course have to meet the equally flat testimony of the written record. A gentleman speaking more or less explicitly in their behalf, on reading the printed proof of the record asked me very pointedly whether I knew positively that this sentence was in the original document. Being in Boston a few days later, I took the trouble to get access to this document, carrying the three holographic signatures of Messrs. McComas, Dunlap and Wood. There can be no slightest question but what it is in its original state, without alteration or addition of any description; and it carries the sentence admitting nausea and vomiting in the séance room. I cannot sufficiently condemn the flagrant departure from recorded facts which is committed when these three "investigators" now deny that there was any visible evidence of ill-being on the Psychic's part; nor the reckless determination to maintain at all costs the hypothesis of fraud, which is seen in this offhand willingness to charge forgery against the Crandons when a clause of the record turns out to be irreconcilable with that hypothesis. To this we return in a later chapter dealing with the Commission's long-belated report.

The Commissioners do not stop with the mere denial that the Psychic was ill in their presence. They display the strongest disbelief that catamenia was present as claimed, overruling in this detail the verdict of their own female secretary who examined the Psychic and found that it was. And of course while they are not in a position to deny that a serious illness ran through the ensuing two weeks, they obviously can, and do, deny that it was caused by any of their actions; and with this, they give more than a hint of their belief that it was brought on by nervous collapse following the realization that her tricks had been found out. They cite the sittings given on February

3rd, 4th and 6th as evidence that there were no immediate ill effects following that of January 30th. Here, of course, they quite ignore the interval between the 30th and the 3rd, sufficiently long for a four-days' prostration; and they point to the interval of almost two weeks between February 6th and the next sitting on the 19th, implying that if the Psychic was ill it was during this interval and from independent causes. The Crandon story of course is that she was prostrated for the days immediately after the 30th; that she rallied and gave three séances despite a bad general state of health; and that it then became clear that she must have a rather extended vacation from sitting.

Speaking indirectly and unofficially on behalf of the Commission, a New York physician suggests that even though the medical men in contact with the case were at loss for a diagnosis in normal terms, he can tentatively supply this. He states that during the late winter of 1925–6 there was prevalent throughout the Eastern states, though falling short of epidemic proportions, a visitation of nervous influenza with certain symptoms suggesting "sleeping sickness"; and he says that it is evident to him from the account of her symptoms that this is what Margery had. I think we may be assured that there was no lack of competence or disinterestedness to make this diagnosis at the time, had it been in accord with the facts; and in this connection I would emphasize that not Crandon alone, but Richardson and Goodall, were in attendance and agreed upon the impossibility of any diagnosis in terms of normal pathology.

We need go into this argument no further than to say that naturally, in view of the Psychic's condition, further Committee sittings were postponed *sine die*, while negotiations were put under way between Crandon, Walton and McComas as to the membership of the Commission. During the course of these negotiations, Crandon prepared a document comprising all his reservations and objections against any of the members of the Commission. This document included the following articles:

1. One Commissioner "has not heard a whisper since childhood."
2. Another "can hear only soft but not sibilant whispers."
3. The Commission went to luncheon with McDougall, the principal critic of the mediumship, before any official sitting, and gave undue credit to what he told them.
4. One of them showed his state of cerebration by inferring that

Walter names the wooden letters by the sounds made as these strike the floor; whereas in fact, aside from the inherent absurdity of this claim, Walter always names them before he throws them out.

5. This article comprised a citation of Wood's unauthorized handling of the teleplasmic rod, with the subsequent condition of the Psychic.

6. (See 11:10 dictation, January 30th.) One of them dictated that a motion of the doughnut corresponded with a motion of the Psychic's head. He then failed to record that the doughnut was immediately levitated and moved in all directions in the air for a considerable period, without any motion of the Psychic's head. Only after Crandon threatened to stop the investigation at once was this second series of motions recorded, with the statement of their apparent independence of the medium's head; and following this, the offending member of the Commission lapsed into what Crandon regarded as a sullen silence for the rest of the evening, making no further contribution to the record except for one report of routine control.

7. In his "Old and New Viewpoints in Psychology," published in St. Louis as recently as 1925, Dunlap had made the following statements with reference to psychical research which, Crandon contended, showed him to be a biased judge, from whom an unprejudiced consideration of the case could not be expected:

> The best combination for investigation in psychical research would be the joint work of a trained psychologist and a Burns detective (p. 92).
>
> In every [psychical] investigation in which a trained psychologist has control, the claims *are not* substantiated (p. 93). [The italics are mine to emphasize that he did not say "have not been," but employed rather a more generalized form of statement.]
>
> In every case in which a competent investigator has been allowed to examine fully into the alleged phenomena of telekinesis, the result has been the discrediting of the medium's claim (p. 97).
>
> The blight of Spiritualism is to be combated primarily by education in simple facts of scientific psychology (p. 112).

It is profitless to go into all the discussion which ensued. It can be adequately summarized with the statement that Crandon finally insisted upon the withdrawal of both Wood and Dunlap, and indicated a complete willingness to go on with McComas. The question of

replacing the objectionable members was discussed; several names were mentioned; but in behalf of none could any endorsement beyond that of McComas be offered. This was not sufficient in Crandon's view; for McComas had sponsored Wood and Dunlap. For any new members, Crandon wanted some verification of McComas's judgment, from some other source. The upshot was that the project for replenishing the Commission languished until the colleges had closed for the summer and the faculties had dispersed.

In the meantime, a new project had been fathered by Walton. When I was appointed Research Officer to the A.S.P.R., it had been the intent to have two Research Officers permanently. Prince resigned his place after I had occupied mine for a month; and no successor had been appointed because no eligible candidate had been found. McComas had a sabbatical half-year coming to him for the fall term of 1926. It was now proposed that he accept a temporary appointment as Research Officer to fill the existing vacancy from July 1st, 1926, until such time in 1927 as he had to return to Princeton; and this project was carried through.

As part of his duties in his new position, McComas carried the responsibility for the Society's work with Margery during the period of his incumbency. He brought into this what appeared to be a most sympathetic attitude to the mediumship, and a complete freedom from the prejudices which had obviously tainted his late colleagues. As evidence of this, there exist numerous letters exchanged between him and Crandon, of which the two following are by all means the most pertinent. From Baltimore, on February 5th, 1926, he wrote the following, the italics being mine:

> I find that I have a hundred and one things to attend to before going back to Princeton. I would much prefer corresponding with you instead of making a trip to Boston for a conference.
>
> I am afraid that you and Mrs. Crandon were disappointed in the sittings of last week. Please do not feel that way about them. *The Commissioners are very genuinely interested in the phenomena. It seems to me that our first sittings were just about what we all really wanted. We saw a variety of phenomena and have got somewhat oriented to the problems.*
>
> I sincerely hope that Mrs. Crandon will soon be quite well again.

On April 23rd, 1926, writing from Princeton, McComas produced a more important document, clearly demonstrating the great divide

existing between himself and at least one of his former colleagues. Parts of the letter revolving about suggested new personnel and procedure need not interest us. But the following paragraphs are of extreme permanent importance:

> I was very much pleased to get your letter of April 20th, and to learn of your kindly feeling toward me and willingness to go ahead with our investigation.
>
> Dr. Wood's conduct is a matter of keen regret to me. His association with the Harvard men seemed to give him an attitude which he certainly did not have when I first invited him to join the committee. His attitude toward the committee was about as inconsiderate as his attitude toward you. We could not get hold of him for conferences or to make plans. He came late to the sittings and left in haste to catch his bus. I constantly hoped that he would change his attitude and make some contributions to the investigation through his profound knowledge of photography. Since our last sitting I have written him twice and have received no replies. I shall make no further effort to have him coöperate with us in any way. Inasmuch as I was responsible for inviting Dr. Wood into the committee, *I want to apologize for his conduct, both at the sittings and when enjoying your hospitality. Doctor, I am really very much chagrined and mortified. Some of the things that occurred annoyed me greatly, but I felt the wisest policy was to ignore them.*[6]

It will now be seen that the Commission was hopelessly moribund, and that the most one could hope from it would be a report of some sort. But there were difficulties involved in getting this. One member of the Commission was going on with the mediumship, and would hardly be able to attach his name to a report of any sort pending the outcome of his further exposure. The other two members were in process of adding to and modifying their records, and pending the completion in their minds and on paper of this trick, so familiar to one who has followed the mediumship, they could of course not issue the final interpretation of their observations which a report would imply. The full extent of this campaign by Wood and Dunlap to make their

[6] These italics are mine. They refer to conduct and attitudes by Wood, in the séance room and in the Crandon house outside the séance room, which it has not seemed worth while to describe in any detail but which Crandon found very much out of place. That his view was shared at the time by McComas is something which we shall wish to remember at a later point in our narrative.—J. M. B.

observations fit into the preconceived ideas which Dunlap was known and Wood was now suspected to have had; the course of McComas's further contact with the case; in fact, all the factors leading to a situation where a belated report was finally possible—these must all go over into our second volume, awaiting the moment when we reach them in the chronological development of the case.[7] We may therefore leave the Commission here, divided against itself to the point where one of its members apologizes to the Crandons for the conduct of the others and consents to the elimination of both of them from his further work with the mediumship.

[7] See open reference No. 15, Vol. 2.

CHAPTER XXXII

The Psychical Activation of the Luminous Paint

By the Editor

With the séance of January 14th, 1926, held as usual in the glass cabinet, Walter presented perhaps the most unexpected and the most surprising of all the phenomena that he has invented since the beginning of the mediumship. The Psychic was lashed in the glass cabinet, quite in the usual way; and she was in trance. We may let the record speak for itself:

> He then called for the big megaphone, which has the zinc-sulfide paint on the upper and lower margins; but this paint had not been activated for this sitting. The megaphone was therefore entirely invisible in the dark. In asking for the megaphone, Walter produced the following parody on a familiar verse:
>
> Backward, turn backward, O Time in your flight
> And bring me a megaphone just for to-night.
> I am so weary of yelling and squealing,
> I'm sure that a megaphone would be appealing.
> I am so tired of cages and wires
> I welcome all men by calling them liars.

Walter was told that the megaphone was black and that it would do no good to levitate it because we could not see it. Hill said: "Walter, the paint is not vitalized." To this Walter replied: "Why shouldn't I 'vittalize' it," mispronouncing the word as indicated, with humorous effect. This word seemed to please him, and he used it, it seemed, a hundred times in the next half hour.

The megaphone was placed on the floor in the right front corner of the open cabinet. We first saw it when what was evidently the upper end suddenly became luminous. At this time the megaphone apparently was horizontal, just below the level of the Psychic's head. Crandon had made a bet with Walter that Walter could not light up the megaphone. Now the big end became slowly but definitely luminous, very bright; and at one time we could see apparently Walter's fingers holding on to this zone of luminous paint. He thus "vittalized" both ends of the megaphone three or four times, indulging at the same time in the liveliest telekinetic

motions of the same, talking all the time to the megaphone as though it were intelligent. This vitalizing of the luminous paint through a means not to us apparent was a new phenomenon.

This is not, as one might at first thought hope, that long-sought ideal of the psychical researcher: a phenomenon which is necessarily valid because it could not occur other than through genuine psychic means. It does constitute a good attempt at such self-verification; but if we mean what we say when we speak of the absolute impossibility of production by normal means, it does not quite hit the bulls-eye. The fact is, the luminous paint can be made to glow by exposure to any source of electro-magnetic waves of higher order than those given off by itself—which is to say, of shorter wave-length. This would of course include the ultraviolet, and would give the skeptic full license to play with the idea of small, easily concealed flashlights with a heavy ultraviolet component in their beams—this presumably being a matter of the lens rather than of the filament. It is also a fact that if the luminous paint be clandestinely compounded or diluted with one or another chemical—anthracene, for example—its reaction-speed to ultraviolet exposure will be greatly quickened. In the same way one might approximate fraudulently the instantaneous fade-out of February 6th (see record, below) and later dates; since these chemicals glow only while under actual exposure to the invisible short-wave energy. So far as comes within the knowledge of any authority that I can cite, these suggestions exhaust the possibilities of fraud. So if one be willing to postulate an ingeniously concealed source of ultra-violet energy on the Psychic's person or in the walls of the room, one can make a stab at explaining the present phenomena on normal grounds. This explanation, I hope, will make an even larger demand upon the reader's credulity than the hypothesis of universal confederacy, or any of the other fantastic notions that have to be brought into play to explain away the generality of Margery's phenomena. If I am right in my estimate of the relative degree of phantasy, the present manifestation brings us further along the road to categorical proof of validity than we have heretofore come. But inasmuch as the Psychic, in the absence of all control and observation of any sort, could obviously prosecute the frauds outlined in this paragraph, we do not have the rock-ribbed, automatically valid psychical phenomenon, genuine because it could not occur through normal means under any conditions whatever.

Walter did not make his new accomplishment a séance-room com-

monplace, but he did repeat it from time to time. On January 26th, in the presence of the new-born Committee of the A.S.P.R., he did it, as a reference to page 370 will indicate; and here again the Psychic was in trance. But it was the doughnut that was used for the stunt, rather than the megaphone. Again on February 3rd, "the non-luminous doughnut was now put on the table and Walter made it glow from an unseen source of light on request." As on January 26th, this was done in the old cabinet, without the lashed controls; but unlike that occasion, the psychic activation of the paint now came with the Psychic conscious and normal. This date also appears to mark the establishment in Crandon's mind of the assumption that Walter's psychic means of activation was parallel with our normal means, involving exposure of the paint to an invisible source of light, of ultra-violet or even more occult character.

The séance of February 4th added something to the new manifestation, again in the old cabinet and with the Psychic normal:

> The Dingwall bell-box painted with zinc-sulfide paint but wholly unactivated and invisible was now put on the table. Now on request Walter made it glow brightly as from some unseen source of light. It was interesting to observe that he could make it glow when an observer's hand was held horizontally two inches above it. In other words, such a hand so placed did not screen off whatever it was that activated the paint.

A repetition of this, with further trimmings, was offered on the 6th; and I think there is a large suggestion here that the activating process is not one of exposure to light or pseudo-light. One might perhaps think of it as a chemical or pseudo-chemical effect; or even as an effect of pure ideo-dynamics. It really is no more absurd to think of Walter's successfully willing the paint to become luminous than it is to think of his having at his disposal apparatus sufficiently physical to activate it by means substantially like those we employ. The record that provokes this speculation reads as follows:

> Dingwall's bell-box, the top of which is painted with zinc-sulfide paint, was put on the table; but it had not been activated by exposure to white light. Nevertheless, on request Walter was able to make it glow *and become dark again* at will. Then at request, Walter traced a "7" and an "H" with his terminal,[1] and made this glow so that we could read it.

[1] On the table or on the dark zinc-sulfide paint?—J. M. B.

The italics are mine; and the passage italicized lends support to the speculations immediately preceding this citation. If we assume that the control is adequate to exclude the use of the ultra-violet flash-light (the record being not sufficiently explicit about the conditions of this séance to make this other than an assumption for the present date), the fact that the light can be made instantly to fade out and fade in at Walter's command seems to deny equally a pseudo-normal mechanism working through some psychical instrumentality. It is also of interest to note that on the present occasion the Psychic was in the old cabinet, and without trance; "catamenia was present and we should not ordinarily have sat; but Dr. Holmes' unexpected visit made it seem desirable, even though the phenomena under these conditions can never be brilliant." Catamenia is one of the several conditions that often impel Walter to resort to trance for phenomena ordinarily produced with the Psychic normal; but on this occasion the sitting was entirely in the old cabinet and without trance.

On the 19th, with the Psychic lashed in the glass cabinet and entranced, "he now called for the big megaphone, the paint on which had not been activated. He promptly made this glow." On the 25th, in the old cabinet and without trance, "he made the top of the Dingwall bell-box, which was covered with zinc-sulfide paint but not activated, *glow and fade at the request of the sitters.*" The italics, which are mine, mark a new departure, and seem to justify the comment of the record, "beautifully done." On March 4th, again in the old cabinet without trance, the test of February 4th was carried a little further when "Walter now made the top of the Dingwall bell-box glow on request, and even with Van Arsdale's hand placed flat on it." On the 5th, this was repeated: "the Dingwall bell-box was put on the table, Eddy's hand placed upon it, and Walter made the non-vitalized top glow nevertheless." This, too, was in the old cabinet without trance. Again on the 8th, and under the same conditions, Sawyer's hand was placed upon the top of the bell-box and this was activated despite the obstruction. And on the 12th and 21st this was done with an unnamed sitter officiating.

The record for March 22d informs us that "Walter now made the unactivated top of the Dingwall bell-box glow on request, and even made it glow when Swift had his hand down on it. Then Walter completely eclipsed the box top and exposed it alternately again and again." One wonders whether there was a variation from previous

technique here which justified the use of this new word. It is conceivable that heretofore the activated paint had faded out, not instantly but very rapidly; and not by dark encroachment from any one direction but by actual fading over its entire surface at once; and that on the present occasion, the dark encroachment was seen rather than the uniform fading. It is also conceivable that what had previously been described as fading was in reality eclipsing; and that the divergence from the norm which would be implied in a true fading out *at speed* rather than with the normal slowness is beyond Walter's reach.

On the 27th and under Overstreet's hand the psychic activation was carried out. Further speculation as to the matter of eclipsing vs. true fading is provoked by the record for April 10th, which tells us:

> Walter now made the unactivated Dingwall bell-box glow under the hands of two sitters, then made part of it glow, then totally eclipsed it. This would seem to depend on some source of ultra-violet light controlled by Walter.

The record for April 15th[5] chronicles the psychic activation, and repeats the assumption of the one immediately preceding. On the 17th he did it again. On the 25th, he did it in my presence and under conditions permitting tests of a rigor and a range not previously attained; all this is described in the complete séance record (pp. 408–9). And with this climax, we may well elect to regard the psychical activation of the luminous paint as holding nothing more of novelty for us; so that its further occurrence becomes a matter for mere citation by title in Chapter XXXVII.

---

[5] Crandon's own record; not Dudley's record of pp. 397 ff. Dudley verifies from memory that the activation occurred and was omitted from his record inadvertently. —J. M. B.

CHAPTER XXXIII

Margery and Other Psychics

From the Séance Records

Certain episodes of the *M. M.* book, together with the Foss sitting of September 28th, 1925,[1] carry the large suggestion that when Margery sits in the presence of another medium or another person of mediumistic trend, the results are usually interesting. On two evenings in March, 1926, this condition was met; and the resultant records are here presented without further comment.

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, March 9, 1926. In this sitting the active psychic was Dr. Gordon, an amateur psychic from New York. He sat in front of the old cabinet, which was provided with black curtains. He was back to the cabinet. There were present, to left: Mrs. Baker, Richardson, Hill, Crandon, Mrs. Richardson, Reilly, Margery, and the Psychic, Dr. Gordon, again.

Trance came on within a few minutes and directly Gordon's chair was moved with much noise back into the cabinet. Then from the cabinet came an unintelligible sentence which Reilly said came from "The Dweller on the Threshold." Then another more or less muffled voice came announcing itself as "Dr. Newman." This voice said that he had given a sermon in 1901 which he wished now to correct in view of greater knowledge and he then went on for about twenty minutes with a sermon. In the meantime as trance went on, an occasional expressive and low whistle was heard from Walter, apparently within the cabinet. Shortly after this a small basket came flying across the room from the direction of the cabinet, just missing Crandon's head.

When the sermon was done there was an immediate loud crash on the Dingwall bell-box, whereupon Walter said: "Round one in favor of Dr. Newman." Walter went on whistling more or less cheerfully and said amongst other things that he was greatly pleased with this meeting. "Getting lots of force, thank you kindly."

Then there came through a lisping falsetto voice from the cabinet in which Gordon still was. Voice was recognized by Reilly

[1] See page 82.

as that of "Elsie." Then began an exchange of remarks between Elsie and Walter that held us in side-splitting convulsions of mirth for twenty minutes. This had to be suppressed, however, for fear of offending the feelings of Mr. Reilly. Walter said: "Speak up, Elsie, you seem to have some difficulty. Apparently you were all finished but your palate." Elsie replied: "Walter is a bad boy. I shall have to kiss him." To which Walter replied: "Elsie this is so sudden, spare me. Now, Elsie, make some lights. Don't keep your light under a bushel or at least move the bushel." To this Elsie replied: "How can I make a light if you stay in the way." Finally Elsie got tired and said she had to go. To which Walter commented: "Would'st break my heart?" Then Elsie was silent for a time and somebody said: "Elsie is supposed to have lived as a child about one hundred years ago." "I thought so," said Walter. "That's the kind of language I am talking to her. Elsie, art thou croakedst? Stick it thou out a little longer."

After a time Gordon announced that there were a number of boys present and gave names such as Luther, Martin, Philip, Mark, John and a few others. Then various whispers could be heard coming from the cabinet in which there was no one, both Psychics being outside the cabinet. There were apparently several distinct overlaps of the voices and the whistling while both Psychics were talking. The curtains of the empty cabinet bulged out, as with a great wind, several times. Some sitters thought they could make out three whispers simultaneously and another observed that two whispers overlapped Gordon's voice. Then Walter and apparently two others whistled a kind of trio, Walter keeping time by beating on the Dingwall bell-box very successful blasts of near music. Walter finally said: "I think we will have to go now. The plank is greased."

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, March 14, 1926, in the old cabinet. Walter came through promptly and talked for five minutes and after that was not heard from until the end.

Shortly Graham went into partial and after five minutes into complete trance. Crandon received for about fifteen minutes a vague luminous impression as of a human figure standing between him and Graham. Walter was asked about it and said, "Yes, that was me." There were distinct cold breezes coming from cabinet all through the sitting. Graham was considerably exhausted by the experience. It seemed apparent that Walter had discovered in him a physical medium.

CHAPTER XXXIV

Four Séance Records of Outstanding Character

By E. E. Dudley and the Editor

The séance of April 15th, 1926, stood out in the judgment of Crandon as something quite out of the ordinary routine, on account of the presence of Richards. This gentleman is from London; and Crandon's record says of him: "sent by Dingwall." It was taken for granted by the Crandons that Richards had been specifically sent by Dingwall to examine the current phenomena and to report back to him. This doubtless was an exaggeration, especially in view of the fact that at this date Dingwall must have been in some degree aware of the impending parting of the ways between himself and the S.P.R., and of his own resultant withdrawal from psychical research. But he *was* an acquaintance of Dingwall, and Dingwall *did* introduce him to the Crandons and so *was* responsible for his presence. The temptation to regard his sitting as of extra importance was an obvious and natural one. This attitude found expression mainly in an arrangement whereby, during the séance, Dudley was to draw up notes on which he would base a séance record approximating the character of my own. The dictaphone was not used; Dudley made his notes partly in the dark and partly in the intervals of light; partly in longhand and partly in shorthand. The record which he drew up and signed turns out to be almost a verbatim transcript of these notes. In the accuracy of detail and the preservation of the séance sequence it of course is vastly superior to Crandon's memorandum, drawn up as usual on the following morning; and I give it in full. In order to preserve the better its documentary character, I follow Dudley's style in designating sitters, etc., by initials, as follows: Richards = R, Sterling = S, Walter = W, Mrs. Stinson = Mrs. S, Crandon = C, "light" = Lt, E. E. D. = Dudley, west = w, east = e. He designates the medium "Psyche," a name often applied to her by her friends.

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, April 15th, 1926. Sitters: Psyche, Mr. Richards, Dr. C., E. E. D., Mr. Spencer(?).[1] Mrs. Stinson outside circle.

[1] Actually Sterling. This parenthesis, and the two others below, are part of Dudley's original record.—J. M. B.

R. and S. examined VCO in white light, also bell-box. Wire ties applied in white light. R. tied wrist wires and S. tied the ankle ditto. S. not expert and twisted the wires together 3/4 turns before making knots. Psyche secured in glass cabinet after searchlight inspection by R. and S. R. tied ankles and right hand to eye-bolts and S. tied left hand. Ties finished at 9:15.

W. came through after a few minutes and asked R., following introductions, to pick out four letters, put them in a basket and place basket on shelf. Done. (Omission: When fastening Psyche, R. secured collar about neck and examined knots in white light.) Continuing: W. knocked basket off shelf twice and spilled letters. R. replaced on shelf. The third time W. told R. to put in new letters and anything else he pleased. Done. R. put basket on shelf, and very shortly W. threw out a letter, saying that it was a "C" or a "G," but he couldn't tell which. Taken by S. He then threw out another, a "Y." Taken by S.; correct. Then said there was a "D" on the shelf, and threw out a "note-book" which R. said was correct. R. retrieved the "D." O. K. S. reported "C." O. K.

Luminous basket placed on shelf by R., after inspection. W. attempts levitation and drops it behind Psyche to her left. Retrieved and replaced by R. W. levitates it high above, to both sides, well behind Psyche. Touches roof of cabinet and also taps glass at her right. Hand fastenings checked by R. and S. during levitation. W. drops basket to Psyche's left. R. retrieves it. S. takes place near Mrs. S. R. puts basket on shelf, locks cabinet door and stands in front of and controls C. and D. W. levitates basket and drops it at Psyche's left again. R. unlocks door, retrieves and replaces basket, locks door, but there is no further levitation. Psyche brought out of trance, collar removed by R. in white light after examination of ties.

In red light VCO put on shelf; inspected by R., who tested tube and mouthpiece separately, inserted mouthpiece in tube, placed mouthpiece in Psyche's mouth and returned to circle. R. controlled hands and mouth of C., while S. controlled ditto of D. At R.'s request, W. whistled Yankee Doodle. At C.'s suggestion he repeated: "Live thou each day as though you had a p-a-s-s-t!" Unusually well done. Mouthpiece removed and again tested by R. in red light. Psyche cut loose by R. and S. after thorough inspection of ties in white light.

Sitting continued in old cabinet. Order: Psyche, R., D., S., Dr. C.

Bell-box on table. S. picks up and turns 360 degrees. Rings at start and finish. R. picks up and it rings a little longer. R. picks up again, and, while it rings intermittently, walks to bookcase, turns around, returns, hands it to D., who lifts it high, turns and brings it down, handing it to S., who turns around and replaces on table. Intermittent ringing throughout, but continued after placing on table. Sparking very noticeable. R. turns back flapper and feels around contacts; replaces flapper and ringing immediately commences. Removed by R. for later examination.

Scales placed on table by D.[1a] Balance without weights in red. R. puts 4 on w. pan. Dark . . . Lt.; pans balance. Dark . . . Lt.; pans balance. R. and S. pass hands under pans, around scales, between Psyche and C. and scales. No effect. Dark. R. removes weights, puts one on e. pan. Unbalanced. Dark . . . Lt.; balanced. W. pan off by R. Unbalanced. Dark . . . Lt.; still unbalanced. R. puts apparently empty pan back into w. frame and scales unbalance toward w. with one weight in e. pan (pan had been on platform opposite side of scales from Psyche). Dark. W. tells R. to remove w. pan, keeping it level. Light. R. does and e. goes down. R. replaces pan and scales unbalance toward w. Dark . . . Light; balanced; W. tells R. to remove either pan. He takes e. pan with weight in it. Dark . . . Lt.; balanced; R. replaces e. pan. *No change in balance.* Static, especially at w. end. Dark . . . Lt.; slightly unbalanced toward w. or "light end." W. told S. to press down on either end to feel force. Done on e. end; w. end rises. Dark. R. puts finger on e. pan and feels unbalanced force. Dark . . . Lt.; S. picks up scale unit about 15″ while R. presses down on "empty" w. pan and feels unbalanced force. Later estimated as 2–5 oz. Scales removed by D.

Crandon's record is identical with the above in all essentials, save that at the end it chronicles the activation by Walter of the non-vitalized surface of the Dingwall bell-box. Dudley verifies orally that this occurred and was inadvertently omitted from his record through his concentration upon other things. Crandon's record, of course, is neither so detailed nor so sequential as Dudley's, and we may well save the space which it would occupy.

Dudley, I take it, is amply conscious of the great inferiority of the recording procedure which he here practiced, as compared with dictaphonic recording. In my judgment, this inferiority is so great that the record drawn up subsequently from memory is more valuable than

[1a] This paragraph looks forward to Chap. XXXVI.

the one by holographic notes made during the séance. The difference between the demand upon one's conscious attention made by talking and by writing is a matter which every person must have observed; one can talk continuously while driving a car through heavy traffic, while even if there were some device whereby one could write without removing one's hands from the wheel, it is evident that one could not write and drive simultaneously. For some of the European mediumships, with their long intervals of inaction between isolated, simple, phenomena, the holographic record impresses me as feasible; with Margery's rapid-fire continuity of action I should never attempt it. If for any reason I am unable to make my Margery records by dictation in the séance room, I shall always make them by memory out of it. Dudley obviously disagrees with this judgment; and with the one reservation that his record must represent to considerable degree the observation of others rather than of himself, I will grant that he makes a better showing in behalf of the possibility of simultaneously observing and writing down than I should have supposed to be possible.

The one question which the preceding discussion leaves open is: why not use the dictaphone, as I had done during the preceding summer? When I first saw Dudley's record, it raised this question in my own mind. At a very early date the question was answered.

It will be realized that I had not been in Boston since October, 1925. I had not seen the glass cabinet itself nor the procedure of the standardized séance; I had not observed the revival of the scales, nor the new trick of psychic activation of the luminous paint, nor any of the other current phenomena or the current improvements in old phenomena. On April 23rd and 24th I was in Boston for the purpose of catching up with the case; and in the séances of these two dates the entire standardized procedure was twice gone through with in my presence.

It had been my supposition that I would make dictaphone records for these two séances, and as soon as I arrived in Lime Street I moved toward clearing the dictaphone for action and insuring the presence in the séance room of a supply of blank records. This move was at once checked by the active opposition of Crandon, who made it clear that he was strongly hostile to the use of the dictaphone in the séance room. He finds this procedure " complicated," without being able to show me wherein the complications lie. He objects to the noise of dictation, which in my judgment is no more objectionable than that of the séance-

room conversation and the music. He insists that the dictation, done by the chief observer present, distracts the attention of that observer from the more vital business of observation; whereas I have recorded my own judgment that it does nothing of the sort to any serious degree. We remain permanently unable to agree, however; and the point is one of those upon which Crandon's opinions are so firmly fixed that it were profitless to attempt active opposition. The result is that the dictaphone is not used any more when I go to Lime Street. In its absence, where Dudley and others are inclined toward holographic notes, I lean entirely toward the record from subsequent memory, drawn up as soon after the séance as possible. It loses the detail and the sequence of the holographic record; but what it loses here it gains in giving the recorder a much more careful and detailed fund of observation. What one can remember from this fund is more useful than what one can jot down at the moment of superficial observation. With this explanation, I pass to my records for April 23rd and 24th. Contrary to my usual custom, they are drawn in the first person:

23rd: Circle: Margery, Sampson, H. Libbey, Crandon, A. Libbey, Bird, Margery again. Outside circle, T. Hyde.

Above order applies to first part of sitting, held in glass cabinet with all formalities. The wires were put in place about the Psychic's wrists and ankles, and about the screw-eyes, by the Libbeys, Sampson, and myself. I examined with care all I did not myself do, and found all thoroughly O. K. I put the collar on and attended to all details of its tying. With chair in initial (and identical final) position, the cord running from the collar was so tight that it gave a musical note when struck; and there was no audible or other indication of the chair's being moved during the sitting. At end of sitting, a deep furrow could be plainly felt in each ankle, where the rubber had bitten in; and it was with considerable difficulty that scissors were sufficiently to be inserted under both ankle and wrist wires to cut them.

[There here ensues some 700 words of description of the glass cabinet and the wire control, which I saw on this evening for the first time. Since this material is fully duplicated elsewhere in the current volume, it may be omitted in this place.]

On the present occasion, the knots, etc., in the wire were examined at the end of the glass-cabinet part of the sitting, and each pronounced undisturbed by the sitter who had originally tied it. The rope to the collar was so tight that at the end of the trance period Walter stated he was unable to bring her out of trance

unless and until it was released; so a white flashlight, shielded to prevent shining in her eyes, was handled by Crandon in such way as to enable me to unlock and unbuckle the collar. The tie of rope on to the collar is permanent, similarly with the tie of the rope to the staple in the rear wall; the ensemble lying on the cabinet floor when not in use.

The first "act" consisted in the identification, by Walter, of wooden letters placed in the cabinet by me. These letters are about four inches high, an inch thick, and an inch in section through each limb. There are numerals from 1 to 9 as well as all letters, some in duplicate or triplicate. I selected four in the dark, handling them with two fingers and at one point of the wood so as to insure against knowledge by myself. All four were placed in a large, dark basket which I, on Walter's instructions, put in the front of the cabinet at the Psychic's right. There was complete hand control throughout the circle, but not hand contact with the medium, Walter stating that under the conditions this drained rather than aided her. The end sitters therefore placed one hand above and one under the controlling hand of the neighbor; and save for the release of my right hand for purposes of executing Walter's requests, or of Crandon completely to leave his seat for the same purpose, this hand control of the sitters was uninterrupted throughout, according to the statements of all involved.

Of the four letters first given, Walter made identifications, throwing each letter out on to the floor *after*[2] naming it. These were then laid aside in separate places for subsequent check. Three had been named correctly; in a fourth instance what Walter took for a K turned out to be an M. Crandon makes the point that I "could not" correct the error in the dark. He should say "did not"; or "did not try to." The fact was that on the following night I was easily able to distinguish between K's and M's. It is my recollection that I made the correction, mentally, at the time; but of this I am not certain—I may have put the block in my pocket without any examination. The mistake would seem to indicate a pseudo-tactile rather than any other type of perception.

Sitters were now called upon to contribute objects to be identified. H. Libbey put in the basket a cigarette holder; A. Libbey a half dollar, I a small comb, Sampson a box of lozenges which were life-savers in all but name. Walter identified the latter very completely in terms of the description which has just been given, stating specifically that they were not life-savers, after having made a pun

[2] See page 377.

on that name and likened them to the objects in question. The cigarette holder he said was like a pencil but not a pencil, then he named it correctly. My comb and Libbey's coin were in the basket at the same time; Walter identified each correctly, giving the denomination of the coin, which was important, since I knew from hearing that it was a coin which Libbey had deposited; and he attributed the coin to Libbey and the comb to me. It is my impression that something was said indicating the sequence of actions, *i.e.*, my deposit of my comb, a remark indicating that I had made my deposit, then Libbey's audible deposit of the coin; but of this I am not wholly certain. In any event, the attribution in distinction from the identification was attempted again on the following night; see pp. 406–7, 435–6, 440–1.

The next episode consisted in telekinesis of the small basket, touched at three points on the handle with luminous paint. The shelf was called for—a portable affair that fits into the cabinet in front of the Psychic and does service in lieu of a table. Crandon put this in place and returned to his place and to control. At Walter's instructions the basket was put on the shelf by Sampson, to whom I handed it. He laid it on its side, and it began to rock back and forth. At first each excursion carried it out of balance and it fell to the floor. Finally Sampson found a position for it in which this did not occur, and it swung back and forth nicely, rotating on what would have been its vertical axis had it been standing erect. The visible result was a dipping first one way and then the other of the luminous spots. After a few dips, Walter called for red light; Crandon was slow; and by the time we had the light the action had ceased. Several repetitions were more fortunate, the basket oscillating for some time after the light went on. The Psychic was dimly visible, the basket much better so. The light was competent only to prove that the basket was really there and moving; for exclusion of fraud we must fall back upon the control, which would most certainly prevent the attachment of any mechanism, even so simple a one as a silk thread. It should perhaps be specified that the motion was "projected out of darkness into light"; *i.e.*, that it started in darkness and continued after the light came on. In each case it damped and died out with fair promptness; Crandon's count of 14 seconds for one episode surely includes the portion in darkness.

As a minor variation, the identification of letters known to the sitters was now attempted. I got two letters and passed them to Libbey, Jr., and to Sampson. They were K and Q, and so identified, silently, by each of us. Walter named them correctly; he

and Crandon were in some hope that the sitters would not have agreed among themselves. These letters, like the prior ones, were tossed out of the cabinet on to the floor only after they had been named. The earlier ones were tossed out the open front (the door being open), on Sampson's side. The present two were thrust each out of one of the handholes, with considerable difficulty in finding a passage, of course.

At this point, consultation between Walter and Crandon determined upon the voice machine as the next step. The Psychic was accordingly brought out of trance, after the collar had been released as indicated above. The hands and feet remained lashed during the voice-machine episode.

The VCO demonstration went off brilliantly. Prior test in the other room had satisfied the new sitters of the fatuity of trying to beat the new, enlarged mouthpiece.[3] I blew through the mouthpiece from the butt end before and after to prove its ôperativeness; and through the tube moving the floats to prove that this was in order; this indirection is necessary since one may not put in one's mouth the mouthpiece which the Psychic is about to put in hers. All mouths of eligible suspects (Crandon, Bird, Hyde) were controlled by one of the strangers during the actual demonstration. I inserted the mouthpiece in Margery's mouth and removed it at the end. She blew the floats into position, held them there, and Walter whistled and spoke brilliantly, for two minutes or more. There was no false start or accidental collapse of any sort; the whole thing went off smoothly with no hitch at all. No slightest unsteadiness of the floats during the demonstration.

The Psychic was now cut loose after all appropriate examination of the knots, etc.; and we moved to the old cabinet. Here the order, clockwise, ran Margery, Sampson, Bird; Hyde and the two Libbeys in an order not clearly recalled; Crandon, Margery. SA bell-box on table rang spontaneously two or three times in the dark; it had been examined by one of the Libbeys before the séance, though a bit perfunctorily. Red light ringing in the hands of sitters was the next order, and was done with success. First Sampson handled it, and it rang almost continuously, with one or two sharp breaks, from a second or two after he picked it up until some seconds after he had set it down and the light had gone out.

In the next red light interval one of the Libbeys handled the box; handed it to the other, who handed it to Hyde, who handed it to me. I took it over to the bookcase and returned and set it down

[3] See page 275.

on the table; I and at least one other turned completely around while holding it. All this occurred in the one long period of red light, and as before, the bell pealed continuously; no hit and miss, no short ringing, but one long peal, quite constant in duration and intensity save for one or two sharp, clean breaks; and ringing into the darkness after being set down on the table. On both occasions I was unable, because of angles and distance, to see the initial depression of the board or the quiver accompanying a break in the ringing. While carrying the box, I felt very plainly the vibrations of the ringing bell. Sampson now lifted the box to verify that it does not ring automatically when thus disturbed. It gave no slightest symptoms of ringing.

The scales [38a]—Comstock's old No. 4 outfit, which has never been taken away from Lime Street—was now put on the table. It was not on the tumblers as formerly, but this issue is met by the fact that it was brought to the table anew for this episode, and moved somewhat by me after it had been placed. Everything done was projected out of darkness into light, and projected back again before the psychic influence went out of action. I do not regard this as a great disadvantage under the present conditions and with the present performance, but merely record it as a fact. It means, of course, that the red light would come on to find the scales in a supernormal state of balance or unbalance in which they would remain until after the light went out again. The episodes were:

One-to-nothing load (the same checkers as weights that were formerly used) passage from dynamic to static balance. That is, the unevenly weighted pans were oscillating up and down, without touching the platform, when the light came on; and this action damped out until they came to rest at approximately equal level. Same load, same action; but sitters were instructed to explore thoroughly on all sides of apparatus by sweeping of arms as well as under pans with pencils. Nothing found and no effect upon the manifestation.

Same load, same action. Sampson under instructions removed the empty pan on his side, and the other crashed, without dismantling anything. Sampson examined pan and empty cradle. Against orders, through misunderstanding, he turned upside down the pan which he had off the scales; and Crandon expected to see normal action after this pan was replaced. Replacement of the pan, however, was followed by instant resumption of the supernormal balance, showing that nothing had been " spilled out " of it.

[38a] Again anticipating Chapter XXXVI.

Same load and same action, but with the rôles of the pans reversed, the checker being now on the west instead of the east pan.

Five-to-nothing load; same action, with examination during occurrence as in the second episode with the scales.

At this point the victrola began to run slowly and squawk fearfully. It developed that the rubber friction wheel was badly worn, and reduced practically to a mass of jelly. This was not known to any sitter, however. Walter made no claims, implicit or explicit, about the stoppage; but he remarked that he had to go anyhow, and went promptly. It struck 10:30 within a few seconds of his good night. It is stated that this is regular, that he always "beats it" sufficiently before 10:30 to beat the striking clocks, but no earlier than is necessary to do so. This reminds me strongly of Cartheuser's séances, wherein the control tells what time it is as he is about to go. (See open reference No. 16 in Vol. 2.)

24th: Circle: Margery, Dudley, N. Gray, Miss Carpenter, Crandon, Bird (at Margery's left). Outside circle, behind Bird: Mrs. Stinson. Sitting held entirely in glass cabinet.

Following the gesture of the previous evening, it was decided by Crandon to seek Walter's consent to a fairly elaborate test in identification plus attribution of objects. For this purpose, several sitters placed each a single object in the basket. I contributed an ashtray from the bookroom; Mrs. Stinson an old penknife which she believed and Margery disbelieved to have belonged to Walter; Gray a leather wallet or case, flat and obviously empty or containing a modicum of papers; Dudley a small barrette; and while I saw all these items go into the basket, Crandon, quite without intention of secrecy, slipped in without my knowledge a wooden clothespin which had been used at the Harvard sittings.

The basket containing these items was put by me in the front corner of the glass cabinet, at the psychic's right, all the lashings having been duly seen to, for the most part by Dudley and me. The rope from collar to back of cabinet was not quite so taut as the night before; all the points of tying were wholly satisfactory, and were adequately inspected by Dudley and me, before and after. Trance came on within a minute or at most two, as had been the case the night before.

The basket was handled considerably, and apparently with some degree of roughness. The ashtray was identified, but attributed to Mrs. Stinson, Walter making a few sarcastic remarks to the general effect that Ma shouldn't help herself to the furnishings of the house, that she had been drinking and now she was smoking, etc.,

etc. Her puzzled reception of these remarks made it evident that she didn't know what Walter was talking about, and he dropped the ashtray for the moment without attempting any correction. He passed to the clothespin and identified it as having to do with the Harvard boys; and he attributed it to me, scolding humorously that I should bring the Harvard atmosphere in with me. He did not make it at once clear that the object was a clothespin; and not knowing what he was talking about, I was probably unable to reply to his remarks without betraying that something was again wrong. Ultimately the direct statement was made that the article was a clothespin, and Crandon spoke up to verify this; its attribution to him followed, I should think naturally and normally. The barrette was next dealt with; and with conspicuous success. It was described as "something from a lady's hair, but not a comb," which impressed us all as a very happy statement from a man, who might very likely not know it by its exact name. And it was attributed explicitly and without any indication's having been thrown out, to Dudley. Mrs. Stinson now spoke up and asked Walter what else he found in the basket and didn't he recognize it, hadn't he seen it somewhere before, etc., and presently in response to this demand he claimed the knife as his own.

Walter conversed a bit about the demonstration just attempted, which had been very frankly on an experimental basis. He said that objects of some degree of personal association ought to be used, rather than mere random objects contributed from nowhere in particular by individuals. We therefore repeated the experiment: I contributed my cardboard case with three automobile licenses, Gray a silver card case, rather thick, curved to fit a pocket, and containing three cards; and Dudley a trick hairpin invented and manufactured by himself, which has a short, central tine between the two regular legs, and which, on seeing it later in the light, I thought would offer extraordinary difficulties of identification by any tactile or pseudo-tactile process.

Walter first handled what I took to be my own contribution but what turned out to be Gray's. He identified it as a card-case, with something in it--cards—two of them—no, three. He attributed it to me, and in the light of my case and its three cards I acknowledged it, asking Walter to proceed with the attempt to read what was on the cards. Walter said they were engraved cards, which was the fact but which of course I took to be wrong; and after dropping them momentarily, he returned to them to read my name in full—J. Malcolm Bird—on them, which of course was wrong and a product of the erroneous attribution. He identified,

described with complete accuracy, and attributed to Dudley the trick hairpin. Then he picked up the cardboard case, but abandoned it without dealing satisfactorily with it.

It might be well to chronicle that on the previous evening, as he instructed us to put objects in the basket for identification, he said: "and for God's sake, put in something besides penknives. Everybody that comes into this room has a penknife, Birdie; I've identified thousands of them." Further and of decided importance in view of the closeness of the Psychic's bonds: the half dollar was fumbled in the attempt to return it, and it lay on the floor of the cabinet for some time. *But later, Walter picked it up, and returned it in the smaller basket.*

The next episode on the 24th, was the identification of letters unknown to the sitters. I put four of these in the basket in the cabinet, and all were correctly named by Walter and then thrown out the front or the handholes. Throughout this part of the sitting, the basket was batted about in the cabinet much more viciously than the night before.

The small luminous basket was now placed on the shelf, and a duplication in all respects of the previous evening's balancing act was given. There was the same difficulty in finding a place and position where it would not fall to the floor. When this was found, the act proceeded as the night before, with the addition of a large tendency for the rocking to check abruptly, almost with a jerk, as the light went on. In this connection, it may be of significance that the full strength of the red light was here used, far brighter than the night before.

A period ensued in which the luminous basket was levitated high and far inside the glass cabinet, moving about with freedom. Some discussion then ensued with Walter as to what he should do next. He was somewhat more choosey than usual, rejecting the VCO machine, the notion of bringing the Psychic out and moving to the other cabinet, etc. The bell-box was placed on the shelf in the glass cabinet and he rang it once or twice.[4] Then at his own motion his latest trick was shown to me, for the first time.

The large megaphone was introduced into the cabinet, on the Psychic's lap or on the shelf. It carried a band of the zinc sulfide paint, but this had not been activated and hence was wholly dark and invisible. But after the megaphone had been in the cabinet for less than a minute, the strip of paint flared up faintly and was clearly though not at all brightly visible as a semi-circle of light.

[4] A very important episode, which will receive comment on page 415.—J. M. B.

It faded out to invisibility and faded in again; and after two or three repetitions, while it was dark I asked permission, on its next fading in, to reach in and grasp it in verification that what we saw was actually the luminous band on the megaphone. This test was permitted without hesitation and with complete success, the megaphone being wholly recognizable by virtue of a bad crack in the large end.[5]

In the same way the small end of the megaphone, a plain luminous plaque, and a luminous coördinate board were successively activated by Walter and made to glow for a succession of brief intervals. Five to ten seconds of visibility seemed about the limit.

Walter said good night, but lingered; and while he lingered talking, it struck 10:30. Both on this and the previous evenings, there were several occasions when he talked distinctly and fairly loudly [7] while the red light was on.

Above record from sketchy memoranda made after séance, slightly amplified Sunday morning, April 25th, and drawn up in the present form from these memoranda and from the memories which they evoked, April 28th and 29th. In the latter connection, use was made of Crandon's own record of the 23d, so far as my memory was clearly in accord with this document.

For the first of these two evenings, Crandon prepared his usual record; I conserve the space which it would take up since it differs in no fundamental from mine and is far less complete. For the second evening he did not bother about a record of his own, letting mine serve the purposes to which his is ordinarily put.

The spring of 1926 brought out one more séance at which a full record was prepared independently of Crandon's; this time, by Dudley. I give it complete save for two long passages detailing Walter's conversational quips:

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, May 14th, 1926. In glass cabinet. Present: Webster, Mrs. Webster, Mrs. Bingham, Crandon, Mrs. Hale, Mrs. Lindsay, Johnson.[6] Mrs. Stinson behind Webster, Dudley behind Mrs. Webster.

Apparatus inspected by all. VCO tested by Webster and Johnson. Bell-box examined by the Websters, Mrs. Bingham, Mrs.

[5] This incident, too, is put in its place in another chapter; see page 394.—J. M. B.
[6] The record does not say that this represents the sitting order, but Dudley is confident that it does so.—J. M. B.
[7] See open reference No. 19, Vol. 2.

Hale and Johnson, the latter explaining it to the others. Ties placed on wrists and ankles by Crandon and added to by Johnson. The Psychic secured in cabinet by Johnson (right foot, collar) and Webster (left foot and hands). With exception of right hand, the ties were most weird; Walter remarked on the awful bunch of knots.

Walter manifested in less than one minute. Webster picked out letters in the dark, put these in basket and basket in cabinet on floor. Basket levitated by Walter, who threw out one letter at a time. "Here's one for you, for the nice lady, a U for you." Mrs. Hale couldn't locate it; Johnson tried; Walter said it was between the two chairs (Mrs. Hale's and Mrs. Lindsay's); correct. It *was* a U. Next letter: "H, for Hell and happiness." Johnson says O. K. Next M or more probably W, for Mrs. Hale; O. K. Next J for Johnson; O. K. Next O for Mrs. Webster; O. K.

Various articles placed in basket in dark. Walter identified large and small handkerchief and "a small metal case with some small things inside." O. K.

Luminous basket on shelf, shelf placed by Crandon, basket by Webster. Rocked off to floor several times but finally rocked three times in bright red light. Levitated in large arc and from side to side and then thrown to back of cabinet. Hand controls checked by Mrs. Hale and Webster, who also checked foot control.

Shelf removed by Crandon. Large megaphone in cabinet by Webster. Levitated to about four feet and then out in front of cabinet and from there to floor.

Walter started talking, [and a long paragraph of the record devoted to his conversation is omitted].

VCO brought in at 36th minute of séance. Inspected by Webster. Johnson unlocks collar. Webster puts mouthpiece in place. Dark. Walter tells the Psychic to blow it up. Whistles beautifully and repeats test poem in very loud whisper which had many of the qualities of a hoarse voice.[7] Crandon's and Dudley's mouths under control. VCO again checked by Webster in white light, as before.

Psychic released by Johnson. Sitting started in old cabinet at 40th minute of séance. Circle: Psychic, Webster, Mrs. Lindsay, Johnson, Mrs. Webster, Mrs. Bingham, Mrs. Hale, Crandon. Mrs. Stinson behind Mmes. Lindsay and Bingham; Dudley behind Mrs. Bingham and Webster. Walter manifested almost as soon as light was out. [A long paragraph devoted to his humorous remarks is eliminated.]

[7] See open reference No. 19, Vol. 2.

Bell-box picked up by Mrs. Hale, who turns around while it rings. Sets it down. Again in red light picked up by Mrs. Lindsay, same result. Picked up by Johnson, who turns around, hands it to Mrs. Hale, to Mrs. Bingham, to Mrs. Webster, to Mrs. Lindsay, to Webster, who goes to front of room, turns around, returns to table. Examined then by Webster in white light. Ringing started and stopped in red light each time, except last time when it stopped in white light.

Scales brought to table by Crandon. Examined while balancing without load, in white light. Webster takes weights. Dark. Light. Webster puts one on east pan. Unbalanced. Dark. Crandon says gravity is working; Walter says levity is working. Light; Walter is right. West pan down on base. Webster passes arm between Psychic and scales; Mrs. Hale between Crandon and scales. Webster passes hand over west pan, Mrs. Hale under east pan. Dark. Walter tells Webster to remove west pan and hold it in hand, keeping it level. Light west pan removed. Scales unbalance to east. Crandon plays light on scales and on pan which Webster holds in left hand. Webster replaces west pan and scales again go down on that side. Dark. Crandon says that Webster tipped the pan on edge as he held it, and asks Walter how he stayed on. "Oh, I'm used to that by this time; I hung on by my eye teeth." Walter tells Webster to put all weights in either pan and Webster puts them in east pan. Scales unbalance although previously somewhat unbalanced toward west. Dark. Light. West pan down on base. Webster passes hand around and over pan and around beam. Mrs. Hale feels under east pan. Dark. Walter tells the Psychic that as soon as light comes on she is to leave the circle. Light; scales balance five-to-none; Psychic leaves circle and stands near bookcase at west of room. Scales continue to balance while Crandon plays white light on beam and pans. Psychic returns to circle in red light. Dark. Walter tells Johnson to lift scales. Light. Johnson lifts them about eighteen inches, while they balance, in red light. Then Crandon plays white flashlight on scales and underneath and on table.

Total duration of séance, one hour six minutes.

The above scales episode, like the earlier ones of the present chapter, anticipates Chapter XXXVI. The latter chapter in fact would better have preceded the present one; but this fact was not observed until after the pages had been numbered and numerous cross-references had been made to them; so that the transposition which clarity suggests is vetoed by expediency.

CHAPTER XXXV

The Further History of the Bell-Box

By the Editor

Like the VCO machine, the illuminated basket and the wooden letters, the bell-box (SAB model) passed through a more or less definite evolution toward better performance under better conditions, and then settled down into an approximately standard performance for the standardized séance. We have traced its history through the developmental stage;[1] it remains now for us to chronicle its routine use and to mention whatever of outstanding performance this led to.

We left the SAB in Chapter XXVII at the point where it had twice been used in the glass cabinet, under conditions not particularly impressive. On November 18th, which has already been noted[2] as the sitting in which the germ of the standardized séance using both cabinets was first seen, it was used in the old cabinet rather than in the glass one; and during the period in which the double séance was emerging out of its chrysalis, this instrument was used only on nights when the old cabinet came into play. Dates and engineers (sitters who stood up and moved about holding the ringing box) of the featureless performances, and details of the feature ones, are as follows:

Nov. 18th, 1925: Bishop.

Dec. 11th: Bixler. "The experiment came to an end when the box accidentally came into contact with Mrs. Brainerd's head." Under a theory of fraud one would have to visualize it as thus receiving a sharper jar than it ordinarily receives when set down on the table. Under a theory of genuineness this is not the case, since other factors than the physical shock may have caused the cessation.

Dec. 12th: Graham.

Dec. 15th: McComas, twice; the second time with unusual "irregular intermittency" of ringing.[3]

Dec. 19th: an unusual display of the visible ringing of the box by the teleplasmic hand; see page 452 for the full record.

Jan. 13th, 1926: ringing in darkness only, "with luminous con-

---

[1] Chaps. X, XI, XXVII.

[2] See page 348.

[3] For discussion of this term, see *Jour., A.S.P.R.;* July 1926, p. 390.

trol of Margery's wrists and Crandon's left, and contact control of Margery's feet."

Jan. 18th: Morse, Miner.

Jan. 21st: Miss Ball.

Jan. 23rd: Holmes, Mrs. Baker.

Jan. 24th: Ridgway, Mrs. Hodges.

Jan. 26th: See full record, p. 370; and compare Dunlap's experience here with Mrs. Crunden's to which we immediately come.

Feb. 3rd: this is one of the most important episodes ever obtained with the bell-box; for "Walter rang the bell intermittently, and even *stopped and started it on request while Mrs. Crunden* (a perfect stranger despite the temptation to confuse her name with the Psychic's) *stood up and turned completely around with the bell-box in her hands.*" The critic who adheres to the notion that these red-light ringings of the bell while carried about are due to tampering with the spring will, of course, have to deny that this happened; he cannot explain it away. If he asks why it doesn't occur oftener, I can only say that Walter pictures his command over the foot-loose bell-box as not ordinarily clean-cut enough to permit it. He can start and stop the ringing from moment to moment as he finds himself able; but doing this to order he says is altogether too extravagant of force. Whether you like this plea or not, is your own affair; I merely quote Walter.

Feb. 4th brought out another incident strongly contradictory of the tampered-spring theory. Griscom and Gerald were the engineers. The latter was so enthusiastic in his handling of the box that he struck it against the chandelier; whereupon the ringing stopped for some ten seconds. Under the theory it is difficult to see just how one could so strike the box as to bring about this result; certainly, if the contact board hit the chandelier, as seems most likely to happen in view of the uppermost position of the former and the height of the latter, the bell ought to ring more persistently. But if one ignore this difficulty, one must at least grant that after a blow putting it out of contact for ten seconds, during which Gerald continued to move the box at least sufficiently to bring it back to the table, the spring ought to be so hopelessly out of a contact position as to require fresh manipulation in order to ring the bell. But the bell rang just as Gerald got it back to the table.

Feb. 21st: Mr. and Mrs. Pierson.

Feb. 22nd: von Reuter, Mrs. Greene.

Feb. 25th: N. Gray, C. L. Hyde, T. Hyde. "At the end of one of these experiments he allowed C. L. Hyde to lift the flapper of the box to see that there was nothing under it, then to restore it to its normal position; after which the bell rang intermittently." That it would do so if the ringing occurred as a result of manipulating the spring is not at all obvious.

Feb. 27th: O'Brien, Major Stimpson.

March 4th: Van Arsdale, Miss Lohman. "The box was then deposited in Van Arsdale's lap; he kept it until after the sitting, when he examined it to his satisfaction." Are we asked to believe that Margery restored the spring to non-contact position while the box lay on Van Arsdale's lap, and without his observation?

March 5th: Weston. While Weston had the box in air, Ellis raised and replaced the flapper; the bell resumed its ringing.

March 8th: Sawyer, Reilly; and Sawyer was given the same test that Van Arsdale had on the 4th.

March 12th: Bradley, the Mmes. Bigelow. "While the bell was ringing, he allowed a white flash-light to be played on it and it continued ringing intermittently, though Walter said later that it dissolved his material." This test, of course, has no bearing upon the hypothesis of fraud by a tampered spring.

March 21st: A. Gray, Wilson. The test of lifting and lowering the flapper while the box was being carried becomes at about this date a matter of routine.

March 22nd: Swift, Collier.

March 23rd: Davis.

March 27th: Overstreet, Mrs. Wilde.

March 30th: Johnston.

April 1st: engineer not named.

April 4th: Murray, Clinton and N. Gray, one after another in a single interval of light. Clinton was "then" directed to verify that it did not ring whenever picked up; whether in the same light interval does not appear.

April 6th: Rogers, Bixler, Harlow and one of the ladies, all in one episode as on the 4th. The same additional test was made with the same ambiguity in the record.

April 10th: Holmes and four others in succession.

April 15th: see full record, page 397.

April 23rd: see my full record of page 401. The bell-box is not

ordinarily used in the glass cabinet, constituting rather a part of the routine of the open cabinet. The present episode is very important, not alone on the general ground that it denies the hypothesis that this distinction is due to the necessities of fraud; but equally because the fraud by tampering with the spring would be so utterly out of the question in the glass cabinet.

April 29th: see full record by Tillyard, Chapter XLII.

May 5th: carried "from hand to hand."

May 8th: handed in turn to every sitter.

May 14th: see Dudley's record, page 409.

May 16th: Murray, Miss Comstock.

May 18th: "sitters" unnamed.

May 19th: "all the sitters."

May 23rd: Riddle, Davis.

May 26th: Pierce, Taylor.

June 1st: Marston; Carter followed by all other sitters, in an extremely long test, with the flapper being raised and lowered by each person who took the box, and with the test at the end to show that the bell does not always ring when picked up. The record sounds more than usually as though this occurred in the same red-light interval, but is not specific on the point.

June 8th: Manney.

June 18th: Pierson, followed by all others.

June 29th, July 2nd, July 6th: all without mention of individual sitters.

July 7th: Allinson, Mrs. Floyd.

July 15th, 19th, 26th: no mention of individual sitters.

Aug. 24th: "Ellsworth."

Sept. 2nd: no mention of engineer.

Sept. 15th: Overstreet; first alone, later followed by five others.

Oct. 1st: Hamlin.

Oct. 13th: Van Allen alone; then followed by seven other sitters.

Oct. 19th: an item comparable to those of Jan. 26th and Feb. 3rd. Mrs. Hill was acting as engineer; and the bell rang in red light on the table, before she had touched it to pick it up. It was silent as the light went on, then rang; and it continued to ring for a considerable time, probably until after she picked it up though this is not altogether clear from the record. In any event, it rang a good peal, and not the single tinkle which would have been got by pulling off a pre-

viously connected thread. Bond then engineered the bell-box and had *the same experience.*

Nov. 4th: Samuel, Thwaites.

Nov. 6th: Levinson; first alone, then followed by others. "He then came back to the table and the box was in turn passed through the hands of every sitter. During this time it rang at irregular intervals and was examined in red light and white at the end of the same period." Whether to conclude from this that the box stopped ringing spontaneously and permanently, and was then examined without interval of darkness; or that it was examined while being passed about and while ringing intermittently—this is not clear.

Nov. 16th: engineer not named.

Nov. 19th: Weigle, McComas. "During all this time the box rang intermittently and irregularly, and was *then* examined in the same period of red light with addition of white flashlight." This at last seems reasonably clear, and it seems self-evident to me that we have a chronicle of bell-box action which, in its totality, will yield to no theory of fraudulent operation.

CHAPTER XXXVI

The Rehabilitation of the Scales

By the Editor

Chapters XXXV, XLII and XLIII of *M. M.* chronicle the placing before Walter, by Comstock, of an ordinary chemical balance from the laboratory; the development of levitation phenomena using such balances, with unequal weights on the two pans; and the development, by Comstock, of bigger and better and more nearly fraud-proof balances. The story there terminates with the performance of July 20th, 1924; and with the statement that "on August 3d they had passed so definitely out of the picture that they were removed from the table and laid distinctly aside."

The scales remained in the séance room after thus passing out of the picture, however; and every once in so often the possibility of returning to their use would be discussed by the sitters, or even by Walter. The first real move in this direction came on October 4th, 1925; the scales were ready for use on that evening but Walter said that he would resume with them some other time. They are next heard of on March 16th, 1926. There is no indication in the records for immediately preceding dates of any agreement or discussion with Walter leading up to this evening's restoration of the balance as a standard séance tool; but I imagine such discussion must have taken place, if only because of the matter-of-fact way in which the present record brings them in, without explanation of any sort, plus the way in which this séance was given over wholly to the scales. The record reads:

> Walter came through promptly and promised us shortly that he would make some paraffin gloves of hands such as the world had never seen.[1] He then called for the scales to be put on the table and it was so done. He then asked that they be arranged with four weights in the east and none in the west and later four in the east and one in the west pans. This was done and after a lot of preliminary fiddling in the dark, the light was turned on and the scales

[1] The superlative character of any performance is of course always a matter of opinion. With this reservation, it is to be pointed out (see Chapter XLI) that the present promise, which few or none of the sitters could have taken very seriously, was made good within three months.—J. M. B.

were balancing perfectly with a load of four to one. This was repeated several times. Walter then directed Dudley to lift platform, scales and all while thus balancing and at that time Richardson was to feel under the table and swing his whole arm in an arc down between the Psychic and the table, showing there was no connection.

Next, while the scales were balancing, with these uneven loads Richardson was told to lift the pan near him off the scales but to hold it horizontally "for fear I get spilled." This was done and when the pan was off gravity worked, but immediately the pan was restored to the west end of the balance, the balance against gravity at once reappeared. The séance was held in the open cabinet.

The description of the scales and of their manner of use as set down on pages 344-5 of *M. M.* must now be modified in connection with their restoration to activity at the date to which we come. The provision for electrical recording was abandoned; the mercury basins were left empty in the platform and the trailing wires were dismantled from beneath the pans. The jelly-glasses were also abandoned as a stand for the unit, since this was to be brought to the table by a sitter, placed by him at random, and freely displaced during the séance; it was felt that under such conditions the glasses would give no additional safeguard against wires or threads, and would increase the danger of accident to the scales. The celluloid cover too, unless specifically mentioned, may now be assumed to have been absent. And one omission in the existing description must be made good.

In all precision balances it is customary to mount small riders on the horizontal beam. These may be moved back and forth, and fastened in any position by set-screws. The purpose is to enable an exact balance to be struck between the two sides of the unit at any time, regardless of temporary conditions of temperature, etc., etc. If the scales do not balance exactly, one rider or the other may be moved until they do. Riders of this sort were present on Comstock's final No. 4 scales from the beginning of their use; the photographs of the present volume will show their size and location, and the grooves in which they run. They are not ordinarily used in the séances, since it is not ordinarily a matter of moment whether the empty scales balance perfectly. But they will occupy a prominent place in Chap. XLV. and we must therefore have their physical character before us.

After the start obtained on March 16th the scales continued to occupy a prominent place in Walter's attention. On the 17th there

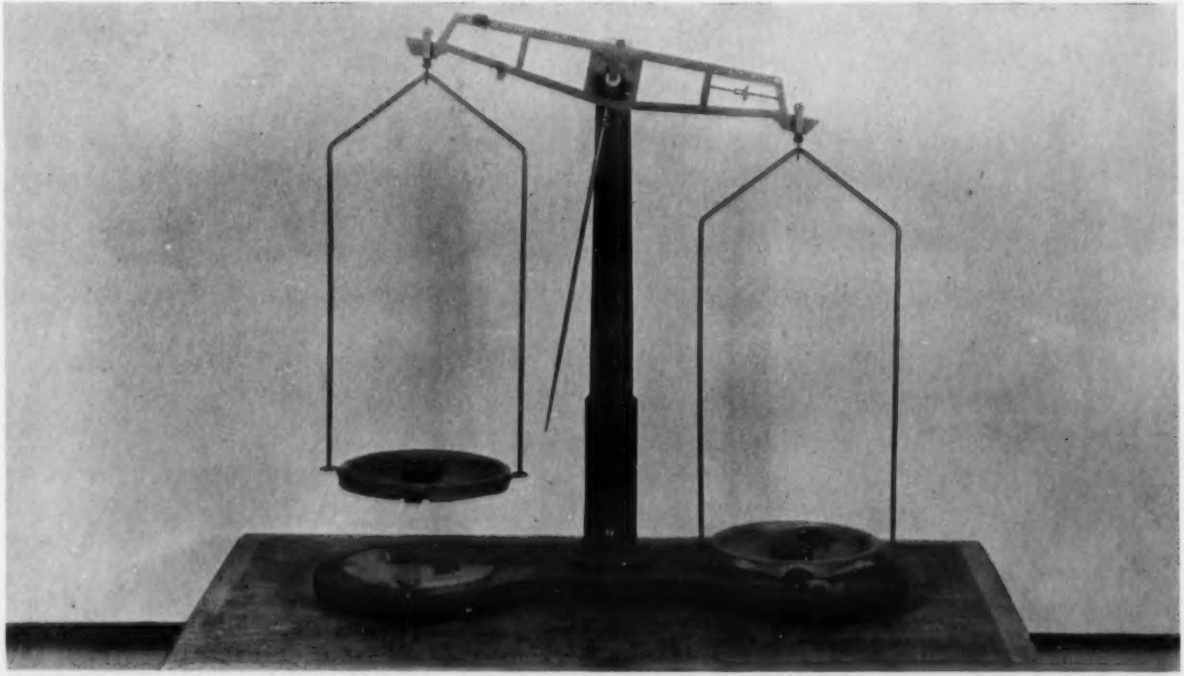


PLATE 33. THE SCALES AS USED DURING 1926, POSED IN NORMAL UNBALANCE HORS DE LA SÉANCE. AT THE LEFT END OF THE UPPER ARM WILL BE SEEN THE RIDER THROUGH WHICH SMALL ADJUSTMENTS TOWARD PERFECT BALANCE MAY BE MADE. NOTE ALSO THE KNIFE-EDGE SUSPENSION OF THE PANS, AND THE POINTER FOR ACCURATE ESTIMATE OF THE DEVIATION FROM EXACT BALANCE. THE POSITION OF THE PANS IN THIS VIEW ILLUSTRATES THEIR NORMAL SENSITIVENESS TO THE DIFFERENCE IN WEIGHT OF A SINGLE CHECKER.

UNIV. OF MICH.

was again a complete séance, given over to them. There seems to be sufficient of interest in the two records, one by Crandon and one by certain other sitters, to warrant giving them both in full:

On account of the health of the medium we expected only a quiet, simple sitting with a good deal of red light; and, therefore, with less careful control because of the nature of the phenomena expected. The circle had careful contact only with the medium's left hand and F. H.'s right hand.

Walter came through promptly with the familiar whistle in fine form. After a few sentences in a whisper, the small megaphone was used for perhaps three minutes and then dropped with a clatter on the floor.

Walter selected the scales for demonstration. We examined the wooden table, without any metal screws or points, the wooden stand beneath the scales and the apparatus. It was very difficult to establish an exact balance, or to keep the pans from swinging and the cross bar from oscillation. The wooden weights or checkers were examined.

At first one checker, then two were on one pan with the other empty. Soon after there were four versus one. After a few minutes of preparation and conversation, in which Walter said, "Go on and tell a story. Don't pay any attention to me; I've got to work this up first," we heard the scales being moved, and under red light saw the pans in equal balance, absolutely quiet. In succeeding moments of red light the right pan was hard down on the table, quite against gravity principles.

There followed a dozen various demonstrations. The pans at Walter's suggestion were repeatedly moved about, held level, "So you won't spill me off," he said; then replaced. Afterward the scales were lifted, the table searched; Ellis passed hands and body between table and medium. Then Kent and Eddy searched the surrounding air, examined the scales in good clear red light.

Walter's sense of humor was very active. He likes this sort of play. It presents a paradox. For instance, Mrs. Eddy said: "Gravity works until Walter steps in." Quick as a flash Walter laughed and said, "Then levity comes," with a very pat double meaning.

We then in red light transferred the weight on the right pan in case anything was influencing its position on the scales. Within ten seconds after leaving the pans swinging and changed, Walter called for red light again. They were held steady, immovable, and in absolute balance as Walter chuckled: "Absolute gravity, you see."

We commented on the delicacy necessary to establish an immovable even balance. We had tried for several minutes without success, the bar swinging back and forth. There seemed to be greater accuracy present than we could exert in full light. Then Walter suggested that Eddy examine the pan at the level of his nose, under the white flash light (rarely permitted). There was evidently nothing visible. He was told to hold the pan level for the reason given above.

Eddy asked Walter if he would speak in two different places with the maximum variation convenient. The first voice evidently was fifteen inches to the left of the medium's head, as last seen in the red light; and immediately within one second eighteen inches to the right—a distance of between two and two and a half feet. But Walter said we would have a full evening on the voice soon, and he did not want to try out anything new but the scales.

The trance was light throughout. Walter was in strength and in very clever and chatty mood. He seemed happy and deeply interested with the demonstration. After the sitting the discussion touched upon the accuracy and delicacy of adjustment, and the principles involved to assert a steady balance between unequal weighted pans or the apparent increase of weight in the right pan by any means discernible. We again searched the scales for thread or wire, or any possible intervention. Walter said he was using no visible terminal, but merely an energy under his directing will. The question of the visibility of this possibly psychic terminal in ultraviolet rays, and a moving picture film taking this terminal, closed a most interesting evening.

(Signed) Albert Kent
D. Brewer Eddy
Josephine R. Eddy
Arthur M. Ellis

The above record is self-explanatory; we now pass to Crandon's:

Sitting in the open cabinet, the scales were in position on the table in front of the Psychic. Before the sitting all sitters examined the scales, lifted them up and completely satisfied themselves as to their condition. The six checkers used as weights were examined and tested by Eddy and stayed in his possession. Walter came through promptly and indulged in lively repartee; one line was a very good double entendre. Eddy said, "When Walter comes in, gravity departs." Walter instantly added, "And levity comes in." The experiments were as follows:

Walter showed in red light an empty west pan swinging up and down in perfect balance over against the east pan with three weights in it. He then did the same with one in the west and four in the east. He then showed four against one balancing perfectly without any swing. This is a thing we are almost unable to do normally because the balances are so sensitive that they swing like a pendulum for many minutes. Walter now directed Eddy to stand up and carry out an experiment as follows:

The balances were swinging, perfectly balanced, with a load of three to nothing. Eddy picked up the empty pan whereupon gravity immediately dropped the full east pan. Holding the empty pan horizontally (by direction) close under his nose, Eddy examined the empty pan while Crandon turned a bright white searchlight on it. The pan appeared to all to be empty. Eddy now put it back in its holder on the west side, whereupon it immediately lifted and balanced the east pan containing three weights. Next, by direction, Eddy shifted the pans, east to the west, west to the east, so that the west now had four and the east one. Walter immediately balanced them as well as he had the other way.

Next, by direction, the four-to-one load was balanced in red light. Eddy put his hand along the bar of the balances and all round every side of them while at the same time Ellis, using his right arm, cleaver-fashion, brought it down from the level of the Psychic's head to her feet between her and the balances on the table. He encountered nothing.

Asked about it, Walter said that he put a substance which might be called energy on the unweighted pan; that is about all he knew about it.

The record for March 21st informs us, incidentally, that a sitting was attempted on the 20th, resulting in total blank. These blanks do not always get recorded; Crandon counts them as approximately thirty in the four years, plus, of the mediumship. The sitting of the 21st was apparently intended as part of the scales sequence, the other phenomena offered being a spontaneous move on Walter's part. The entire record may therefore be inserted at this point:

Sitting in the old cabinet, Walter came through in spite of the total blank of the night before, saying about that episode merely that he did not have enough force to come through. After a lot of talk and repartee and answering questions for various sitters, he proceeded to work on the balances and there he made a four-to-one, three-to-none and finally a four-to-none balancing

stunt. He allowed Wilson to lug the scales round the room while he maintained this balancing contrary to gravity. He allowed the empty pan to be taken off and inspected in white light and when pan was restored to its position on the scales again balancing of nothing against four reëstablished itself, all in the same period of red light.

Walter next put through the stunts of the bell-box; ringing it intermittently while both A. W. Gray and Wilson lugged it round the room, lifting it high and low, turning the flapper back, both quite unable to explain it.

Next the Dingwall bell-box, not vitalized, was put on the table and Walter proceeded to make it glow at will, even when hands were upon it.

After the preliminaries of these three sittings had been disposed of, Walter's command over the scales seemed established; and he now abandoned the special sittings for the balance work, making this a part of the standardized sittings. Thus, on March 22d:

The scales were now brought forth, and Walter balanced first a two-to-nothing and then a four-to-nothing load. He maintained this phenomenon in action while Baker carried the whole scales around the room. When they were returned to the table, the empty west pan was lifted by Swift, whereupon the loaded east pan fell sharply. The west pan was now examined with a white flash and found to be apparently empty. It was put back, having been carefully held horizontally all the time. At once the apparent anomaly of the balance between empty and loaded pans was re-established. All this was in the same period of bright red light.

The scales gave a featureless performance in the standardized séance of March 23d; then, on the 27th:

Walter now proceeded to the scales and successfully balanced in red light a two-to-nothing and then a four-to-one load. He then allowed Overstreet to take the empty pan out and verify its apparent emptiness; then to put it back on; whereupon gravity again ceased to work as it had during the absence of the pan, and the four-to-one load balanced perfectly. He then allowed Overstreet to pick up the scales while it was balancing a four-to-one load; the balance was undisturbed, with gentle oscillation up and down.

With the scales now a recognized feature of the standardized séance, we find some performances which need be cited only by date;

with others involving some element that requires a complete quotation from the record. Of these latter occasions I find the following:

> March 30th: The scales were brought to the table and Walter produced balancing with a two-to-nothing load and then with four-to-nothing. He did this both statically and with the scales in motion as they balanced.[1a] He then allowed Johnston to pick off the empty pan. Gravity at once came into play. When the empty pan was put back on the empty west arm of the scales, it at once lifted the opposite weighted pan; all this being in the one period of red light. Eddy was allowed to put his forefinger on the loaded pan to estimate the weight that Walter was exerting.

> March 31st: The scales were carefully examined and calibrated by Hill before sitting. Walter balanced a two-to-nothing and then a four-to-nothing load, both statically and in oscillation. While this balancing was going on Hill, Dudley and Richardson severally put an arm down in a vertical plane between Margery and the table from the height of her head to the floor; another put a pencil back and forth between the base of the unit and the bottoms of the balancing pans; and a third passed his hands all around the scales above and below and in close relationship to the top bar. The phenomenon continued throughout all this. Next the west pan was taken off while balancing the loaded east pan, and now the empty frame at the west continued to weight down the loaded east pan.

This it will be seen is a variation from previous experience; heretofore when the apparently empty pan has been removed the other one has crashed. It therefore appears that Walter's influence upon the scales is not a fixed quantity, but is variable at his pleasure. The rather obscure wording of the following record means that the two experiences were given consecutively on the same date; the first time the empty pan was removed the loaded one crashed and the second time it remained suspended in air:

> Apr. 1st: Walter demonstrated the presence of his force in the empty pan when this was taken off and returned; then its presence on the brass framework on repetition of the experiment; the load was four-to-none. He showed this four-to-nothing balance with the sitters passing their hands between Margery and the

---

[1a] If the distinction between a static and a dynamic balancing of the unequally loaded pans is not immediately clear from these adjectives, *M. M.* may be consulted (p. 281) for further details.—J. M. B.

scales; and all about everywhere; and finally he showed the same balance contrary to gravity under the glare of a bright white flash.

Apr. 4th: The scales was placed on the table and found to balance truly. A four-to-one load was placed, west and east respectively. Walter immediately balanced this load in red light and later showed the pans oscillating. Next he directed that the pans, loaded as they were, be interchanged; and he again made them oscillate in true balance. He then allowed Clinton, while they hung even with the four-to-nothing load, to pass a pencil freely under the pans. He increased the load to five-to-none without loss of result. Brown picked the empty east pan off, and the west pan with five weights balanced with the empty east frame. Under these same conditions Walter allowed a match to be struck and the scales was carefully examined in this light while the five-to-none balance remained perfect.

On April 6th the scales performance added nothing new; but there is a bit of novelty in the record for the 10th:

The scales was put on the table and Walter performed many permutations. He balanced two-to-none, four-to-none, five-to-one and five-to-none loads, both statically and dynamically. During the periods of balancing he allowed anyone to pass a pencil or place a hand under either or both pans. At one time the white flashlight was played upon the entire unit for inspection. At another time the empty pans were found balancing. Holmes took the west pan off, whereupon the east pan went down, normally so far as could be judged. He put the apparently empty west pan back, and it now went down and remained down as though weighted. Similar experiences were had with empty pan vs. no pan; then with both sides of the balance stripped of their pans.

On the 15th there was the usual performance, plus one new feature: Richardson was permitted to pick the entire bulky scales unit off the table while it was in levitation, and the balance between the unequally weighted pans persisted undisturbed.[2] On the 17th, the scales were brought out of the atmosphere of the standardized sitting for a little special study, as the following record makes clear:

This evening was devoted to a study of the phenomena of the balances. Preceding the sitting Little calibrated them to an approximation of accuracy and examined them thoroughly.

[2] See page 399.

Walter came through promptly and greeted Ekland in a most friendly way. He then proceeded to balance a 4–1 load and then a 4–0 load, either pan being selected and the weights put on by Dr. Little. He then balanced a four load over against no pan. He then balanced a one load against empty pan, empty pan was removed, gravity reappeared, empty pan put on and it promptly levitated the loaded pan, showing that Walter's substance remained on the empty pan. During these experiments Little and Dennett freely cut long planes with their arms down between the Psychic and the table, and between Crandon and the table. Little freely examined the scales, during a flash of white light, while in levitation.

Walter gave a brief exhibition of his power to vitalize an area of the luminous paint even with a hand resting on it.

Again on the 18th the glass cabinet was ignored and the entire séance was held in the old cabinet with major attention upon the scales:

Walter came through in good mood, listened to some organ music for a while and then ordered a more lively tune. He devoted himself to the scales *with the addition of the celluloid cover.*[3] Under these conditions he levitated 4–1, and at one time, while the victrola was being adjusted, maintained this balance for 80 seconds. ALL IN GOOD RED LIGHT.[4] At another time, while levitation 4–1 was present under the celluloid cover, the Psychic, under instructions, got up and left the room and then came back. During all this time, at least 50 seconds, the levitation of the scales was maintained.

Crandon observed that it appeared that Walter put something on the empty pan, because just before the light went on the celluloid cover was tipped up so it hit Crandon's forehead.

I need not here repeat the details of the scales performance given in my presence[5] on April 23rd, nor that shown to Tillyard on April 29th.[6] The scales action of May 5th needs be cited only by title; likewise that of the 8th. On the 14th,[6a] not only was the white flash allowed, as was now becoming so usual, but a five-to-none balance was maintained while Margery left the cabinet, and again while Johnson picked the entire scales unit up clear of the table. For the 16th we need the record:

---

[3] My italics.—J. M. B.
[4] Crandon's emphasis.—J. M. B.
[5] See pages 405–6.
[6] See page 489.
[6a] See page 411.

The scales was brought out and Walter got a one-to-none balancing perfectly while all kinds of examination and tests in red and white light failed to reveal any normal technique. He then established balance with a four-to-one load, and had the celluloid cover put on while this balance was present; this balance was now shown to us statically, then swinging. Finally with the celluloid cover and a four-to-none load, Murray stepped into the cabinet and lifted the whole unit: scales, cover and platform beneath. Easy swinging balance was maintained throughout this experiment, covering a minute and a half in good red light, with white flash to examine the details. Walter then "extricated" himself,[7] and gravity was seen to be working as usual.

On May 18th the scales performance included a dynamic balancing of a five-to-none load with Margery out of the cabinet. During the latter days of the month four records were got from which I must quote bodily:

May 19th: The scales was brought out; it did a one-to-none load, a one-checker-to-no-pan load, and a five-to-none load, both static and dynamic. This last he maintained with a good swinging action after Margery left the cabinet, and with good white flashlight playing on it. Emerson was allowed to pick up the whole balance unit while the one-to-none load balanced truly.

May 23rd: The scales was brought out and Walter did the one-to-nothing, the one-to-no-pan and the five-to-nothing levitations, both static and dynamic. He added a new term to this. He balanced the five-to-none load; Margery left the cabinet until she was nine feet away; Davis entered the cabinet and sat in her chair; Riddle picked up the scales and lifted them eight inches off the table; a white flash was played all over the outfit; and at the same time a sitter put his hand above and below the pans, over the bar, and between Crandon and the table. The scales remained balancing by levitation until Margery was back in the cabinet, probably ninety seconds in all, and all in the same period of red light.[8]

May 26th: The scales was brought out and Walter balanced a one-to-none, a one-to-no-pan, and a five-to-none load, using either

[7] In an interval of darkness.—J. M. B.

[8] I caution the reader not to conclude that the levitation was terminated in this red light. This would be contrary to custom and I wholly doubt that the record means to imply its occurrence.—J. M. B.

pan. With the one-to-none load, Pierce took the empty pan off and gravity asserted itself; when he put this pan back it again acted as though the heavier one. Finally, with five-to-none load balancing in red light, Margery left the cabinet, Atkinson entered it and sat in her chair, Nichols raised the scales six inches clear of the table, Crandon put his hands and feet in custody of Pierce and Mrs. Bentley, and a flashlight was freely played upon the whole scales unit, while two sitters felt in all parts where it seemed at all pertinent to feel. All this occurred in one period of red light, and took some ninety seconds.

June 1st: The scales was now put in action, after being examined thoroughly in white light. In red light Walter balanced the one-to-none and the six-to-none loads; in the latter instance Smith having elected on which pan he would put the weights. In the one-to-none test Marston picked the empty pan off and gravity reasserted itself; then he put the empty pan back and it again levitated the loaded pan. The one-to-none load was then shown in free oscillation. While the six-to-none load was in balance, Smith picked up the whole outfit and it was examined thoroughly above and below in white flashlight.

The scales continued throughout the year to be employed regularly in the standardized séances (see Chapters XXIX, XXXIV, and XXXVII) of the sort from which the above episodes are taken. There was seldom if ever anything new; like the VCO machine, this instrument seemed to have attained a fixed pattern of demonstration. We may therefore consider that our discussion of it is closed save in so far as it enters into the action of séances of which, on some other ground, we are obliged to give a complete account. Such a séance will occupy the first four chapters (XLIV–XLVII) of our second volume; and others will occur somewhat later to which we can at this moment give only an open reference (No. 20 of these).

CHAPTER XXXVII

The Further History of the Standardized Séance

By the Editor

The detailed records given in Chapter XXXIV are typical of the standardized séances of this period. These seances follow very largely the same model, yet in many of them there is action sufficiently distinctive for description in some detail. The generality of the standardized action, however, need not be so described; to do this would be an extreme waste of space. I therefore proceed in the present chapter to give the routine details of all standardized séances for the balance of 1926 which are not otherwise covered. For some of these, details of the action that are worthy of perpetuation are set down in other and more topical chapters (on bell-box or scales, for instance); for others, I give brief excerpts from the records herein.

April 20th (1926): Identifications (of personal objects, as always when this word is used, B (basket) levitations. From the record:

> During all these cognitions Walter seemed to lift the basket [containing the objects offered him] up. Hill felt of all controls between every two experiments, and once when he was so feeling, the basket brushed across his head about four feet from the floor.

May 5th: letters, identifications, B and M (megaphone) levitations (this word will be omitted hereafter), VCO. (In old cabinet, as always:) BB (bell-box).

May 8th: letters, identifications, B, M, VCO. VCO engineered by James. BB, Sc (Scales).

May 18th: letters, identifications, B, M, VCO. BB, Sc.

May 19th: letters (engineered by Cox), identifications, B, M, VCO (engineered by Cox). BB, Sc. From the record:

> The basket went all over the cabinet, around the Psychic's head to a height of 5½ feet, and was finally thrown behind her. The megaphone was lifted not only in the cabinet but outside the front thereof to a distance of at least two feet. It was finally put on the floor[1] about 3½ feet in front, and Walter was still able to lift it up and move it about.

[1] By the sitters.—J. M. B.

May 23rd: letters, B, M, VCO (engineered by Riddle). BB, Sc. From the record:

> [The basket or the megaphone or both] went above and behind the Psychic's head and all over the cabinet. Then the basket was shown rolling on the shelf in red light for 30 seconds; then there was a new exhibit. The light was turned on, the basket was seen lying on the shelf in front of the entranced Psychic. We could hear a creaking of the basket as though a hand grasped it, but we could see nothing of this. The basket then began to roll, in increasing excursions. All this in red light.

May 26th: letters, identifications, B, M, VCO. BB, Sc. From the record:

> Next he levitated the basket all about in every direction, while at the same moment the sitters confirmed the positions of the lashed extremities.[2] He finally carried the basket around and about the Psychic's head and threw it in the back of the cabinet. Next the three-pound megaphone was levitated all over the cabinet and on request Walter put his terminal over the upper luminous ring and eclipsed it. He finally threw the megaphone out on the floor, and while it lay there at least two feet from the cabinet he kicked it about and levitated it.

May 28th: letters, identifications, B, M, VCO. BB, Sc. "Jones"[3] was present, and part of the time in trance, being apparently used as a co-medium. The paraffin bucket was present and gave out noises as though it were being worked with, but the action of the standardized séance went on through this and constituted the motif of the evening. The basket was levitated "above and behind the Psychic as far down as her shoulders, then up and all about, rapping on the roof of the cabinet." Sitting in the medium's chair with the handle of this basket in my mouth and the basket extended straight up, I find that I cannot come within eighteen inches of doing this; and my torso is of course considerably longer than Margery's.[4]

June 1st: letters (engineered by Marston), identifications, B, M, VCO. BB, Sc. From the record:

> The basket was levitated all over the inside of the cabinet, behind the Psychic's head and down to the floor in front of her.

---

[2] But not her head.—J. M. B.

[3] See Chapter XLI.

[4] See open reference No. 21, Vol. 2, for the bearing of this observation.

Next the three-pound luminous megaphone was levitated all over the cabinet and finally thrown out three feet in front of the Psychic. In this position it was moved about and erected by Walter's terminal.

June 3rd: letters, identifications, B, D (doughnut), M, VCO. In the old cabinet Walter stated he had little force left and closed without any further phenomena.

June 6th: letters, identifications, B, M, VCO; and the teleplasmic display described later.[5] Sc. The identifications included a thimble, contributed by Dudley and attributed to him by Walter.[6]

June 8th: letters, identifications, B, handkerchief levitation, VCO. BB, Sc, activation of luminous paint.

June 11th: letters, identifications, B, M, VCO. BB, Sc:

Walter did movement of the luminous basket in the red light, and then levitated the basket for a period twice as long as usual, with great slowness but sureness of direction, all over the cabinet, behind the Psychic and down by her feet.

June 15: letters, identifications, B, M, VCO; "all critical action by sitters was carried out by Diefenbach and Hardy." BB, Sc:

While the basket was rolling on the shelf in red light, Pierson was permitted to stand and pass his hands freely between the basket and the entranced medium, encountering no obstacle.

June 18th: letters, identifications, B. Sc.

June 22nd: letters, identifications, B, D, M, VCO. BB, Sc.

June 25th: letters, identifications, VCO. BB, Sc.

June 26th: letters, identifications, B, D, M, VCO (Cobb engineering). BB, Sc. From the record:

He said: "give me a big basket as well as a little one; I need a big one to put my force in." Thereupon he lifted both baskets as one unit, and levitated them all over the cabinet with great crashing and noise.

June 29th: letters, identifications, B, M, VCO (Hammond engineering). "During these levitations the end sitters were allowed to confirm the lashed condition of the Psychic." BB, Sc.

---

[5] See open reference No. 22, Vol. 2.
[6] See page 438.

July 2nd: See Chapters XLIV–XLVII.

July 6th: letters, identifications, B, M, VCO. BB, Sc. Signora Papa was allowed to wave her hands between the Psychic and the rolling basket.

July 7th: letters, identifications, B, M. BB.

July 19th: identifications, B. BB, Sc, identification of cards. A memorandum of the séance, prepared for me at my request by Nelson, reads as follows:

1. Levitation of basket, with luminous rings, six feet or more above floor and thrown outside of cabinet.

2. Naming of different objects placed promiscuously into basket. My cigar cutter was immediately identified and thrown outside of cabinet.

3. Ringing of bell in box: Just before the sitting and in good bright white light, I examined this box to my entire satisfaction, and certify that it was of simple construction, containing only two dry cells and a common house bell with wire connections to a piece of board hinged on one side at the top of the box, for the purpose of making the necessary connection. It was in perfect working order. I padlocked the box myself. During the sitting this box was placed on a table in front of "Margery," and in good red light it rang intermittently. In this same light I lifted the box off the table, the bell now ringing steadily, and at head's level I turned round in a complete circle. The bell stopped ringing after my placing the box on the table again. After this phenomenon and when the control had ceased operating the bell, to verify that a constant connection had not been made, I again lifted the box and verified that there was no constant connection, as the bell did not ring again. I very particularly kept the box in keen and constant observation, and certify that during the ringing of the bell and when it stopped, it was not tampered with by anyone present.

4. Tipping of scales: With equal observance I examined these scales which were in perfect working order. In good red light the scales were weighted down, by one of the sitters next to me in a proportion of four to one. In the same red light the scales were balanced and made to move up and down, nobody being nearer than two feet away from them. All hands of those near the table were perfectly controlled, including "Margery's." These scales were first on the table. They were lifted by one of the sitters, and proven to be in as good working condition as when on the table.

5. Naming of cards selected outside the room by different sitters, seen only by those who selected them, and duly marked for identification. In total darkness, one at a time, selector himself not knowing which card he had chosen from those selected, cards were placed on the table and correctly named by control—"Walter."

(Signed) O. P. NELSON.

July 26th: letters, identifications, B, M, VCO. For the last-named, "he introduced a new feature; he had Hyde and Nichols stand at either side of the door of the cabinet and clasp hands within an inch of the top of the open tube, to prove that no sitter tampered with this." BB, Sc.

July 28th: the first five minutes Crandon was out of the room. Letters, identifications, B. BB, Sc. From the record:

> Levitation of the small basket was done by Walter's new method of putting it inside the big one. This levitation was very brilliant, going to the roof of the cabinet and making raps everywhere. Finally the whole outfit was pushed out of the cabinet door and held in mid-air in the center of the circle. While this position was held, Walter instructed Walton to feel the Psychic's right hand and follow up her arm to her mouth, where he found nothing of importance. Walter also pointed out that he spoke while the basket was actually in levitation.[5]

Following the séance, the summer was given over for the most part to experimental work in teleplasmic phenomena;[6] and during September, most of the standardized séances were part of a sequence which we must describe elsewhere.[7] For the present chapter we have the following entries: August 16th: B, baryta water experiment of a later page.[8] In the old cabinet, instead of the usual performance, Walter gave only the teleplasmic episode to which we come later.[9]

September 2nd: letters, identifications, B, VCO. BB, Sc.

October 1st: letters, B. BB, teleplasmic incident of a later page.[10] The record supports a statement which we have made once or twice in other chapters and, incidentally perhaps, explains the omission of some of the usual phenomena when it says:

> The Psychic is far from well. Her weight is off twenty pounds; she is pale and her nervous system is more or less ragged. Her son has just broken his arm. Nevertheless we sat.

5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10 See, respectively, open references Nos. 21, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27 in Vol 2.

October 3rd: letters, B, D. BB, Sc. From the record:

> Walter called for a doughnut, which was brought in too bright. Then he lifted a second doughnut, not so bright, all over the front of the cabinet. Next the two doughnuts were levitated, on non-parallel courses and at different speeds; with each rotating, first in one plane and then in another, as it rose. Then while both doughnuts were in air and in motion, Martin put his hand over the Psychic's mouth and found nothing there; and at that moment Walter spoke. While the doughnuts were in the air Walter's terminal was clearly seen by all. It seemed to be a three-pronged affair. At one time it crumpled a doughnut; again one of the tines was thrust through the hole in a doughnut.

October 13th: letters, identifications, B, VCO. BB.

October 19th: letters, identifications, B, D, VCO. BB, Sc. Bond engineered most of the episodes; and in view of his presence an unusually full record was produced by Crandon. The phenomena seem to have flowed along with rather greater eclat than usual, but there was nothing really new and no unusually good conditions, so we need give no quotations.

November 4th: identifications, letters, B, VCO. BB, Sc.

November 6th: letters, identifications, B, VCO. BB, Sc.

November 19th: letters, identifications, B, VCO. BB. During the basket levitation, Baxter and McComas felt the Psychic's hands, feet, and mouth.

During the balance of the month, the Crandons were so engrossed with their preparations for a vacation trip through the west, covering the entire month of December, that no sittings were held. The evening of December 1st was given over to a small group of friends who chatted with Walter on the eve of the departure. A few séances were given in various parts of the country incidental to the trip, but these are dealt with elsewhere. We have accordingly come to a stopping place, so far as the story of this chapter is concerned. We accordingly bring the chapter to a close, pausing only to emphasize that the citations from the records of July 28th and October 3rd constitute its high spots.

CHAPTER XXXVIII

Idenification Phenomena in the Glass Cabinet

By the Editor

We have seen [1] how, during the period in which the routine of the glass cabinet sittings was being worked out into a tentatively final form, Walter and his sitters did not at all bother about identifications acts—whether of cards, personal objects, or what not. We have seen how, starting January 5th, 1926, the identification idea was taken up again,[2] but with the aid of a new instrument in Richardson's wooden letters. Finally, we have had occasion to record,[3] without comment, the fact that there was a return to the use of personal articles contributed by the sitters, without any corresponding abatement in the performance with the wooden letters. But we have seen this only as an abstract fact; we have not at all gone into details.

The first date after the birth of the glass cabinet on which the personal identifications were attempted was February 6th, 1926; and thereafter, at odd moments, Walter reverted to this theme. I give the following excerpts from the records, without further comment:

> February 6th: On [Walter's] request, Holmes put an object from his pocket on the table. The luminous controls remained immobile, but nevertheless after about three minutes Walter said: "Take your spectacle case away." As a second experiment, Walter in the midst of a conversation with Holmes said: "Better take your pencil off the table and write that down." Both these identifications were correct.
>
> February 26th: Walter identified several objects taken from the sitter's pocket under strict conditions of double control, and all successfully.
>
> March 8th: The next experiment consisted in identification of an object from the pocket of Sawyer, and second from that of Reilly.
>
> March 30th: Johnston now put something from his pocket in the basket, and Walter declared in about a minute that it was a jack-knife, and threw it on the floor.

---

[1] Chapters XXII (p. 291), XXV, XXVI.
[2] Chapter XXVIII.
[3] Pages 402, 406, 410; and Chap. XXXVII. See, also, Chap. XXXIX.

April 1st: He then did cognition of a pencil of Cotton's and a pocketbook of Joy's.

April 15th: In addition to the letters, he told Richards to put some object from his own pocket into the basket. Walter identified this as a note-book, correctly.

April 20th: Hill was asked to put something in the basket. He did so, and put the basket [as usual] in the right front of the cabinet. After a minute Walter laughed, and said: "Did you get that at the Harvard Club?[4] [There was quite a bit of chaffing between Walter and Hill at this point, together with a slightly off-color *double entendre* by Walter, making it evident that he had recognized Hill's object as the wire suspension from a pad of toilet paper. The record gives this in full; and after some chatting with Mrs. Richardson about the circumstances of his world and about Mark and John,] Walter then recognized in the basket a package of paper matches put in by Ekland. Mrs. Richardson put something in, and Walter described it as a handerchief rolled up and with a knot in the end, which was correct.

April 23rd, 24th: See my full records, pp. 402–3, 406–7, respectively. Careful appraisal of these records makes it appear to the candid critic that while Walter made quite a go out of the identification of the various objects offered him on these occasions, his efforts to attribute them to their several owners exhibit certainly the results of normal suggestion, if not of conscious normal inference. Perhaps the correct viewpoint here is that, in the obvious presence of a necessity for the exercise of a different type of supernormal cognition, it becomes more difficult to exclude normal working of the medium's or of Walter's mind. We are familiar with analogous situations in the ordinary types of clairvoyance and psychometry, and understand thoroughly that in direct proportion as the medium's normal mental processes are prevented from interfering with the psychic ones, the success of the latter increases. I think this comment should be read into pp. 440–1 of Dudley's Chapter XXXIX. And in this same connection, I should like to point out that after Dudley has contributed a plurality of curious "feminine appurtenances" of his own invention, there is a temptation to normal inference that he is the owner of any out-of-the-ordinary object of the sort that turns up in the basket when he is present.

[4] Where Hill customarily went of an evening.—J. M. B.

April 29th: Walter next asked Dr. and Mrs. Tillyard each to put something personal in the basket. This was done; and Walter promptly threw them out and named them as a brooch, and a pair of tweezers in a cloth case. These identifications were perfect.[5]

In addition to the above episodes, the period covered by these citations saw also the identifications given in the detailed records of Chapter XXXIV. I ought also to point out that, as implied by several of the above entries, a procedure gradually grew up during this period under which the objects for identification were collected in one of the luminously marked baskets, by Crandon or some other sitter (more usually some other), and placed in the cabinet in this basket. The collection was usually taken in such a way that the sitter handling the basket would be aware only by accident of the nature of each individual's contribution; but of course, equally he would, except by accident, be aware of who had and who had not contributed.

The recording, it will be observed, is quite spotty. Sometimes the nature of the articles involved is specified, sometimes not; sometimes the contributors are named, sometimes not. There is, of course, no more reason why we should attempt a complete and detailed account of all the episodes under this head than all those under any other. And I think I may very well take advantage of Dudley's offer to assume the burden of describing such identifications as, in his more frequent presence, have occurred in such a way as to impress him and lead him to his independent recording.

[5] *Cf.* Tillyard's record, pp. 484 ff.

CHAPTER XXXIX

Walter's Cognitions During the Summer and Fall of 1926

By E. E. Dudley

Among the varied phenomena of Margery's séance room there is one group that presents many interesting problems: the cognition of personal objects in complete darkness. All sorts of opportunities arise for statements by Walter revolving about the use, the associations and the ownership of the articles as well as about their mere names. Frequently some or all these elements are unknown to some or all of the sitters. Walter shows an ability to identify articles with good speed, and to deal rather well with questions of form, color, texture, odor and special uses. The character of the control, whether personal or mechanical, seems to affect the results not at all.

Walter always gives his descriptions of the articles vocally. Of course to say that this voice is independent when the VCO machine is not in use at the moment may lay one open to criticism. However, the Walter voice shows no perceptible change in any of its qualities under this control, and for this reason I assume the propriety of calling the vocal effect independent in all cases. There is usually good indication that the article under identification has been levitated or otherwise manipulated in a fashion clearly supernormal.

I propose no very serious attempts at interpretation, but merely an intelligent cataloguing of certain incidents occurring, for the better part, in my presence. On June 3rd, 1926, the basket collection was taken up by Wiggin, and he put the basket containing the articles in the cabinet, on the floor, whence as determined by the sound it was promptly levitated. This sound indicating the levitation of the basket with its articles is a regular feature of the identification performance, and may be assumed always to have occurred unless this is specifically denied.

Walter spoke up promptly: "Sairy, this is a bad place for pearls; better take them before I drop them." Mrs. Litzelmann's pearls were removed by Wiggin and restored to her. "Here is a loose-leaf note-book; I think it belongs to Conant." Conant acknowledged this and asked how many rings there were on it. Walter: "Let's see: one, two, three, four, five, six. Six rings and two hinges. Is that right?"

Conant had to admit that he didn't know; subsequent check showed that Walter's count was correct. He named the next object as a mirror, going on: "I'll have to take a look at myself." He was asked who had put it in. "I don't know; can't get a single vibration out of it. But if I were to guess, I'd say Miss Off." This was correct. "A pencil; I'm going to draw a picture of the bride in Conant's book. I'll draw another of Gerke." There were sounds of rustling paper, but later examination disclosed no pictures or other marks recognized by Conant as extraneous. Both Miss Off and Mrs. Wiggin admitted having put in pencils. Walter then announced a hairpin as belonging to Mrs. Gerke (the bride) and a match contributed by Wiggin; both these were correct.

All identifications here were correct; most of the owners were given correctly though Walter admitted one of these was a guess. That he could get no vibrations from the mirror may well be a most significant statement. Only six of the sitters contributed anything, and all contributions were dealt with.

On June 6th there was another instance of identification of an owner in which the facts were not in accord with the probabilities. After Overstreet had passed the basket around and Walter had received this, he said almost at once: "Somebody is reckless, putting glasses in here." Stewart admitted having done so and they were returned to him, normally. A few seconds later the basket was again levitated, and Walter said: "Dudley, what's the idea of carrying a thimble around with you?" This attribution was correct. He threw the thimble to the floor, and went on to identify a package of cigarettes, a fountain pen, money and other small articles. There were two ladies present, the thimble was the second article identified and neither lady had been excluded by the preceding identification, the thimble had been in my pocket no more than two hours, and it had been shown to no one present. Certainly I was far from the most probable contributor for this article.

The sitting of June 8, 1926, was marked by a unique identification which may shed some light upon the form of the teleplasmic terminals and the extent of Walter's powers of perception. After the basket had been passed around by Manney, Walter proceeded to the cognition of personal articles in the usual manner. He identified a handkerchief saying: "A handkerchief; I am putting it out through the right-hand hole. It is a lady's handkerchief." (Checked later) Pro-

ceeding, he said: "Someone is getting reckless, putting a watch in the basket! Wait: I am not so sure this is a watch. It looks like a watch but I can't find any place to wind it. . . . No, it isn't a watch, *but what is it?* Somebody knows how to keep quiet; I don't hear a word! Now just wait a minute. . . . Ha, ha! a compass and it is all lighted up. See it?" At this point the compass was held up so that all the circle could see the luminous dial and luminous needle. It was closed when put in the basket and was still closed when the basket was returned after the remaining articles, four in number, had been identified. When asked why he didn't name the owner of the compass he replied, "I was too busy trying to find out what it was."

A test of the pressure required to release the catch holding the cover closed, shows a minimum of 18 ounces and a little experimenting should convince anyone that a fairly good imitation of a hand is almost a necessity in manipulating the compass as described.

At the following sitting, on June 11, as soon as the new sitters had been introduced Walter said to me correctly: "Hello, Mr. Compass. You pick the darndest things to put in the basket." The "collection basket" as he calls it, was passed by Twachtman. Walter first described a bracelet as made up of "two wires with blue stones in it. Lapis— *what's* the rest of it?" "It belongs to Mrs. Good-enough." (Correct) Then he said: "Here's a comb, I hope there are no bugs in it!" Silence for a time, then, "Maybe it isn't a comb. . . . Let's see. . . . Somebody's got a broad smile on!" Well, we will pass that up for now. Here's a ring with a stone in it." He then discovered a coin, a Canadian five cent piece, he called it, and attributed it to Arkin, who agreed; but later we found that the coin was an obsolete United States silver five cent piece. Suddenly, Walter broke out with the question: "Dudley, what did you put your rule in for?" This was correct. It was a 6-inch wooden scale and its deep graduations did feel somewhat like the teeth of a comb.

Walter asked Twachtman if he had anything in the basket and, upon being told that there was something more, asked to have the other articles removed and the basket returned to the cabinet. In about ten seconds he said: "Here, Twachtman, take the basket (it was held out at a convenient height), you will find your tie clasp snapped into the side of the basket." This was confirmed by Twachtman who said that it was loose in the basket when the latter was last returned to the cabinet.

Walter identified the construction of the bracelet, the color of the stones, but could not get the whole name, lapis lazuli, although, as was shown after the sitting, this name was perfectly well known to Margery. The problem of the scale was solved after some study but he did not say *who* was smiling. Those in constant touch with Walter will remember how frequently he *does* designate the guilty person. The statement of ownership might be a guess but this would not square with the accuracy of many earlier tests.

At the séance of June 15, there was an interesting minor error of identification—interesting, because almost anyone, possessed of his normal powers of perception, would have made the correct statement. At this séance, after the identification of the first four items in the "collection," Walter said: "Here is a metal piece that isn't money. *Aluminum or lead.* A check; like a coat or baggage check. It is covered all over with words. It is not money; it may take the place of it." This was especially good as the article was an aluminum token to be used as payment for a return trip on the 'bus' line which issued it. The particularly interesting feature is the failure to differentiate between *aluminum and lead.* On the other hand he gave a very good description of the token as to form, lettering and approximate use.

In pursuance of the plan of these tests I present one which provides further evidence as to the form of the terminal or terminals used in these cognitions and also gives an indication of the rapidity and accuracy of his manipulation of these articles. It occurred on June 18th. The basket was in charge of Pierson who put in three wooden letters which were properly named and thrown out by Walter. He described the subsequent "collection" as a handkerchief (Mrs. Twachtman), "a whole pocket-book," "keys in a leather case" (Russell), "a bill case" and "something like a barrette" (a collar clasp). Apparently the name "barrette" was not known to Walter prior to the sitting of April 24th, for at that time he asked the name of the "article" which he had described. In about five seconds he added: "Here is a celluloid box—here is the cover. (Heard to strike the floor). And here is the rest of it. (Remainder of box goes to floor.) There is a piece of chalk in it. I am going to break it in two pieces. (Two pieces hit the floor and roll about." Dudley, I don't see where you get all these female appurtenances, anyway!"

To understand the value of this test one must know more of the

box. It is about 5/8 inch wide by 1/2 inch deep and 2 3/8 inches long, with a tightly fitting cover, the edge of which is flush with the bottom of the box. There are two small, curved finger cut-outs, 3/8 inch long by 1/8 inch high, in the lower edge of this cover; the finger and thumb of *one hand* must be fitted into these cut-outs before the cover can be removed *with the other hand.* After trying this test on several quick-witted ladies I found that, with eyes closed, they took from 4 to 5 times as long to open the box as Walter required. I also found that most women thought that the "chalk" was a lip-stick. Lip-sticks were not in common use at the time Walter Stinson lived here. As a matter of fact it was a stick of polishing rouge for the nails. The question still remains; why should Walter think that chalk was a "female appurtenance?" If it was more than a casual guess it seems to call for a causal explanation. In any case the box is so difficult to open that we are almost forced to conclude that Walter used the equivalent of two hands and that these hands had fingers which were at least as well developed as some which have been seen over the luminous plaque and luminous cross-section board.

At the sitting of June 22nd, Walter identified first, among a number of articles, "a whole pocket-book which some trusting soul has put in the basket," and continued: "Let's see what's in it. Shall I tell what is in it?" The lady who owned it assenting, he said, "There is a tin box with some flour in it. Someone must be going to do some cooking." The description was correct. But why flour rather than powder?

At the sitting of November 4th (1926, as throughout the present chapter), Walter added an interesting feature by inserting some unexpected evidence of his own. The "collection" was taken, and Walter promptly announced a watch which, he said, was put in by Samuels. (Wrong. It was Thwaites.) He then said: "It is a hunting-case watch. Hear the cover? (Sound of cover being snapped shut several times.) You ought to have your crystal fixed. It is broken or something." Thwaites explained that the cover had been cut out to take the crystal and the inner bezel was empty. Walter then identified a locket "a case—a plush case, such as medals are put in; it's got glass on one side. A daguerreotype?" He began by assuming that it belonged to Samuels and no one corrected him although Samuels did not admit ownership. After he had spoken of a possible daguerreotype he wanted to know who put it in the basket. Mrs. Richardson admitted having done so. If telepathy is to be

stressed, we must note that she has been a regular member of the circle since June, 1923, and yet Walter did not "guess" that she had contributed the plush case.

Walter now handed the basket to Thwaites, who removed his watch and, after putting it to his ear, replaced it in his pocket. The other articles were distributed and the VCO was put into place. After the floats had been unbalanced Walter said: "Colonel, when you look at your watch you will find that the hands have been changed. I changed them from your time to my time, to fourth dimensional time." Up to this point there was no indication that this was other than the usual type of Walter cognition test. This additional information was announced by Walter, in independent voice and under test conditions. A subsequent inspection by Thwaites and the writer showed that the watch had been set back 20 minutes. This was almost certainly a two-handed job.

There are many other instances which demonstrate Walter's ability in this game of cognitions and testify to his quickness, accuracy and versatility. One more may be mentioned, very briefly. At a sitting held November 16th, the writer found a peculiarly shaped metal device on the floor of the séance-room and put it in his pocket. Later, when the collection was being taken, he dropped it in the basket. After Walter had identified the other articles he said: "Dudley, did you put in anything?" Dudley: "Yes." A slight delay while a necktie was being removed by its owner and then Walter said, "Ha! this is a pipe cap. It belongs to Prof. Adamson (?) who was here last week." As a matter of fact I did not know what it was and put it in the basket with the expectation that Walter might not be able to tell anything about it.

It is important to note that, as a general rule, articles are placed in the "collection basket" without making any sound which might disclose their identity. Also, that those who are familiar with this work refrain from giving any indication that they have made contributions. The writer and many others have been careful to keep these test articles out of sight and to say nothing about them until Walter has made the identification. The sole exception to this rule, if it may be called an exception, occurred in the first portion of the cognition tests of April 24, 1926, and in that case no one but Mr. Bird could have known about the barrette. It is obvious that articles of personal adornment may not properly be classed as completely

evidential under a non-telepathic heading; but they have some evidential value if they are placed in the basket without any accompanying comment or sound. Such conditions would increase the difficulty of a *normal* cognition but there have been so many indications that Walter can, under favorable conditions, perceive the sitters and their clothing, even in complete darkness, that it seems unwise to assume that he has no knowledge of the articles so presented.

For a further discussion of the classification of these identification acts and of their philosophy, the reader is referred to Crandon's admirable summary, in the A.S.P.R. Journal for June, 1926. This article should be regarded as an important contribution to the history of the mediumship, and, like so much of the other literature cited in the present volume, should be read into this record.

CHAPTER XL

Vagrant Sittings in the Old Cabinet

By the Editor

From the moment when the glass cabinet was first introduced, it became the very definite custom to use it for at least the opening part of all séances, with a few well-recognized exceptions. One instance of these is the series [1] of sittings in the old cabinet aimed at the rehabilitation of the scales; and similar series aimed at other specific ends for which the immediate control of the moment was not the immediate issue were also held partly or wholly in the old cabinet. Likewise, when Crandon and one or two old friends like Adler would go into séance for conference with Walter, the glass cabinet was unnecessary and was ignored. Finally, once in a while, when sitting just for the sake of sitting and with no definite goal in view, it would occasionally be the consensus of opinion among those present that the glass cabinet was too much bother. The present chapter is for the purpose of completing the record by reading into it the phenomena of several of these more or less nondescript sittings, in the old cabinet.

On December 22nd, 1925, Walter had an appointment with the two young men from "Tech.," Conant and Gerke; and he had said that it was to be an entirely friendly, chatty affair—"a joke night" was in fact his expression. So the old cabinet was used to save trouble. Walter, coming through promptly, said he was alone and his forces were low. In addition to the presents for the two special invitees,[2] which obviously did not in any way tend to relieve the occasion of the label put on it by Walter himself, there was levitation of doughnut and coin, under conditions of strict double control.

On January 1st, 1926, the record tells us that "Walter was all set for the glass cabinet, but said he would see what he could do in the old one." It does not appear at whose motion the change of plan was made. The action included levitation of megaphone and basket, with touches. "Practically always, when any phenomena were going on, Weston's left hand held the Psychic's right and both of Crandon's." The

[1] Chapter XXXVI.
[2] Page 68.

Psychic went into trance for practically the whole séance; this unaccustomed condition for phenomena in the old cabinet was attributed to the presence of the several strange sitters.

February 6th saw what appears to have been a sociable evening in honor of Holmes. The Psychic and Crandon wore luminous controls on ankles and wrists, and she had a luminous headband. Catamenia was present, and perhaps afforded the reason for sitting under the less formal conditions. There were identifications, activation of the luminous paint, and excellent levitations of doughnuts and megaphone.[3] These "were put on the table by Mrs. Baker, who saw that there were no strings attached to them."

On March 5th, for no reason indicated, the old cabinet was used. Trance came on almost immediately, being again blamed on the strange sitter. There was bell-box action,[4] after which:

> The rest of the sitting consisted in efforts to develop a rod which could be seen over against the luminous plaque. This was shown three or four times, but only as a small tip, the Psychic's forces being apparently low. [No physiological reason for this is mentioned.]

A very successful séance in the old cabinet fell on May 16th. After the routine display of bell-box and scale described in the chapters devoted to these, the record goes on:

> A white handkerchief, with luminous paint in spots on it, was put on the table, and Walter proceeded to do some of the best levitations he has ever shown with it. Murray held the Psychic's left hand; Mrs. Brown held her right hand and Crandon's two hands throughout. Walter passed the luminous handkerchief down under the table, and out and up the far side of the table, making a complete circle. This would seem to require two terminals to do it, or else one terminal must have passed through the substance of the table. Next a luminous doughnut was put on the table with the handkerchief, and Walter shortly passed the latter through the former, and then repeated all the levitations, whirling the mass completely around Murray's neck, then completely around the Psychic's head, then up 5½ feet, and then out towards the other side of the circle 5 feet. An imp with mischief seemed to accelerate the glowing mass as it shot around with incredible rapidity.

[3] See pages 434, 392.
[4] See page 414.

He next did some stunts showing the luminous handkerchief and doughnut to one sitter at a time, and then making it wholly invisible. It seems likely that he used the megaphone for this purpose, though the technique must have been difficult, and must, according to our understanding, have required the use of two terminals. The Psychic was never in trance.

Extremely important observations were made concerning the voice during this séance. The Psychic, during the sitting, ate three peppermint lozenges, and as she talked, we could tell that one was constantly in her mouth. Nevertheless, Walter talked and whistled with his usual freedom throughout the sitting. At one time, the Psychic indulged in a long yawn, and in the very middle of it Walter gave a long whistle. This again proved a complete physiological independence in Walter's voice.

The séance of July 15th, as indicated elsewhere, was not held in the séance room at all, but down stairs, in the room where I ordinarily sleep while stopping in Lime Street. The action and the collateral statements of the record are of extremely miscellaneous character, and I dispose of them here for want of a better place to put them. According to the record:

Walter came through almost at once, the voice seeming to be about a foot above and one foot behind Crandon's head. Previous to the sitting, the Psychic had gone into the regular séance room to get the bell-box, and there she had been faced by a bright white light, six inches in diameter, so she reported. Walter now said that this was part of his apparatus. He kept us going for an hour with merry wit and jest. He rang the bell-box intermittently while the two strangers each lugged it about the room. He then made a light about two feet high which wandered all about the circle and made tangible contact with every sitter. During the most of the phenomena, double control by personal contact was in effect.

The voice machine was now used and worked perfectly with double control.

Matienza now reported that Walter was pulling at his watch chain, and shortly after that his watch, chain, and pen-knife on the other end of it were taken from his waistcoat pocket and put on the table very gently where all could hear it tick. Next it was put with similar gentleness on the floor, and Walter said he thought he would not pick it up from the floor because it might slip and break.

CHAPTER XLI

Paraffin Gloves under the Co-mediumship of Dr. Hardwicke

By the Editor, and from the Records

Nobody will accuse Dingwall, either on his showing in the Margery case or as a matter of more general principle, of being a lenient critic. Surely if he has a fault as a psychical researcher, it is that of giving undue weight to factors adverse to the medium and too little weight to those of a favorable trend. Yet I am betraying no confidence when I say that, in conversation with me, he has agreed that one factor alone in Margery's history is of such enormous weight, affirmatively, as to make a definite adverse judgment quite out of the question until this factor has been completely eliminated. The factor in question, curiously enough, is not a physical but rather a human one. It may be briefly set forth, as follows:

Time and time again, some person (ordinarily but not invariably a man) of unimpeachable antecedents and conspicuous position and no prior connection with the mediumship or with the Crandons themselves, has been brought into their séance room by some chain of circumstances; and has immediately become the center of old or new phenomena in a fashion which can be fitted into the hypothesis of fraud only by assigning him the perfectly definite rôle of wilful accomplice. This, of course, may happen once, or even twice, and be regarded with a certain degree of equanimity. Bank cashiers and ministers, doctors and lawyers, men from all walks of life with previously impeccable records, do every once in so often go wrong and commit robbery or arson or murder under a temptation which happens to steal upon them from a weak side. By the same token, when hundreds of respectable citizens are exposed to the works of a female medium who is alleged to be a trickster and admitted to be too attractive for her own best good, it is not at all out of the human average to picture a certain percentage as affected to the point where they are willing to participate in fraud. But:

Starting with my own first exposure to the mediumship in late 1923, and running right down to the present date, the Margery séance room has again and again and again been the scene of some-

thing which the impervious skeptic can only regard as a fresh outbreak of confederacy from a new and unexpected and eminently respectable source. It is a colossal problem in psychology to say why exposure to the wiles of this one woman so universally corrupts the incorruptible. It is equally a colossal problem to explain just how confederacy has been initiated with such an endless series of strangers, with no single failure to function. Does the lady herself make the advances, or does the new sitter who aspires to an active rôle have to put out the first feelers himself? How does it happen that no single person,[1] having rejected her advances or suffered her rebuff or seen himself supplanted by a newer and more favored aide, has ever "spilled the beans" to the extent of telling us what he did and how he did it and how he was persuaded to do it, or of giving evidence equally damaging in some slightly different direction? Infatuation for the Psychic is given as the motive leading all these confederates into the game; how then does she maintain this elaborate organization free from any disruptive outbreak of jealousy on the part of any of its members? And above all, aside from these operating difficulties, we must deal with the question of averages and probabilities.

If one cashier of a given bank defaults, that is accepted as something that is bound to occur, in the long run. If his successor defaults, that may be a coincidence. But if over a period of years, incumbent after incumbent of this position in this bank is prosecuted and convicted as a defaulter, we shall look for the explanation somewhere else than in the law of averages. Is it not possible that there is a defaulting president who is clever enough to make these others his "goats?" Is there not some other explanation that possesses the inherent mathematical probability which we must deny to the one that appears on the face? And in the same way, is it not evident that there comes a point in Margery's history when we must stop generalizing about her charms, stop generalizing about the human weakness that makes it so easy for her to develop confederacy among her sitters; and ask whether the thing has not gone to a point where the more probable explanation of this long history of alleged confederacy from respectable sources is to be found in some other direction? It passes the limits of easy belief that so many people of good repute and a fair degree of fame should, on first exposure to Margery's phenomena, develop a willingness to aid her and find a means for doing so. Whether

[1] I exclude Code's story as patently unworthy of credence.

one choose to look at it from the human side or from the severely mathematical one dictated by the law of averages, in order to support the belief that Margery's phenomena are a monumental fake we must credit the incredible about her sitters.

As I have indicated above, my own confederacy would come first on the list historically, and perhaps also first in point of intrinsic importance. A great deal occurred during the *Scientific American* examination of the mediumship which even Houdini could explain away only on the allegation that I had falsified the record in his absence and played the part of active accomplice in his presence. The same charges have to be leveled against Carrington. They have to be leveled against Richardson. It is not an entirely negligible factor that they have to be leveled against Crandon; for though he *is* the medium's husband, there must exist a very appreciable possibility that he would not thus coöperate in fraud, even with his own wife. Careful examination of the circumstances under which Messrs. Goodall, Murray, Litzelmann and De Wyckoff have sat will easily add them to the list of essential confederates. In the case of De Wyckoff, his wife's knowledge and consent would seem necessary; and the same necessity applies in only less obvious degree to Mrs. Bird—she will testify that Houdini realized, and was puzzled by, this. A few other names would have to be added to the list of accomplices of 1923–24—notably those of Messrs. Adler and Cross; but with them as with Goodall, Murray and Litzelmann, old acquaintance with the Crandons robs the allegation of some of its inherent unplausibility.

It is, in fact, not until we come into 1925 that we find any conspicuous case to add to that of Carrington and myself—any instance of a person of professional standing and general repute, a total stranger to the Crandons, against whom must be levied the charge that his appearance in the séance room has initiated an immediate and active confederacy. The second such instance would involve Hill.[1a] The first such instance, and the one about which this chapter revolves, deals with a gentleman who is a physician of high standing in the city of his residence, and who has professional connections outside the field of routine practice. When this chapter and the following one were first compiled and put into type, he felt that these connections would be prejudiced if his part in the mediumship became generally known; so I employed for him the pseudonym "Jones."

[1a] See open reference No. 28, Vol. 2.

But the unexpectedly long interval which has elapsed between the preliminary stages of compilation of the present volume and the final ones of publication has modified the situation which previously existed, and made it now permissible to identify him as Dr. Henry Hardwicke, of Niagara Falls; and to point out that while no further account of his presence in Lime Street will occur in this volume, he constitutes one of the focal points of the story which Richardson tells in the *A.S.P.R. Journal*, starting in May, 1928. In the interests of economy, having made this explanation and identification, I allow the name to stand as "Jones" in the text of these two chapters.

He sat for the first time[2] on October 16th, 1925, and I have held out his three sittings at that time for description here in topical rather than chronological sequence. On the first date the bell-box was rung and the luminous basket was levitated; and the Richardson voice machine was used with brilliant effect—all this, despite the fact that the Psychic was, as Crandon uncryptically puts it in his memorandum of the séance, "not feeling well in several respects." On the following evening, Jones was again present, and again with his wife. He had never met either of the Crandons prior to these dates. This séance was carried through, more or less against Crandon's better judgment and despite the fact that the Psychic's physical condition was unfavorable to sitting. I quote Crandon's record:

> Walter came through with pleasant greeting for everyone, and ordered the bell-box removed from the table. Shortly after this, when various members of the circle spoke to Jones, he did not reply; the Psychic reported that she thought he was unconscious (he was at her immediate left in the circle). This was confirmed then by his falling forward on the table; and there he lay for half an hour, partly supported by the sitters on each side, and apparently in deep trance. After about twenty minutes, Walter ordered the light on for two seconds. This was done; and we beheld a teleplasmic hand and half of a forearm lying on the table in front of and in contact with the vertex of Jones's head. We were given no further view of it; but he remained in trance nearly half an hour longer, and we were told by Walter to leave the room immediately at the close of the sitting at 10:30.
>
> This was the first time that Jones had ever been seized or had acted as a medium. The production of this hand was amazing to us all. Every hand in the room was obviously accounted for.

[2] In Lime Street; see p. 84 for his first contact with Margery.—J. M. B.

At the end of the sitting Jones was covered with perspiration and rather shaken in spirit, and complained of ache in his right ear.

Oral report by Crandon and others of those present adds a little to this. At one time early in the séance Walter referred to the fact that "The Kid" was ill and that little or nothing could be expected. On instructing that the light be turned on, he made it plain that Jones was the center of visual interest, his words being approximately: "Turn on the light and look at Jones; *this* is going to be *good*." A little later he remarked, with a chuckle, that when he couldn't get "it" (the teleplasm) from one place, he got it from another. All this, with Jones's trance, is of importance mainly as indicating consciousness by Walter of Jones part in the proceedings, and absence of any possibility that Jones was an innocent bystander, used as a foil by the medium without his knowledge. His own testimony with regard to the reality of the trance will be inserted at the proper point. For the present, we have only to give the record for the next night, October 18th:

Walter came through in about ten minutes and said practically nothing except "Be quiet, please." Directly after this Jones was taken again in trance, but seemed, however, not to be so deep as last night and, from time to time, during a full hour and ten minutes he would occasionally talk to Dudley or Crandon. Apparently a different voice spoke through him twice, but we could not identify the communicator. Then Walter allowed two seconds of red light and we all beheld a sheet of perfectly white teleplasm more or less rectilinear in shape over the skull and face of Jones as he lay on the table. No other view was given, but after this Jones began to complain of his right ear as of pain, and told Crandon that something felt like blood pouring out of it. Then he said, "He has taken enough teleplasm out of me to make a horse. It is piling up on the table. Go to it Walter, I'm game." Shortly after this, every sitter first and last was touched in face or on head with what appeared to be feathers or tail-like ends of bits of plush. Hamilton was touched fourteen times, Dr. Brown six times, Crandon eleven times and the touches went even to the extreme end of the circle fully six feet from either medium. The general opinion seemed to be that the thing was a bird-like materialization. After due time was given, perhaps five minutes, for this materialization to be reabsorbed, the sitting closed.

Following this séance, Jones was not again present in Lime Street until April 30th, 1926. In this interval, and right on the heels of the séances just described, there fell the inception of the glass-cabinet developments and the course of preliminary experimenting in search of definitive procedures for sitting with this apparatus. While this was going on Walter gave no spontaneous display of teleplasm and the sitters were little interested in that aspect. But on three widely separated dates there arose good reason for showing the teleplasm to certain particular sitters: to Walton and the Eddys on December 19th, 1925; to the Baltimore Commission on January 28th, 1926; and to Holmes on March 6th. The record for the second of these dates has been given;[3] those for the two others are here inserted, this being the place where they are in best continuity with the rest of the story.

Sitting of December 19th, 1925, at 10 Lime Street. Present, to left: S. Eddy, Walton, G. Eddy, B. Eddy, Crandon. As the Psychic sat in the cabinet, she threw her head forward in her hands as though already very sleepy. Her hands were very cold. Trance came on immediately and Walter made no other sign or sound. After about nine minutes Walter began talking, greeting everybody and was in a fairly earnest mood. He asked the sitters if they understood the ethics of the séance room, especially that no psychic structure is to be touched without Walter's permission. They understood and agreed. After three minutes more Walter directed the red light to be turned on for one second and we beheld a crude and rudimentary white left hand on the table, connected with the Psychic's body by a cord. During the two hours that followed we had about twenty exposures of this structure, which varied in size, shape and got slightly darker in color as the evening went on. Just before this structure appeared Walton declared himself to be touched on his right hand. From time to time one sitter was allowed by Walter to handle the structure and each did, feeling apparently no bone-like structures in the fingers or in the palm, but as they reached the wrist they all agreed that it felt as if it contained a bone-shaped core, highly resilient like the bone of the fetus.

After a period of this examination the bell-box was put on the table and Walter then showed us the visible teleplasmic hand ringing the bell-box the number of times requested as by S. Eddy and later by B. Eddy, and later by Walton. While this ringing was going on, at one time S. Eddy and another time Walton were allowed to hold the wrist and we could see that the ringing was

[3] Page 376.

not done by a pull down in the direction of the cord, but that the cord or wrist firmly held the hand itself, humped itself and the fingers rang the box. Then the hand was placed on the combined hands of S. Eddy and the Psychic and Walter said "I will now ring the box in the air with the force from that hand." Thereupon B. Eddy picked up the bell-box and it began to ring intermittently and did so continually as he turned 360 degrees and until he put it down, the phenomena beginning and ending in the same period of red light. As he turned and the box came between his eye and the light, he was able to look under the flap and see that there was no mechanism.

The next phenomenon used the luminous basket. The hand was seen holding on the handle. The hand was then seen in the dark to put the luminous doughnut in the basket. The hand then was seen in the red light bearing west on the handle and S. Eddy pulled east on the handle. The pull was estimated at three pounds and was in a direction at right angles to the Psychic.

Shortly after this S. Eddy got a violent slap in the face. It sounded like a boxing glove hitting him but he stood it like a good sport. The hand was seen several times to pick up the doughnut and crumple it and wave it about.

The Psychic's hands and Crandon's hands were visible, of course, during the red light periods and well controlled during the dark periods. It was always known where the Psychic's feet were. The trance was uneasy with groans as if in labor. As the sitting went on Walter got more cheery and talked and whistled freely.

The luminous plaque was put on the table and there Walter deposited the same left hand of which we had seen so much, moved it to any place that B. Eddy requested, and gave its complete silhouette on the plaque. Finally towards the end of the sitting it assumed a rectangular form with buds or protuberances seen, enough like a hand made into a fist. This was gradually withdrawn and the sitting closed at 11 P.M., with no trace of the structure to be seen.

Those who felt the hand declared it to be apparently a left hand; that it was cool or even cold, getting colder as the night went on, resilient like rubber, having no fingernails but evident grisly bones. The cord was described as one to one-quarter inches in diameter and the end of the hand began as an angular joint. There was no pulse in the cord, but it felt vibrant as though alive.

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, March 6th, 1926. In the old cabinet. Present, to left: Holmes, Mrs. Dennett, Dudley, Dennett, Mrs.

Baker, Crandon. Mrs. Stinson was in the background. Trance came on almost immediately. The Psychic wore five luminous markers and had been searched by Mrs. Baker before the sitting and had been conducted by her with hand control into the séance room. She had on bathrobe, stockings and shoes.

Walter came through in cheerful mood and greeted everyone. He said there should really be no sitting tonight because of the Psychic being tired and there having been a lot of irritating publicity in the newspapers during the week. The Psychic's left leg went into Holmes' lap shortly and after about fifteen minutes, filled with story telling and general conversation, a solid object was seen to flop on the table, partly obscuring a luminous doughnut there. This was shortly shoved across and showed a complete crude hand over the doughnut; it seemed small because of the vertical silhouetting. On request this hand was put over on Holmes' hand and later in the evening it was put on the back of his head when he laid his face down on the table. When on the back of his head, Holmes said it was big enough to cover the whole of the back of his head. In other words, it was much larger than a hand. He described it as feeling cool and like a fairly solid jelly, not wet, no odor.

The terminal was now shown in full lying on the luminous plaque and while there was seen to move as a hand. It repeatedly struck Holmes' arm and hand and he was at least four times allowed to feel of it with his fingers. Finally red light was allowed and we saw on the table a thin, crude, five-fingered right-hand. From the wrist there was a cord like an umbilical cord, though flattened, which extended down between the thighs of the Psychic, both of whose feet were now in Holmes' lap, and thence extended upwards.

Everything that Holmes asked for in the way of control, exhibition of the terminal and action by the terminal in the way of telekenesis, was carried out. Among other things Walter showed us the hand ringing the bell-box, not in red light but with the mass to be seen over the luminous spot on the bell-box flapper. Another exhibit was when on request he made the hand completely eclipse the doughnut which is four inches in diameter. The hand also went through the form of handshake with one of Holmes' fingers.

By engagement of several weeks standing, Jones was to be present from April 30th until May 3d, 1926. By great good fortune there was also present on May 1st, a gentleman who has come to play a part in

the Margery case quite as active as Jones's, though of a different sort; this will be described in Chapter XLIII. For the present, he need merely be visualized as an observer of more than the average scientific training and competence, and more than the average of demonstrable detachment from the Crandons. I refer, of course, to Tillyard.

There had arisen a definite project to try, in Jones' presence, for paraffin gloves. No move in this direction had ever been made in Lime Street since the more or less abortive sitting of May 17th, 1924.[4] Whether the return to this theme in Jones' presence was provoked in the first instance by Crandon or by Walter I cannot say, and I doubt that Crandon's own memory is clear on the subject at this date. But there had grown up a definite agreement by Walter to try the paraffin again at this time, and more or less of a promise that he would make good. Of course, both in his and in Crandon's mind, the renewal of this experiment was associated with the idea that there was present, with Jones, a teleplasmic structure that was in some way more responsive to the paraffin treatment that Margery's own teleplasm. But that the latter was visualized as playing a by no means negligible part in the performance will be clear from the fact that Walter indulged in a good deal of preliminary warming-up with the paraffin bucket, starting as early as April 20th. On this date, the paraffin was offered him in a metal pail, which pleased him none too well; in addition, the cameras were not ready, as they ordinarily are when teleplasmic programs of any sort are under way. So he side-stepped the paraffin and gave an ordinary telekinetic show instead. The practice with the paraffin actually came off a few days later, as the two records which now ensue will make clear:

> Sitting at 10 Lime Street, April 26th, 1926, in the old cabinet. To left: Richardson, Hill, Mrs. Richardson, Crandon, the Psychic. Conant for photographs, and Mrs. Stinson in the background.
>
> Under instructions previously given by Walter, three inches of melted paraffin was floating on top of seven inches of water, all at 212 degrees at the time it left the stove downstairs. It was in a papier mache pail, Walter having forbidden a metal pail. It was first put on a stool about six inches from the floor in front of the medium, but was later transferred to the floor under directions.
>
> Walter came through shortly and seemed to be in good form. We soon heard him dabbling about in the pail, and then he called for a pail of cold water to be put alongside of it.

[4] *M. M.*, Chapter XLI.

The medium was searched by Mrs. Richardson before the séance and was clad in kimono and stockings only. Walter said this was still an experimental meeting, and later said that he doubted if the pictures would be first-class. From time to time each sitter was touched apparently with a shell of hard paraffin, Richardson and Crandon being particularly favored. The victrola acted badly and Crandon had frequently to leave the circle to wind it. At such times the Psychic was entirely under control of Dr. and Mrs. Richardson.

Two photographs were taken at the moment Walter directed, one of them after a very brief flash of red light. At this flash we saw something crudely like a hand hanging in the pail on the edge nearest the Psychic. After each flash the Psychic's whole kimono and the white stretcher in the pail remained luminous for a half minute or more.

The victrolla finally gave out altogether, and at about 10:30 Walter insisted that this same group gather tomorrow night to continue the experiment.

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, April 27th, 1926, in the old cabinet. Present to left: Richardson, Hill, Mrs. Richardson, Crandon, and the Psychic. Conant and Mrs. Stinson in the background. The Psychic was clad as usual, having been examined by Mrs. Richardson before the sitting. She was also examined after the sitting with negative results.

Walter came through shortly and commented on the new electric victrola, saying that we should not be too sure that our troubles with it, caused by him, were over. In front of the Psychic was a pail full of water and paraffin and beside that a pail of cold water. From time to time we could hear the terminal flopping about in the paraffin. After a while there were frequent touches of Richardson's hand and of Crandon's head by Walter's terminal covered with paraffin. After a while we were allowed to see, apparently floating on the paraffin, a long yellowish hook-shaped body. Later Walter's terminal, covered with paraffin in the form of a hand was seen in red light resting first in the hand of Richardson, and later in that of Mrs. Richardson. It was also deposited in the dark in Hill's hand. It was either a solid cast of a hand, or it was a paraffin glove still containing Walter's terminal. It seemed to gain in weight each successive touch that it touched Richardson, which makes him think that the shell was thickened by a new dip again and again. There were two periods of red light in which we were allowed to see the hand lying in that of Richardson and Mrs. Richardson. Paraffin was dropped and



PLATE 34. PLASTER CAST, STRIPPED FREE OF PARAFFIN, IDENTIFIED BY DR. CRANDON AS THE FIRST SHELL MADE ON APRIL 30, 1926 (SEE P. 457). THE RECORD WAS WRONG; THERE WERE ACTUALLY TWO RIGHTS, APPARENTLY IDENTICAL, CLASPED SO LIGHTLY THAT THEY FELL APART IN HANDLING; THIS IS THE BETTER OF THEM. OBSERVE ITS ANATOMICAL IMPERFECTIONS, WHICH ARE REGARDED AS SUPPORTING ITS SUPERNORMALITY OF ORIGIN.

UNIV OF WIC

smeared all over the edge of the pail nearest the Psychic, but there was none on the floor and none was found on her hands or person, or that of Crandon. Finally Walter seemed to feel that the glove was done, and then to his great distress it slipped from his grasp and fell into the pail. He said it was easier to do each successive time and that before long we would have the largest and best collection in the world.

Jones arrived as per schedule, and there is nothing that need be said in the way of introduction to the record of his first sitting:

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, April 30th, 1926, 9 P.M., in the old cabinet.

Present to left: Jones, Richardson, Hill, Brewer, Eddy, Mrs. Richardson, Crandon, Psychic. In the background were Conant, Miss Lord and Mrs. Stinson. There were three cameras set up.

There was no sign of Walter until about five minutes, when it was apparent that Jones was in trance. Margery did not go in trance for about forty minutes, but from that time on both were in trance. Walter spoke shortly, and was full of energy and kept us convulsed with laughter throughout the evening. The pail, with melted paraffin floating on boiling water, was in front of Margery, and on the edge of it was built a shelf of black cloth and wire on which paraffin structures might be laid after making. A pail of cold water was alongside. Much agitation of the paraffin was heard, sounding like a big fish in a pail, and Walter kept us in constant fear that he would lose what he was making. He said that he was using teleplasm from Jones, and at certain apparently critical periods he begged us all to chant: "Jones, sit still." This we did for minute after minute. At another time he said that the two mediums were fastened neck to neck [teleplastically, of course,] while he used them. Again he said: "Oh, for a male medium always!" Walter's voice constantly broke into a partial bass tone. After a while there was a big plunge in the water pail, and we could hear gurgles of air apparently coming out of some hole as it filled with water. Again the same thing was apparently lifted out of the water, and a pint of water, more or less, could be heard running out of the hollow structure. At three different intervals he allowed us to see on the pail shelf—the veranda, as he called it—the paraffin structure. The first was, apparently, as he had promised, a right and left hand clasping each other and of different sizes. This was crude, as Walter said it would be because it was a first

attempt. The second structure was a wonderfully perfect right hand, both palm and back being well made. It was short and fat. Walter advised against pouring plaster into it because he said in this instance the outside was better than the inside. The third structure involved apparently an effort to make two hands again. In the first and third, on looking into the small hole out of which Walter must have dematerialized, it was obvious that there were good fingers in the mass.

The conditions were so strict that photographs were taken to show how the structures were delivered. The sitting closed at 10:15 P.M.

Before going on with the second of these sittings, of May 1st, I may conveniently cover a few details which are not made clear in the record, quoting for this purpose from Crandon's letter to me dated May 12th:

> The Psychic was searched before and after each sitting. The cold water pail was searched before the sitting. The temperature of the paraffin was 212° Fahrenheit when it left the kitchen, and 170° at the end of the sitting. Walter would not work in the galvanized pail, so the boiling paraffin and water were poured into a papier maché pail [each night, after being brought upstairs in the galvanized pail in which they had been heated]. The heat took the varnish off the inside of this papier maché pail so that the paraffin had an individual pink color. All the hands were large and masculine. They resembled in no way the hand of either medium, and they were certainly not feminine. Holmes [on May 1st] was told to pull the glove out of the cold water pail, and did so. The mold was found to have the fingers hyper-extended, and the thumb was especially broad. The hand was a fair image of that of Holmes. Walter joked at him, and accused him of making the hand, and asked him how he liked being called an accomplice. The one made that night we filled with plaster of Paris and presented it to Tillyard, to show Sir Oliver [Lodge] and others, and to take home with him. There were imperfections in all the molds, but each one showed that the dematerialization took place through an orifice not over an inch in diameter. They all were different in actual measurement and in proportions from the one made in your [*i.e.*, Bird's] presence two years ago.[5] It seemed as if for all this work Walter used Jones, who was in trance throughout while Margery was in trance only part of the time.

[5] May 17th, 1924; *M. M.*, Chapter XLI, as cited above.

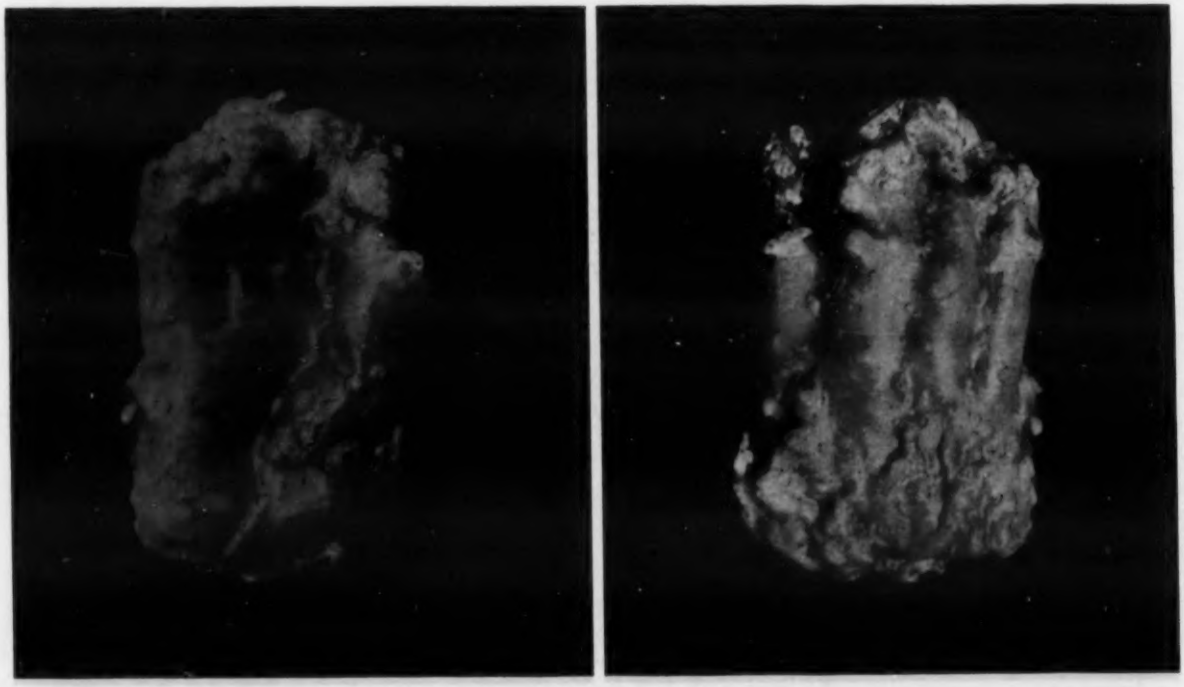


PLATE 35. BACK AND FRONT VIEWS OF A PARAFFIN GLOVE, IDENTIFIED BY DR. CRANDON AS THE SECOND ONE FROM THE SEANCE OF APRIL 30, 1926 (SEE PAGE 458, EXTREME TOP). ASIDE FROM THIS AND THE SHELLS OF PLATES 34 AND 36, OTHER SHELLS INDICATED BY THE RECORDS AS HAVING BEEN DELIVERED ARE AVAILABLE FOR EXAMINATION AT 10 LIME STREET BUT CANNOT BE IDENTIFIED BY DATE AND SO ARE NOT HERE ILLUSTRATED.

UNIV. OF MICH.

The remarks of the above letter will make more intelligible the record, prepared by Crandon as usual, which I next present:

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, May 1st, 1926; in the old cabinet.

Present, to left: Jones, Tillyard, Dudley, Laura Crandon, Holmes, Mrs. Tillyard, Crandon, Psychic. Mrs. Stinson was in the background. She is Walter's [and Margery's] mother, 78 years old, and nearly unable to move on account of general arthritis.

In front of the Psychic was a papier maché pail filled with boiling water on top of which was floating four inches of melted paraffin. This burned off the varnish of the pail, and thus the fluid was tinted pink, which served to identify it. Beside this pail was a galvanized pail full of cold water.

Walter came through promptly and within five minutes Jones was in trance. Five minutes later Margery went into trance. Shortly after this Walter said, "This is too good; I'll have to show it to you. Turn on the light." This was done, and we beheld the two psychics, side by side, both unconscious and snoring deeply. About ten minutes later we were allowed to turn on the red light again, and we saw all over the left side of Jones's head a hanging mass of teleplasm. Tillyard was allowed to feel this with the back of his hand, and reported that it was warm and soft, more or less like wax. We now heard sounds as though a fish were flopping about in the paraffin pail, mixed with an occasional plunge in the cold water pail. Just preceding this the surface of the paraffin glowed occasionally with a psychic light, and similar glowing areas could be seen near Margery's head and over her chest. Other lights were shown over the pail, as though they came from a flat surface. They were visible to some of the circle and not to others, and then the first group might not see it while the second did.[5a] After about forty-five minutes of great agitation in the pail, Walter told us that the hand he was making was done, that he thought we probably could not make a cast of it because parts of it had collapsed, and that he felt his technique would improve with practice. Before the sitting Dr. Holmes had explored the galvanized pail full of water to see that it contained nothing else. Now he was told by Walter to fish in the pail. He did so, and pulled out what we were later allowed to see was a good glove of a right hand. The thumb was excellently well made, the fingers were more or less fused and somewhat collapsed. Later plaster of Paris was poured into

[5a] See *M. M.*, pp. 199–201.

it as far as possible to give it permanency, and then the whole was presented to Tillyard by Margery, that he might take it with him as a souvenir.

Examination of the hands of everybody in the room before they left the circle failed to reveal any sign of paraffin on them. The glove which had been made was obviously masculine, and the thumb bore a striking resemblance to that of Holmes. It was pink, exactly matching the color of the paraffin in the bucket, stained as this was by the coloring matter from the papier maché.

On July 6th, 1926, Tillyard, stopping in England on his way home, lectured before the [British] National Laboratory of Psychical Research on his experiences with Margery. The lecture was published in full in the *British Journal of Psychical Research* for Sept.-Oct., 1926; and reprinted in the *Journal of the A.S.P.R.* for December of the same year. It seems desirable, in view of the extreme importance of Tillyard's position as an absolutely detached corroborator, to depart here from the convention of covering existing literature by citation only, and to quote in full such of his remarks as have to do with the sitting of May 1st. It will be appreciated that the reporting of his lecture in the third person is a canon of British journalism:

Dr. Jones was present at the second séance which the lecturer attended, and, as far as he could see, most of the teleplasm used in forming the psychic hand or glove obtained that evening was formed in this manner from this strong physical medium, who went into trance alongside Margery herself. It took about thirty minutes to produce a large mass of teleplasm and to pile it up on Jones's head. The lecturer asked for leave to examine it and handle it in red light, and this was granted by Walter. Just as he was stepping forward to examine it, he heard Dr. Crandon say to Mrs. Tillyard that the medium would groan when the teleplasm was touched; and, sure enough, as soon as he touched it, Jones emitted a deep groan, though he was sound asleep. It seemed at the time that it was the suggestion made by Dr. Crandon which reacted on the subconscious mind of the medium and made him groan, but the lecturer learnt afterwards by inquiry that the medium always groans when the substance is handled, although he is certainly not conscious of any pain. The lecturer carefully examined the mass of teleplasm and stated that it was white and somewhat shiny, rather like the white part of a large cauliflower cooked and served with white sauce, or perhaps a better simile would be that it was



PLATE 36. THIS GLOVE IS IDENTIFIED BY DR. CRANDON AS THE ONE MADE ON MAY 1, 1926, IN THE PRESENCE OF DRS. TILLYARD AND HOLMES. THE PARAFFIN, AN EIGHTH-INCH THICK, WAS NOT MELTED OFF BEFORE IT WAS GIVEN TO DR. TILLYARD AND TAKEN AWAY BY HIM (SEE PAGE 462, BOTTOM). IT IS A MASCULINE RIGHT HAND AND HAS FEATURES SUGGESTING THE HANDS OF AT LEAST TWO OF THE SITTERS.

UNIV. OF MICH.

like a plate of cooked sheep's brains. As for what it felt like, it was most difficult to describe this; he could not think of any living tissue which gave him either the appearance or feeling of it exactly. One got a very strong impression of great turgidity and firmness, something like that of a well blown-up pneumatic tire, but there was also a suggestion of a living response to pressure, like reciprocation from a friendly hand-pressure.

In the formation of the psychic hand, it was, as had been already stated, Dr. Jones who provided most of the teleplasm, though Walter said that he got most of the "power" from Margery. In this experiment, two buckets were provided, one containing almost boiling water on which was floating about four inches of hot melted paraffin wax, while the other contained cold water. The lecturer had control of these two buckets and sat with his face almost over them so that he could see and hear everything that went on in them. The hot bucket was made of papier maché stained red, and this caused the wax in it to become pink by the end of the experiment; the teleplasm itself, on the other hand, was shining white, and, if any paraffin molds had been secretly introduced from outside fraudulently, they also would have been white; the psychic mold finally produced was exactly the same pink tinge as the wax in the bucket and had clearly been extracted from it. [This of course is not necessarily demonstrative; one might visualize the use of the pink bucket with the soluble coloring matter as a deliberate dodge by a very clever fraudulent operator, who would then have to be thought of as having carefully experimented to determine the precise shade which the paraffin would absorb from this dye, so that a previously prepared glove might be given this shade.—J. M. B.]

When Walter said he was ready to begin, he asked the lecturer what part of his [Walter's] anatomy he [Tillyard] would like to have dipped into the pail for the psychic mold. The reply given at first was that he would like to see a thumb-nail carefully modeled. This, said Walter with a chuckle, would be very easy, and soon afterwards one heard a gentle dip of something into the pail. The lecturer then changed his mind and asked for a mold of the whole thumb, which Walter at once agreed to do. This operation took five or ten minutes, and involved a number of dippings and transferences to the cold water and back. Then the lecturer deliberately changed his mind again and said that he would like a whole hand with wrist complete. Walter demurred somewhat at this, pointing out that he had practically completed molding his thumb and that the hand would be uneven; however, when pressed, he said

he would do his best, and for about fifteen or twenty minutes the dippings into each pail alternately proceeded. Suddenly there was a big splash in the hot bucket and an object was heard to fall right into it; immediately Walter's voice was heard swearing roundly and calling on Mark [Richardson], his assistant, to come quickly and help him as he had badly damaged the mold.[5b] After a lot of splashing and some more dippings into the cold pail, Walter announced that his job was finished but that it would be found to be somewhat imperfect around the lower or wrist end; he then instructed one of the sitters, Dr. Holmes, to come forward and feel in the cold bucket and lift up whatever he might find carefully on to a leather cushion placed near by for its reception. This was done, and red light was turned on gradually while the mediums came out of trance. Dr. Jones came round more slowly than Margery, and when he was examined it was seen that his left ear was considerably inflamed around the place where the teleplasmic cord had been seen emerging.

The psychic mold was allowed to cool and was then carefully examined by all present. It was not closely like the hand of any person in the room, but showed considerable resemblance to that of the lecturer in having the knuckles strongly double-jointed and in being rather short and broad. The thumb had a less broad nail than the lecturer's and was much smaller than Jones's, though otherwise not dissimilar. The whole hand was quite unlike's Margery's, and all agreed that it was a male hand but much too small to be Jones's, quite apart from many obvious differences in shape. Walter claims that it is a model of his own hand; what the lecturer could be certain of was that it was not a model of the hand of anybody present at that séance in the flesh.

The lecturer then exhibited the psychic mold to the audience, pointing out that it had been filled with plaster of Paris to preserve it, but that owing to partial collapse of the fingers, which had less wax around them than the more carefully molded thumb, the wax[6] had not filled the finger cavities completely, and therefore it would be useless to melt the wax away to get a plaster mold, as the finger portions would be misshapen.

[5b] A hostile critic on reading this, wants to know "What did he do to help?" I reply with the utmost candor that I haven't the least idea. I presume this response strikes the critic who asks the question as highly ineffective; while in view of the fact that the spirit hypothesis is not being urged upon any reader of this volume, his original query strikes me as a ridiculously over-strained attempt to pick flaws.—J. M. B.

[6] *Sic:* of course he means plaster.—J. M. B.

Jones was to remain in Boston for two more days; Tillyard had to go on after the evening of May 1st. Two more séances were held, directed at the formation of paraffin molds through Jones's mediumship; and for these I am forced again to rely entirely upon Crandons' records:

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, May 2nd, 1926, 9 P.M.; in the old cabinet.

The pail of paraffin was prepared as usual with the pail of cold water alongside it. The Psychic was searched and her single garment examined by Mrs. Brown before and after the sitting, with negative results.

Walter came through promptly and talked us all into good humor. Jones entered trance shortly, and Margery followed him. There came a faint luminosity over the paraffin pail. Very soon after this a flopping sound could be heard first in one pail and then in the other. This went on more or less for 45 minutes. Then Walter said: "Well, I've done something. The way to deliver these things is in a pail of cold water; they'll collapse otherwise." When the light was turned on we found on the piazza of the pail two molds. One was of a fat masculine right hand, the fingers partly flexed. The other was a mold of two masculine hands, both rights, palm to palm, and bowed from finger tips to wrists in such a manner that no hand could normally get out of them.

Walter said good-night at 10:10 P.M.

Sitting at 10 Lime Street, May 3rd, 1926; 9:15 P.M., in the old cabinet.

Walter came through shortly and ordered the table to be put in the circle over the pail of hot paraffin and the pail of ice water. [A paragraph dealing with identification of playing cards in the early part of the séance is omitted here, being given elsewhere.]

The table was now removed, the water pail having been explored by Dennett and found to contain only water and ice. Much agitation of the two pails was heard for the next half-hour. In the meantime Walter entertained us with talking, serious and light. He said: "I'm not using the Kid tonight, I'm using only teleplasm from Jones. The Kid is only an accessory to the crime." As he went on plunging from one pail to the other he composed some newspaper headlines, thus:

Margery Gives Ghosts Cool Reception at Lime Street.

Entertains Ghosts in Pail.

Refreshments: Paraffin (H) and Ice Water.

In a more serious mood he called new attention to the fact that "this is only kindergarten, except in its implications." He told Jones early in the sitting to sit regularly Saturday evenings in a home circle and try to develop, and that he [Walter] would try to get to him. Shortly after this he said: "This paraffin stays too hot, I guess I'll cool it." Whereupon with the greatest celerity the galvanized water pail was picked up and a quart or more of water poured into the hot paraffin. A moment later he did the same thing again. During this time Richardson had possession of both Jones's hands and Margery's left; while Mrs. Richardson had both Crandon's, and Margery's right. The ice had been thrown out of the pail earlier, and in the pouring act no water was spilled.

At the end of the sitting a good right-hand mold, masculine, was found on the pail shelf, and a hand with forefinger extended like an index. All the other fingers and the thumb of this hand were found floating, separately, in the cold-water pail. The index finger, attached to the main portion of the hand, was bent somewhat towards the stump of the middle finger.

Sitting closed at 10:30 P.M. No paraffin found on any hands.

Hardwicke as we shall immediately see enjoyed further contact with the Lime Street sittings; but when he came again, while the phenomena were of a wholly teleplasmic nature they did not take the direction of a successful paraffin-shell production. This department of the mediumship is of course to be recognized as a direct forerunner of the thumbprints to which so much time was given in 1927, and to which we shall come in due course;[7] but so far as the shells themselves are concerned, we come at this point to the end of the story. It is quite characteristic for Walter to drop a given category of phenomena thus abruptly; sometimes after having got it to a logical climax and sometimes without having successfully done so. Proponents of the mediumship regard this versatility as a strong point and its attackers insist that it is a fatal weakness.[8] In any event, it is distinctly a Walter habit; though of late, he has also apparently developed the ability to go back and repeat a phenomenon out of the past which he has shelved.[9]

---

[7] See open reference No. 29, Vol. 2.

[8] See McDougall's remarks about the red herring; *Journal*, A.S.P.R., June, 1925, pages 302–3.

[9] See open reference No. 34, Vol. 2.

CHAPTER XLII

Further Teleplasmic Phenomena with the Aid of Dr. Hardwicke

From the Séance Records, with comment by the Editor

The extremely successful experiments of Chapter XLI in mediumistic collaboration led to a very definite project to have Jones come to Lime Street at more or less stated intervals. Only one of these visits materialized, but it was of extreme interest. Another natural consequence of the séances of April 30th-May 3rd was a sharp revival of interest, alike on the part of Walter and on that of the sitters, in the teleplasmic side of the mediumship. Pending Jones's next presence, several evenings were given over to this.

On May 6th the Psychic was "tired from the materializations of the recent sittings, and Walter said the force was low, but he had isolated and saved up some force left over from Jones, for future use. Though the molten paraffin was present, he declined to use it." Instead he reverted to the almost abandoned theme of playing-card identifications, and then "went on to produce some faint but distinct and beautiful psychic lights." On the 11th, there was another incident which I think Walter would have us regard as part of this sequence. The record reads:

> The sitting was scheduled for Eddy and his group, but since all could not come it was postponed. Margery, however, felt a strong urge to sit, which was almost irresistible.[1] Walter came through at once, and said: "It was lucky you sat tonight. I was holding on by my teeth. Everything would have been lost if you had not sat." He worked on the luminous basket and handkerchief for about an hour, talking all the while, and saying that he was attending strictly to his important business; but he gave no details.

On May 15th, there was something more concrete, in a sitting held wholly in the old cabinet:

> This was supposed to be a developmental séance only, and so it proved to be. Walter came through promptly and for some minutes whistled a beautiful improvisation to the "Prisoners'

[1] And which was also quite unusual.—J. M. B.

Song" on the victrola. The paraffin had been brought in boiling, with the idea that it might be used. The Psychic went into trance promptly, and a lot of flopping about was heard in the paraffin and in the water pail. Several times he told us to listen, and we could hear as much as a pint of water being poured out of something into the water pail. Richardson was touched several times, with what was apparently a paraffin mold, on the back of his hand.

After about forty minutes of this, Walter suddenly said, "Now I'll show you something, turn on the light." We beheld the face of the Psychic quite covered with this thick white teleplasm, with a long hook-like projection from the region of the nose, looking like a caricature of a nose, perhaps eight inches long. Crandon, on the side, could see it move. With the next exposure, some two minutes later, this proboscis-like process was twelve to fourteen inches long, and as we watched it, the exposure to light apparently caused it to wilt downwards. Walter said that he was molding some teleplasm to the face of the Psychic, with the idea of making a cast of the mold in paraffin. He said also, that that rod we saw in the region of the nose was one of the rods with which he did much of his levitation; that it was the kind of rod described by Crawford; that the Psychic was covered with such projections all over, like warts on a cucumber; that he could make anyone of them grow out to do whatever job was at hand.

On our saying we would sit for progress again a week from tonight, he said, "Oh, not so long, we must go on now that I have steam up."

There exists a supplementary memorandum by Hill, revolving mainly about certain subjective factors of the above séance, but including also the following:

Mention ought to be made of the lateral motion of the proboscis, seen by myself and, I am sure, by Dudley. This introduces a feature other than a mere sagging under the disintegrating power of the light.

On the 20th and 25th (May), there were additional sessions with paraffin and teleplasm. The two records may be subjoined, with no further comment.

Sitting of May 20, 1926, in the old cabinet. Walter came through promptly, the melted paraffin being in the cabinet.

As the running chatter of comment and wit went on, we heard occasional flopping in the hot paraffin, the Psychic being in deep trance. Walter said that he was working on three things industri-

ously, and that we had to sit to help him get on with them. He said that Jones had left enough stuff behind him to make a masculine hand from; that Walter is working on the phantom;[1] and he is seeking to make a rod of sufficiently density to withstand the light, in order that shortly we may photograph the table in levitation showing the rod which lifts it. As an earnest of this promise, Walter gave us three views of a fourteen to eighteen inch hooked rod protruding from the region of the Psychic's nose. The last three inches of it moved laterally, like a cat's tail. The hole was about one inch in diameter, and its base seemed nearly to cover the Psychic's face. It was pinkish in color, and evidently moving. It was the longest rod we have seen.

The sitting closed at 11:30 P.M., and it was interesting to observe that downstairs, later, the Psychic complained that the bridge of her nose was sore. Towards the end of the sitting the Psychic's mouth could be heard working, and Walter said, "You can hear her swallowing the ectoplasm."

Sitting of May 25, 1926, in the old cabinet.

Trance came on in less than two minutes. The pails of hot paraffin and cold water setting in a new box for the purpose were in front of the Psychic, and from time to time we heard dipping in each pail. Most of the time when the dipping was heard there was control of the Psychic's two hands, each by two persons, and of Crandon also. At the end of the sitting a poorly formed right-hand paraffin glove was found on the shelf of the pail. Just before this, Walter exclaimed in despair because he dropped it apparently as he was getting out of it, and it fell into the paraffin pail. We are inclined experimentally from this, to have more paraffin in the pail hereafter so the dip can be deeper.

Besides a lot of interesting and valuable talk there was one new and very striking feature to the sitting. The talk included a statement by Dr. Eddy that he felt that individual survival had been in no way proved by us, that there was no satisfactory evidence that Walter is what he pretends to be. On this Walter commented, "I can proved myself to be what I am in as many ways as you can prove your identity." Someone asked Walter how far away he was when he left us, and to this he replied, "A long distance, but perhaps only really an inch."

We were allowed two red-light views of a proboscis process

[1] Referring to a project often discussed between Walter and the frequent sitters, which as yet has led to nothing. It seems unnecessary to particularize about it here.—J. M. B.

growing from the region of the nose. One was about fourteen inches long and the last five inches of it bent downwards as we watched it. The second view showed a process one inch in diameter in the form of a spiral or corkscrew, the base diameter of the curve of it was about four inches. All sitters saw it and Walter ventured no explanation except that it was preparatory to the structure which we would later see holding up the table.

Regarding the next appearance of Jones in Lime Street there was uncertainty and misunderstanding; so that he arrived unexpectedly on May 28th. On the evening of that date, a sitting was held, with Jones present and in intermittent trance. The phenomena were entirely telekinetic; and though Walter stated that he had got a great deal of force or material out of Jones, the séance action was in no visible respect different from Margery's telekinetic routine.

It had been agreed between Crandon and myself that I should attend when Jones was again present; and following his unexpected arrival, Crandon got in touch with me by long-distance telephone on the evening of the 28th. I had planned a motor trip in another direction over the Memorial Day week-end; it was a simple matter to change my itinerary and go to Boston instead. I arrived in good time for the séance of the 29th, which by prearrangement with Walter was given over entirely to an effort to get further paraffin gloves. Inasmuch as there would therefore be nothing in the way of séance action to record, I decided to forego any attempt to use the dictaphone and to give my entire attention to matters of control and of observation. My séance record, drawn up the following morning, starts with a brief memorandum of Jones's connection with the mediumship, which I have here covered and so may suppress. Taking it up at the point where it first deals with new matter, I give it complete from that point:

> There had been considerable experimenting by the sitters in the effort to determine the best sort of paraffin for séance use, and the best way to handle it. Problems had arisen in connection with the temperature and the depth of paraffin in the bucket which suggested the trial of a hot bucket containing paraffin only, without any water; in conjunction with the usual cold bucket containing water alone. At the same time an effort was being made to find a more suitable paraffin; and for the present evening that in use was the sort employed in the preparation of microscopic specimens. This is of course a very superior product, in its way; whether its

particular properties would render it more, or less, suitable for the technique of psychic molds was not known, and no attempt was made to determine this in advance. An experiment was thus transferred into the séance-room which could perfectly well have been made and which should have been made outside the séance.

Crandon attended to the melting of the paraffin, and when it was brought upstairs it was so hot that the start of the séance had to be postponed until the bucket had cooled somewhat. Relieved of the limiting factor introduced by the presence of water with its fixed boiling point, the contents of the bucket kept getting hotter and hotter the longer it remained on the stove; and when we attempted to sit, the temperature was somewhere in the neighborhood of 300° Fahrenheit. When we finally brought the bucket into the séance room and started the sitting, it was still so hot that it smoked and gave off a very noticeable odor as of scorched wax.

The glass cabinet[4] was used, and the two mediums were placed in it face to face. Margery was at the back, Jones at the front with his back to the door. Between them, a foot or so from the floor, was a wooden shelf-like structure with holes large enough to receive the buckets and permit these to enter to about one-third their height.[5] This was necessary to avoid danger of spilling. The quarters were extremely crowded, and the sharp edges of the shelf were in constant violent contact with the shins of one or the other medium. Jones's chair was ultimately pushed by its entranced occupant part way out of the cabinet.

The whole program revolving about the paraffin, we did not bother to lash the feet of the mediums. The only foot control attempted lay in my verification of the fact that, without a free hand to aid the process, neither of them could shed a shoe; plus the total absence of any paraffin on their stockings at the end of the séance. Hand control was by the customary wire lashings; Margery's hands being lashed at the rear ports of the cabinet, which I had never before seen in use, and Jones's at the forward ones. I put the wires around all four wrists myself, and likewise attended myself to the lashing of all four to the eye-bolts in the outer walls of the cabinet. At the end of the séance I found that my knots had not been disturbed. Over and above the obvious fact that the lashings were too tight to permit escape, the deep marks left by the lashings upon the mediums' wrists offered a guarantee of the continuity of hand control.

---

[4] Contrary to previous practice in sitting for paraffin shells.—J. M. B.

[5] See page 467. A photograph of this box will appear in Vol. 2.

Margery's trance was approximately as usual, although certainly not so restless as ordinarily. Jones's was an extremely restless trance, with constant violent struggling against the lashings to a point where the cabinet creaked and shook severely. From time to time there was partial emergence accompanied by violent profanity about the "damned wires."

We sat for something like half an hour before the paraffin was introduced into the cabinet. During this interval there was a lot of conversation from Walter, and considerable whistling. The latter was of dual character; in addition to Walter's accustomed performance there were feeble imitations stated to be by John. The two whistles came simultaneously and at various moments; once there was a sustained duet accompaniment to the phonograph for ten or fifteen seconds; but for the most part the overlap between the two whistles was not so sustained as this, although clearly present from time to time.

The luminous megaphone, basket, and doughnut were placed on the stand in the cabinet by me. Walter requested that I do this without touching Jones, but I found Jones's knees wherever I explored. When I so stated, Walter said it was all right, it didn't matter if I did touch him. This might be interpreted as accommodation to the existing circumstances; or it might be fitted into the ideas as to Walter's hypnotic background advanced by Tillyard in his letter to Crandon.[6]

There was sustained brilliant levitation of these three objects. The doughnut was levitated first alone and then placed in the bottom of the basket for further levitation. The megaphone and basket then went into levitation simultaneously, and for some minutes they moved freely about in the cabinet. Their paths were quite independent both in locus and in velocity; there could be no question at all but that they were held by independent terminals. They were carried to a height permitting their bumping against the roof of the cabinet, and in general they seemed to range through the entire free space within the cabinet.

At one point during this stage of the sitting we were given red light to look at the mediums, and we found a teleplasmic protuberance of some sort on Margery's face. I likened it to a horn, and somebody else to a butterfly wing. It was not very large, and it was in no degree luminous in the dark. I think it probable that the chief reason why we got no repetition of this was the

[6] These ideas are sufficiently defined by this reference and no quotation from the letter seems necessary.—J. M. B.

extreme disarrangement of Margery's robe. Walter remarked about this a little later, and warned us not to turn on lights at the end of the séance until it had been fixed.

Ultimately Walter called for the paraffin, and with considerable difficulty, in all the red light which the arrangements of the room permit, Crandon, having poured the paraffin out of the galvanized bucket in which it had till now remained and into the papier maché one, was able to lift this very clumsy and dangerous burden over Jones's head and deposit it in its seat between the psychics. [My original record here described the bucket and the arrangements for its use; this has been covered and may be omitted.]

Those present included Dudley, Crandon, the two Richardsons, and myself. I was seated directly in the door of the cabinet in such a way that invasion would have been out of the question—and of course this waives entirely the point that Jones is an enormous man (230 pounds) over whom nobody could possibly climb in the dark without a fearful racket. All emphasis should be placed upon the control conditions in connection with the fact that for a long time after the paraffin and water buckets were put in place there was continual noise of working in these two buckets. The noises were not such as could be produced by kicking the buckets. They were very emphatically as of dipping, first into the one bucket, and then into the other, and ultimately on several occasions they were as of the dropping of a fairly crisp finished product upon the shelf.

Walter expressed on several occasions much difficulty with the paraffin, and finally he stated that he was not at all pleased with his product and that he was going to destroy it. This remark was followed by a noise as of dropping something into one of the buckets. After the séance two observations were made, checking up the good faith of all this.

The paraffin was altogether unmanageable, either because of its inherent characteristics, or because of the extreme heat to which it had been subjected. It was altogether too granular to permit adequate molding. I took a small piece of it, and rolled it into a ball between thumb and finger. After a very little of this treatment, it became the consistency of overdone fudge and fell apart in much the same way that this material does. It would have been quite out of the question to make a decent mold with it.

The paraffin bucket at the end of the séance was at a more or less critical temperature, the bulk of its contents being still liquid, but the parts in contact with the sides of the pail having begun to crystallize against the pail. In the bottom there was a large

mass whose solidity was barely such that we were able to detach and recover it. It was obviously a fragment of a hand mold, showing particularly the hollow character at what we took to be the ball of the thumb.

The outcome of this séance, therefore, was profoundly unsatisfactory. To be sure, strong and persistent action of some sort was obtained in the pails, for which no adequate explanation appears to be available. But that is not so much to the point, as is the fact that a definite result in the way of a finished mold was to have been produced, and failed to occur. Entirely because of the use of the séance-room as the theater for an experiment by the sitters, which should have been conducted elsewhere and at another time, conditions were set up which, on the assumption of genuineness, would have prevented Walter from producing the scheduled phenomenon, at this time when a positive result was so greatly desired. As a consequence, there was brought about a parallelism with the course of events which would be expected from a fraudulent case—failure of the phenomena to occur under a critical and competent observation and control. Moreover, if one insists upon the unsuitability of the paraffin as the primary physical cause of this failure, what is one to say to the critic who accepts this plea, but lays the whole thing up against an extremely clever premeditation by Crandon and the Psychic? Aside from insisting that I am not the only critical and competent outside observer, and that the phenomena do not have to occur under my eye in order to be valid, there is little enough that one *can* say.

If, however, the paraffin-mold aspect of Jones's co-mediumship scored a fiasco in my presence, the purely teleplasmic aspect achieved, on the following evening, the most brilliant verification imaginable. This was (approximately, not exactly) the third anniversary of the mediumship, and the idea was to have the old original circle (minus Cross [7] of course), plus the two mediums. In addition, Jones, Jr., was to be present. Despite his father's completely non-psychic history up to the time of coming in contact with Margery, this young man of eighteen years has a most decided history of random and undirected mediumship. As early as his third or fourth year, disturbances in his room would be of such force as to waken the entire family. He had been in Boston on the 29th, but not at the séance. On the 30th

[7] See *M. M.*, page 15.

he was to be present, in order to add every possible favorable factor to the psychic environment.

As another reproduction of the past atmosphere, I was to occupy my traditional position of 1924, outside the circle in the space between Crandon and Margery, controlling the junction between their hands and controlling their feet intermittently. This made it again necessary to give up any notion of using the dictaphone. My record is based upon rough memoranda made after the séance, and amplified and brought into finished form the following evening in a New York hotel:

> Séance of May 30th, 1926: 10 Lime Street. Sitting held entirely in the old cabinet. Circle, clockwise: Margery (in the cabinet, as usual), Jones (at the end of the table, outside the cabinet), Dr. Brown, Adler, Mrs. Brown, Jones, Jr., Crandon, Bird (not an integral part of the circle, but in position of control outside [as indicated above]), Margery again. Outside the circle, in the northerly half of the room: J. H. Brown, Dudley, Murray, Mrs. Murray, Newman Gray, and an acquaintance of Jones from his home city.
>
> Margery was not in trance at any time during this séance, and accordingly had her first noteworthy experience in first-hand observation of teleplasm. Jones, Sr., was in trance throughout. In this connection it may be stated that he falls into trance with great ease and promptness; on the 29th he was off long before Margery. On the present occasion he slumped forward on to the table almost with the extinction of the light. His trance was restless and talkative; but not so much so as the night before, and without the intervals of semi-waking. Jones, Jr., was in light trance from time to time.
>
> A collection of luminous articles was available behind the corner of the cabinet, but was not called for. The entire proceedings revolved about the production, apparently from Jones's ear, of what constituted by far the largest mass of teleplasm yet seen in Lime Street.
>
> The intended character of this manifestation was not at all obvious in its beginnings. With Jones entranced, head on table, we all saw what we took to be a psychic light of the 1923–24 model. It was perhaps the size of a lemon, of approximately elliptical outline, and rather more clean-cut edges than would be necessarily implied by the reference to psychic lights of a prior period. Part of the time it was stationary on the table, and part of the

time in considerable motion. There seemed absolutely no reason to connect it organically with Jones, and I am sure no sitter had so connected it in his mind. After this light had been present for some moments it began to increase in size. Presently it was apparently oblong, perhaps six inches long and two to three inches across. It stood up vertically and in this position bobbed vertically up and down through a range of perhaps a half foot. Presently it dawned upon the sitters that the thing was growing. I think this constitutes an adequate description of this stage of the proceedings. The thing continued to grow longitudinally, but little, if at all, in the lateral sense; and it continued to move vertically and now, to some degree, in other directions. At all stages, here and later, the edges were decidedly clean cut, as though we were dealing with a definite object rather than an indefinite luminous area. The direction of growth which I have described above continued until we had a luminous object apparently fastened or held to the top of the cabinet and extending to the table. It stood, or lay, in a slight arc, and retained its essentially long and narrow outline.

It was not until after it had reached the stage just described that organic connection with Jones began to be evident. Some sitter presently exclaimed that the lower end was draped over Jones's head on the table, and it became very soon evident that this was the case. This lower end began to develop to a large degree until the bottom part of the luminous matter had taken on a large bulbous outline which seemed to correspond very closely to the general size and shape of Jones's head.

Dr. Brown, immediately adjacent to Jones's head on the table, verified the general impression that his head was quite wholly draped in luminous matter.

The next stage was one of the most striking things I have seen in this séance room. Assuming the organic connection with Jones to have been by a cord to the ear or nose, this cord was either dark or so overlain by the general mass as not to be noticeable. The effect which now began is best described in terms of the following simile. Imagine the long, narrow, luminous zone to be a snake with its tail coiled or otherwise fastened to the top of the cabinet and its large flat head overlying Jones's. Imagine the body of this creature as being rapidly turned upward in an arc concave upward, and the head as being raised from its contact with Jones at the end of this arc. Imagine each of these arcuate movements as being followed by a stretching process, and picture the stretching as across the table in the direction of Jones, Jr.

Imagine each of these stretchings as accompanied by a pronounced growth of the forward end, or head.

This occurred anywhere from ten to twenty times and was accompanied by a phenomenon visible for the most part only to Crandon and to myself. That is, we saw plainly silhouetted against the luminous mass on our side a dark object which we took to be Walter's teleplastic terminal. The obvious inference was that the teleplasmic mass was not alive in its own right, as its behavior might suggest; but that it was inert and being manipulated by this dark terminal. Walter, on interrogation, said that this was correct. He said that this terminal was developed from Margery, as always, and that this represented her sole contribution to the action of the seance. For the most part the silhouette was not seen in any critical position. That is to say, we might see the rod portion of the terminal silhouetted against the center of the luminous mass, and nothing more. But on various occasions we saw also the single or double finger-like process at the end of the terminal.

The prima facie reason for the behavior of the luminous mass which I have just described was to draw power from Jones, Jr. He was in trance, more or less collapsed on Crandon's right shoulder. For quite a time each forward surge of the luminous mass culminated in actual contact with his head or face; and each contact of such sort was accompanied by a rather sepulchral groan from Jones, Jr. After this had gone on for quite a time, it very definitely stopped, and Jones, Jr., was suddenly and unexpectedly found to be out of trance.

The luminous mass continued to be present for anywhere from fifteen to thirty minutes after this tapping of Jones, Jr., had ceased. Motion and change of shape continued, but not on a very liberal or very interesting scale. One extraordinarily interesting incident occurred, however. We were given a very brief interval of red light to look at it, Crandon being instructed to turn light on and immediately off. We saw the whole mass draped from the top of the cabinet and hanging in a long, sweeping curve to Jones's face and head, which was largely covered. A simile suggested by several sitters was that of too-granular paraffin or of a taffy pull. After the red light went out again we noticed a considerable increase in the luminosity of the mass. The effect was just as had been observed earlier in the year when Margery's own white lace-like teleplasm had shown a heavy luminosity following its exposure to flashlight. Thinking in terms of the most obvious expression along conventional lines, Crandon and one or two of

the other sitters consulted as to the ultra-violet content of the red light. They agreed that this was slight.

Measurements taken after the séance showed that the teleplasmic mass, at its maximum, was somewhere between 60 and 80 inches long. This measurement was made from the top of the cabinet to a point on the table which all sitters agreed had been reached by the mass. No such marker existed for the width or thickness, and the best evidence here would seem to come from the moment of red light visibility. At this moment I took the mass to be somewhere in the neighborhood of six to eight inches wide and perhaps an inch or two thick at its thickest point. The process of disintegration was more or less parallel to that of production. The mass retained its connection with Jones's head and was detached from the cabinet, but it did not collapse, so one may infer it was held from above by a teleplastic terminal. Its lower end remained fixed in position and size, while it shrank from above. Presently it attained an approximately vertical position and straight-line outline, standing up from the medium's head to a height of perhaps a foot. Only then did shrinking begin at the lower extremity. Presently we had what to all appearances was a simple and isolated psychic light of a long, narrow shape. This bobbed up and down, and each excursion seemed to be accompanied by a diminution in size. At the end there were three very noticeable discontinuous drops in size, luminosity, and clearness of out line (all three simultaneously). After the second of these drops, what was left seemed to lie on the table, in a position where Jones's head hid it from most of the sitters. After the third drop it was all gone; and with considerable promptness Jones was out of trance and Walter was gone.

This sitting was featured also by the dual whistle described for the 29th. Nothing need be added to what was there said, except perhaps that Crandon credited John with an improvement in technique.

After the luminous mass had been detached, and while it was still rather extensive, it hung in the air in two limbs, and Walter's voice was heard, apparently issuing from the point of juncture. Practically all sitters were agreed in placing the voice in the region of the upper part of the teleplasmic mass.

Whenever I wished to do so I was permitted to verify the integrity of the hand-hold between Margery and Crandon. Brown likewise was in a position to make the analogous observation between Margery and Jones, since Margery's arm was carried out onto the table by Jones's in order that his head might rest on their

two arms rather than on the table. This put their handclasp on the table immediately in front of Brown, and made it simple for him to verify its integrity without dropping Jones's left hand. At various critical points of the séance he and I simultaneously checked up the condition at these two points of control.

Jones came out of his trance in a state of mind which he aptly describes as "fighting mad" with Walter. He states that this is quite usual; that at the moment of emergence he always feels this violent grievance, which usually takes the form of mild threats (and profanity) as to what he would do to Walter if he could get his hands on him. It ought to be specified that with complete return to normality this passes off entirely; that Jones is thoroughly interested and altogether willing to be subjected to Walter's control. His own observations of his symptoms after trance and during moments of semi-emergence are interesting and should be of value. He writes me:

> To obtain an account of the sensations experienced when going into and coming out of trance, one would be forced to transcribe them at once; for each trance is different in some respects from the others. When depending upon one's general memory, all these experiences run together, and might be described with great lack of accuracy. However, in the main, the following may be taken as a most general type of the experience:
>
> The first sensation seems to be that of a detachment from the rest of the group, a loss of interest in what is going on about me. This is accompanied by extreme lassitude and heaviness, lasting for various periods. The next feeling is one of motion forward and back, at first gradual as though the body were swaying and the chair stationary, then with increased rapidity until the chair and the room are included in the motion. Then everything falls into space and keeps on falling. There seems to be no stop that I am conscious of. A buzzing sound now begins to make an impression upon my mind; I realize that the motion is now from side to side and diminishing apparently in the same ratio in which it increased. Then words and touches from the group begin to register; but even after consciousness has fully returned, the side-to-side motion continues, but working toward the center of the body and toward a gradual consequent fading out.
>
> There is absolutely no sense of time lapse. Going in and coming out are one motion, instantaneous, in the face of the fact that the other sitters tell me an hour has elapsed. Nevertheless I always have a very strong feeling of being familiar with all the details of

the séance as these are talked over afterwards, as though I had been there. Yet if any such description is left unfinished, I cannot carry it on.

Again, there is a feeling of having met someone, or talked out a very delightful conversation, of which one is unable to recall a word, while still retaining a distinct impression of its joy and beauty. This is a most baffling feeling.

Jones of course is an M.D., yet it is natural enough that in many of the highly technical aspects of neurology and psychiatry he is little better informed than any intelligent layman. The present chapter has been read in proof by Dr. Hyslop, who is a practicing neurologist; and he has supplied the following comment:

The description of the mental state succeeding trance is interesting in that it presents features which one sees commonly in certain types of epileptiform attacks. Certain writers have drawn attention to the occurrence of somewhat similar phenomena in various types of lesions of the temporosphenoidal lobe. The impression of the patient that he has experienced something familiar, yet which cannot be definitely recalled partly because the impression seems to be fleeting, is known as the *deja vu* phenomenon.

The temporosphenoidal cortex is phylogenetically very old. Its correlation both with taste and smell, which are primitive forms of sensation, and with rather peculiar states of consciousness, have been occasion for speculation.

I am unaware of any data giving information as to what may go on in the brains of mediums as an accompaniment of trance. In a series of three sittings with Mrs. Piper a few years ago I made the following observations:

As trance approached breathing became slow and deep, the left pupil contracted, mild cyanosis occurred and Jacksonian twitching appeared in the fingers of the right hand. These phenomena reached their maximum intensity as Mrs. Piper entered the trance. Once trance was established, respiration became less labored and the cyanosis disappeared. When coming out of the trance the finger twitching re-appeared, and both pupils at first were quite small. This series of events occurred each time I saw Mrs. Piper. These phenomena point toward some physiological alteration in the left cerebral hemisphere of Mrs. Piper, and warrant the conjecture that her trance is associated with temporary physiological changes.

CHAPTER XLIII

A Distinguished Sitter from Abroad

Compiled by the Editor, from the Séance Records and Other Sources

The existence, in Boston and Cambridge, of an active group of anti-Margery propagandists has been hinted at in previous chapters, as well as in material previously published elsewhere. The terms in which this propaganda is conducted need not be exposed in detail or subjected to a detailed refutation; for such details are of no large bearing upon the scientific questions which the mediumship puts at stake. The validity of the phenomena is properly to be adjudged on physical grounds alone; and no matter what may be done by the irreconcilables in prosecution of the thesis that nothing good can issue from Lime Street, no valid scientific end can be served by taking any part in these personalities. A decent regard for the historical verities, however, makes it necessary to show that much of the contemporary objection to Margery's validity *does* consist in organized propaganda, mainly from a single source and a tainted source.[1] To such degree as may be necessary to show this we must be permitted latitude to diverge from strictly scientific consideration of the strictly scientific aspects of the case.

With regard to the existence of the adverse propaganda there is a certain question of fact at issue. General inquiry directed at persons of responsibility in the department of psychology at Harvard or in the Boston S.P.R. always elicits the reply that these persons have circulated no reports adverse to the morality, etc., of the medium or her husband or her sitters; that they have engaged in no adverse propaganda, etc., etc. One of them, addressing Margery in person, had the teremity to state, above his signature, that he had never spoken ill of her. Prince has seized every opportunity to deny that the Boston S.P.R. has any official position adverse to Margery or indeed that it is sufficiently interested in the case to be the haven for adverse propaganda; and if we interpret this statement in the strictest sense as denying merely the occurrence of a personal equation from an impersonal organization, it is of course quite true. In the face of all this,

[1] See page 14, and open reference No. 35, Vol. 2.

it becomes highly pertinent to introduce four eminent and disinterested witnesses.

Dr. F. C. S. Schiller, past President of the (British) S.P.R. and a psychical researcher of experience and distinction unsurpassed by any living person, was present at the Philosophical Congress held in Cambridge in the early summer of 1926. Naturally he saw much of the anti-Margery personnel, from McDougall down. Writing in *The Nineteenth Century*,[2] he tells us that he was exposed to anti-Margery propaganda which impressed him as irrelevant and inexplicable. His precise words are:

> The hypothesis of fraud is in this case seriously embarrassed to suggest a motive for the action of the Crandons. The alleged motives *that were whispered into one's ears* at Boston last summer by the active anti-Margery party, *though often libellous*, all seemed psychologically improbable and insufficient.

The italics are mine; I employ them to stress the fact that this very eminent authority testifies to the reality of the propaganda and the irresponsible fashion in which it has been prosecuted.

Further testimony comes from a source not less well known to psychical science—Mr. F. Bligh Bond, whose study of automatic writings has had the highly pragmatic results which he emphasizes in the Clark University Symposium.[3] Mr. Bond has had no opportunity to testify in print; but in a private communication to me he says:

> On my arrival in Boston in December, 1926, I was received with cordial welcome by many persons of good standing among whom I soon became aware of the existence of a strong anti-Crandon propaganda. To my surprise this did not center on the question of the reality or otherwise of Margery's phenomena; though their genuineness was usually denied I was not asked to subscribe to this opinion. But I was impressed on all sides by arguments of a personal nature principally directed against Dr. Crandon, who was assailed in his moral and professional reputation alike. There were vague reflections upon the honor of his household. I was told in so many words that, if I cultivated the society of the Crandons or in any way allied myself with their cause, I should forfeit my social standing in the city and lose any influence which I might enjoy. The stories told me were specific, and took every conceivable and

[2] July, 1927; Vol. CII, No. 605, p. 58.
[3] *The Case For and Against Psychical Research;* Clark University, 1926.

inconceivable form; some being fantastic to a degree and others mutually contradictory. In no case was any definite authority given; but it was speedily apparent to me that I was expected to receive these stories without question as to their authenticity.

Bond's testimony added to Schiller's would make it appear that any stranger coming to Boston with credentials putting him more or less in the confidence of the McDougall-Prince-Worcester faction ought to expect an exposure to this sort of thing. That such is in fact the case would further appear from conversation which I have had with Miss May Walker, the peripatetic unofficial representative of British psychical research, and from letters written by her to Bond and to the Crandons which I have seen. Miss Walker, as we shall see later,[4] had two sittings during 1926 in which the conditions did not impress her as adequate for the exclusion of fraud. Combining her observations to this effect with what she had been told by the Boston antis, she concluded that the mediumship was a monumental imposture. She called upon me at my office in late 1926 or early 1927, and in a long interview tried to make me realize the gravity of my own position—I was responsible, more than any other person, for whatever of credit the case enjoyed; and where would I and my Society be when the bubble burst? But in June, 1927, Miss Walker had further séances in which every question left open by her previous experience was completely disposed of, and in which she saw an abundance of phenomena which she could not possibly regard as other than genuine.[4] While she was under the impression that the case was bad, she had written to her many European friends telling them this and retailing a considerable portion of the libelous anti-Margery gossip which she had picked up. In her oral expressions of regret for this to me and in her written expressions of regret to the Crandons and to Bond, she is highly explicit as to the existence and the unpublishable details of the anti-Margery slanders.

Finally we have the case of another gentleman who came a long way to attend the Philosophical Congress in Cambridge—Dr. R. J. Tillyard, F.R.S., of the Cawthron Institute, Nelson, New Zealand. Tillyard is an entomologist, in public or semi-public service, and I am told that his reputation in his field is world-wide. He has been sent, by his government, on an almost world-wide mission in search of parasites which

[4] See open reference No. 30, Vol. 2.

might be imported to New Zealand to prey on insect and other pests now rife there. He brought with him to Boston an interest in psychical research which was made the keener by virtue of the fact that he had never seen any of the phenomena; he brought also advice from Sir Oliver Lodge to the effect that there were two things in America which he must not miss: Niagara, and Margery. His connection with the Philosophical Congress brought it about that he met McDougall as inevitably he did the Crandons. At this point, it becomes in order to let him tell his own story;[5] it is of course British reporting custom that throws it into the third person:

> At that time the lecturer did not even know "Margery's" real name until he looked it up in the *Scientific American*, and even then he did not know her address, so he wrote to her, "Mrs. Crandon, Boston." The letter found its billet, and a kind reply reached him from Dr. Crandon, telling him to let him know when he was in Boston and to come and have dinner with him, after which a sitting would be arranged. Owing to a motor accident he was three days late in getting to Boston, and instead of a week, as he had hoped, he could spend only three and one-half days there. One of the evenings was booked for a dinner which the biologists were giving him, and the other evenings, namely April 29th and May 1st, he spent with the Crandons. It was one of the most extraordinary experiences he had ever had in his life. He did not know whether those present realized the stir Margery had caused in that quaint old city of Boston, the center of American intellect and culture. It was strange to find the intellectual University of Harvard in the throes of a mental, if not a moral, revolution because of one woman. He could only refer to it in the way in which it had reacted on him.
>
> The hospitality of Boston was very marked. He was the guest of professors who showed him every kindness; in fact, there was nothing too troublesome for them to undertake on his behalf. One of them had a car and offered to run him around wherever he wished. But when he mentioned 10 Lime Street, they begged him not to go to that place. *One professor of Harvard told him it was a thoroughly bad place, that his honor would be stained forever if he went, that no decent man or woman should set foot inside that door, and they even insinuated that Margery was a descendant of*

[5] Lecture delivered, July 6, 1926, before the National Laboratory of Psychical Research, London; published in the *British Journal of Psychical Research*, Sept.-Oct., 1926, and in the *Journal of the A.S.P.R.*, Dec., 1926.

Mary Magdalene.[6] They did their best to stop him going, but when he asked them if they had ever been they said they would not think of going, that the woman was a vampire, and so on, and that he would be thoroughly compromised if he went. He told them, however, that they could not "put that over" a New Zealander, and he decided that he would go; so one of them finally consented to drive him there.

He decided to see Professor McDougall before he went, and with him he had three hours' conversation; in other words, the Professor talked to him for three hours, partly on his own theories of psychology and partly on the wickedness of the Crandons. The lecturer said to him, "If this is so, will you put me up to a few tips?" whereupon McDougall said that he thought Crandon employed a magnet in the scales experiment, and he gave him a little child's magnet[7] to take with him to test this effect; he also gave him several other "tips." He listened to all that McDougall had to say, and agreed with him that possibly the whole thing was a gigantic conjuring trick, though McDougall, in answer to his direct challenge, could not bring any definite evidence of fraud against Margery. All he could say was that she was far too clever to allow fraud to be evident, but he did not believe that she did the things in question except by fraud. That was the attitude of these men throughout, and on going later through the various departments of Harvard he could see that that University was thoroughly materialistic. It was the most materialistic university he had ever come across. They had no time whatever for anything that contravened the tenets of materialism. They held that if a thing was not provable on a materialistic hypothesis it must be a fraud.

Tillyard, as he tells us above, sat on April 29th and May 1st, 1926. His record for the second of these dates, originally published in the British Journal of Psychical Research,[8] we have had in full in Chapter XLI, and we have seen that it fully verifies the occurrence and the reality of the phenomena. His record for the 29th was similarly published in England; and similarly, in order to have at least one detailed account of every vital séance in the present volume, we depart from our usual procedure with previously published material and give it here too:

---

[6] My italics.—J.M.B.

[7] Which Tillyard used to test the Lime Street scales, with negative result.—J.M.B.

[8] I, 5; Jan.-Feb., 1927; pp. 150ff.

FIRST SÉANCE, THURSDAY, APRIL 29TH, 1926.—In this record M stands for the medium, Margery (Mrs. Crandon), C for Dr. Crandon, R for R. J. Tillyard, P for Mrs. Tillyard, D for Mr. Dudley, Mr. L and Mrs. L for Mr. and Mrs. Litzelmann respectively.

At 6:30 P.M., R and P dined with Dr., Mrs. and Miss Laura Crandon, Mrs. Stinson (Margery's aged and infirm mother) and a young Mr. Gray. The latter said good-bye and left after dinner. The rest of us adjourned upstairs to the book-room on second floor, and were joined between 8 and 9 P.M. by Mr. Dudley and Mr. and Mrs. Litzelmann.

At 9 P.M. the whole party moved up to the séance room on the fourth floor. P took M into the bedroom opposite and examined her and her clothing thoroughly. M wore only a wrapper, which she took off and allowed P to examine inside and out, and thin stockings and shoes, the latter tied on with bows of ribbon which could not be tied and untied by the feet alone; M took her shoes off and showed them to P, who also examined M naked except for her stockings. P was satisfied that there was nothing concealed either about her or her clothing.

P returned with M, not leaving her side until she was completely tied up in the cabinet. The latter was a well-constructed one with plate glass sides, back and door. Strong brass eyelets were let into the floor, sides and back, and bolted on the other side of the wood. By means of stout picture-wire made of a number of strands, R then bound M's hands and feet tightly into position, the hands being placed first through small slits in the sides and tied outside. To ease the pressure, the wires were passed first through ordinary rubber tubing just long enough to encircle wrists and ankles; each limb was fixed as tightly as possible and could not be withdrawn, and each was tied strongly with five or six knots, so that it required a pair of very strong scissors to cut the medium free after the séance. M's neck was also fixed by R, into a position drawn well back by means of a leather strap, so that M had barely enough movement to lean her head sideways to right or left. P examined R's knots and passed them after pulling two tighter; she also examined M's wrists and ankles for double-jointedness to see if she could in any way slip through the loops, but found this quite impossible. The neck collar was padlocked into position by R, who pocketed the key.

The circle was formed as follows, naming from left to right of the medium: R close up to M and in control of her left hand by holding when considered necessary; Mrs. L; C; P; Mr. D next

open door of cabinet on right. Mr. L sat just outside the circle between D and P. P kept her foot on D's all the time. Old Mrs. Stinson sat apart through (1) and (2) only, well outside circle to left.

Before beginning, all the apparatus was examined carefully. The Victrola (gramophone), rheostat and red light were in the positions mentioned in published works of these séances. The cabinet, however, was a newer one, and was placed about middle of that side of the room opposite the red light and Victrola, the medium facing the door, which was a strongly-made new one with a lock not penetrating through to the outside, so that it could only be opened or shut from within.

Inside the cabinet on right side was fixed a maximum and minimum thermometer, which C set, before the séance, by means of a small magnet; the temperature was read as 72° Fahr. and was found to have risen only slightly after the séance.

At the start, the Victrola was turned on to play softly a new negro melody record by Judge Hill; by means of an electric device, the needle switches back to the beginning when the record is done, so that the music is kept up all the time.

Lights out. M in trance, verified by red light at intervals. Almost at once "Walter's" voice (W) came through as a hoarse whisper, "Hello, hello," with occasional whistles, and soon began to talk freely and wittily, mostly from rather high up inside cabinet to right. W referred to R as the "insect man" and "bugologist." He whistled part of the tune in time with the Victrola.

1. *Letters and Basket Experiment.*

A flower basket with a high wicker handle was used, having three bars of luminous paint on handle and dabs on the sides. Outside cabinet behind R's chair was placed a large box containing some fifty or more letters and figures carved in wood, 3 or 4 inches long. In the dark, R was told first to pick out as many of these as he cared to, without feeling them enough to recognise (this to rule out telepathy) and to drop them into the flower basket; this he then placed in front of the medium on a cross-board fitted into the open front of the cabinet. Walter said he would name them as desired. R then asked him to pick out one and name it. W rocked the basket to and fro gently, whistling to himself all the time; finally the basket tipped over towards the medium and we could hear one of the wooden numbers being fumbled with and extracted. W then said "Here is one of them; it's a K. I will throw it at the lady." He at once threw one block so that it

hit P's feet in the dark. P felt for it, picked it up in the dark, felt it all over and announced that it was a K all right.

W then took out a second block and said it was an 8. This was thrown as before to P, who picked it up in the dark and verified that it was an 8. The third block was announced by Walter to be an E and was thrown as before, P verifying it as correct.

When the K was thrown and verified, C said to P in explanation, "Now you see, Mrs. Tillyard, there are three points about that K," whereupon W broke in with a chuckle, "No, there aren't; there are *four* points about a K, ha ha!"

For the remaining two blocks, R asked that they be determined and thrown out together. W said they were a 4 and a Y and then threw them out together, but they did not fall as far out of the cabinet as the single ones. P felt for and picked up both and verified that W was correct.

W then said that the "bugologist and the lady" might put into the basket any objects they liked and he would tell them what they were. R took out of his pocket a pair of curved entomological forceps in a small green baize cloth holder, and placed it in the basket. P took off a heavy silver and amethyst brooch. W first extracted the forceps and stated that they were "a sort of tweezers," and threw them out on the floor. R then asked whether there was anything else to note about them, and W at once said "Yes, they are covered with cloth." He then tossed P's article out saying that it was a large brooch.

When R remarked to W that he used a considerable amount of force in throwing the articles out, he replied, "Yes, force, not oatmeal," causing a good deal of laughter.

2. *Levitation of Basket and Luminous Doughnut.*

For this experiment the same luminous basket was used, and, in addition, the "luminous doughnut," which was simply a large ring of thick paper cut out into the form of a doughnut, 4 inches in diameter, and covered all over with luminous paint.

First of all, the basket alone was used. R placed it on the shelf in front of cabinet. W rocked the basket about, singing gently to it "Hush a bye, baby" and also whistled very sweetly and clearly. He then turned the basket on its side with handle towards M and dragged it across shelf. Finally he lifted it off the shelf and it floated and waved about high up in the cabinet, twisting, turning and gyrating in all directions. After a while it was returned to shelf and light was called for.

In red light, R was handed the doughnut and told to put it in the basket and place both on the floor. With lights out, W then rocked and pulled basket and doughnut towards medium, making a great to-do and freely swearing at the mix-up he was getting into owing to the number of wires and other things in the way. W finally got the doughnut out of the basket and it rose into the air and floated about right up at the top of the cabinet. W then said he would put the doughnut outside, and, after again freely cursing the wires in his way, he succeeded in doing this, the doughnut passing through the small wrist-hole at the right side of the cabinet; the doughnut then floated in a circle in the air outside the cabinet and fell on the floor outside.[8a]

After lights were on, P picked up the doughnut and tried to pass it through this wrist-hole; she found that it was too large to go through as it was wider than the aperture, but she succeeded in pushing it through by folding it up first.

3. *Independent Voice Test.*

For this experiment, Dr. Mark Richardson's new apparatus was used. This consists of two parts:—

(1) A mouth-piece made of glass with three holes in it all leading to a single outlet; it is so shaped that, when placed in the mouth, one hole can be covered by the upper lip, one by the lower, and a third, on an inwardly projecting part, by the tongue.

(2) A large U-tube partly filled with water and provided in each arm with a cork float about 1½ inches long marked with luminous paint. The bore of the U-tube is such that an open end could not be stopped up by M's thumb, though a large male thumb might do it. One limb is open, the other is connected by a long rubber tube to a reservoir-bottle which in turn is connected by means of a second tube to the glass mouth-piece.

Both R and P tested this apparatus thoroughly in the light. When the glass mouth-piece is placed in position in the mouth, air can be forced into the U-tube so as to raise the float in the free end and lower that in the closed end; the tongue can then with some difficulty be placed over the end hole and the unequal position of the floats maintained with care for forty or fifty seconds. If the tongue be moved, the floats wobble up and down, and if any attempt is made to speak or move any part of the mouth, face or tongue, the floats at once revert to normal position. M with practice can hold the floats in strongly unequal position for about two minutes, but it is not easy.

[8a] And what is the oblique explanation of this?—J. M. B.

With full light on and M out of trance, R placed the mouthpiece in position in M's mouth and told her to blow into it and seal the third opening with her tongue. This she did, the floats registering about a foot difference in level. Lights out. W's voice at once spoke clearly from high up on right side of cabinet, well above M's head. While the luminous floats remained constant in position, R had his right hand holding M's left and his left placed over Mrs. L's mouth; P had her right hand over C's mouth, her left over D's mouth, and Mr. L placed his mouth over P's left arm, sucking the flesh above the elbow. Thus every mouth in the room was controlled except only those of R and P.

W talked thus freely for some time, even interspersing his voice with those of the others, including M.[8b] R then asked him to whistle, which he did with remarkable skill and clearness, in time and tune to the Victrola record. R then said "That's all very well, Walter, but I wonder whether you could speak outside the cabinet?" With startling suddenness there came a sepulchral whisper from close behind R's left ear, "Look-out or I'll get you," followed by sardonic chuckles. R nearly jumped out of his seat. As a finale, W from quite low down in the cabinet, recited in a clear, impressive voice four lines of a poem beginning—

"Live thou each day as if it were thy last."

Later on, red light and even white light was turned on but W continued to chat with all present. M being out of trance could hear him and joined in the conversation; at one point at least, her voice and W's were speaking together.

At the second séance, as an additional test, R asked W to intermingle his voice with those of all the other sitters in turn. This he did readily enough, talking while C was speaking to R, and then while each other sitter was talking, right round the circle.

At the end of the above experiments, M was carefully examined by R and P. No knots were found displaced and everything was exactly as when control began. A large pair of scissors had to be used to free M's hands and feet, all of which showed red lines from the pressure of the rubber bands. A sample of the wire and rubber was kept by R as an exhibit. The neck was freed by unlocking the padlock on the strap.

M then moved to a smaller curtained cabinet situated in position shown in published diagrams of room. M sat in a chain in red light nearly all the time; no special controls except holding

[8b] After her release from the VCO.—J. M. B.

hands for circle; no trance. Order of circle from left:—R, D, Mrs. L, Mr. L, P, C on right of M.

A table was placed in front of the medium about a yard away.

4. *Electric Bell Box.*

This apparatus, by now well known, consists of a wooden box containing electric batteries and wires, and carrying above it a hinged flap held up at an angle of about 20 degrees by means of a steel spring, not coiled but merely bent. If this flap were pressed downwards with four or five ounces pressure, it makes contact with a copper process below it, and the electric bell in the box rings.

R asked W to ring the bell, which he did, several times, in red light; long rings, short rings and also continuous ringing.

R then lifted the box off the table and told W to ring the bell, which he did at once. P and other sitters also tested him in this way and he always complied.

Finally, the complex "completing the circle" experiment was made. R picked up the box and told W to ring it; this he did. While it was ringing, R carried the box right away from the table to the book-shelves nine feet or more away, turned round through 360 degrees, dodged about, lifted the box high up and low down, making sure there were no wires or threads about. He then returned and handed the box, still ringing, to D, who was next, and he went through the same performance, the bell still ringing; D passed it to the two L's in turn and they to P, all doing the same stunts. The bell was rung all the time in good red light.

During part of this experiment the telephone bell rang and C was called away to it; W's voice and the ringing were not affected by C's absence. W also talked and whistled all the time that the bell was ringing.

5. *Comstock's Scales.*

The bell box was removed and a specially built chemical balance designed by Comstock was placed on the table in full light in front of the medium.

R and P examined this carefully; the metal parts were made of brass, the pans of wood, and the whole apparatus was as delicate as a fairly good chemical balance should be. With empty pans, the long pointer registered zero, as it did also if the two pans were interchanged. Five wooden chequers (draughts) were provided; no trance and red light.

R was told that he could use as many chequers as he liked and place them on either balance, and W would then tilt the balance with the empty pan down. R figured that most people would put weights into the pan next them, so he put one chequer in the further pan; W at once, in red light, caused the empty pan to swing down against gravity. He did this again with white light from an electric torch on; both P and R looked and felt all around, over and under the balance and passed their hands between it and the medium, but could find nothing.

R then put on a second chequer and W repeated his performance. Finally R put on the other three, making a total weight of five chequers against nil, and still W tipped the empty scale downwards. When R did this, W said "That's gravity; now I'll show him the action of levity," and at once the empty scale was tipped downwards. W explained that he got into the pan!

In white light, a general talk and discussion with W followed, M being out of trance. W showed much animosity against Prof. X, whose name was mentioned to him.

Later on W sent two messages to X through R; but, needless to say, the latter did not deliver them when he met him the next day; they were:

"Tell him a live ghost is better than a live rat."

(This clearly referred to X's experiments with white rats which P had seen being done the day before) and (in a hoarse, sepulchral voice)—

"Tell him I'll meet him again SOON—*OVER HERE.*"

(C explained to R that X and Y had abused their hospitality in an unpardonable way and would not be welcomed to any further séances.)

Tillyard in his London lecture has given us some account of the sort of things that were said to him in Cambridge; but other documents of a more private nature exist in which he is more explicit. There is, for instance, the indignant letter which he wrote to McDougall from his ship, after his hurried departure from Boston. There is his further correspondence with Crandon, with whom he maintains touch. Keeping his hand on the pulse of public opinion and of publication as he does, there is the manuscript which he prepared on reading McDougall's *Psyche* article.[9] This manuscript was offered to the British Journal of Psychical Research and to my own Journal; the former could not

[9] See page 12, for citation and extract.

use it on account of its having been forestalled by another contribution from a different source; I held it for partial quotation in the present volume. Tillyard's experience with McDougall in particular, moreover, was not confined to Boston; he was in Europe simultaneously with McDougall, and testifies to the latter's course of action there. Thus, in a letter to Crandon under date of April 9th, 1927, he says:

> McDougall has done a lot of very effective work in England, as you can tell by the changed attitude of men like Feilding. He is an expert in human psychology and plays the right card in every case. In the case of the S.P.R. he is running the "word of a gentleman" stunt, which takes the aristocratic Englishman every time. So Code is to be believed, purely on his own word of honor.

I must in conclusion of this chapter give space to one expression by Tillyard which goes into another field than that of verifying the experiences of Schiller, Bond and Miss Walker. He tells Crandon:

> I am deliberately staying outside the spiritualistic movement because I want to examine these psychic phenomena purely in the light of biology. They hang together with the processes of embryology and creative evolution and must be studied as an unknown portion of biological science. Probably when the truth is known we shall find that spiritualism correctly expresses the religious as contrasted with the scientific aspect of the phenomena.

This is the statement of a thoughtful scientist, who gives thoughtful and unbiassed attention to anything that occurs in his presence—no matter how far wide it may fall of his previous experience.